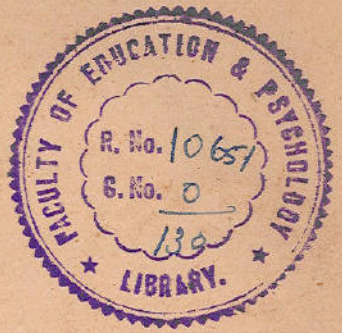
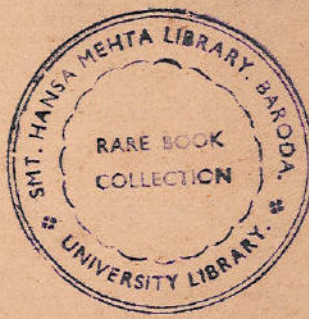
10651




# SCHWEGLER'S

# HISTORY OF PHILOSOPHY.



B9

# HANDBOOK

OF THE

# HISTORY OF PHILOSOPHY

BY DR. ALBERT SCHWEGLER.

TRANSLATED AND ANNOTATED BY

JAMES HUTCHISON STIRLING, LL.D.

AUTHOR OF 'THE SECRET OF HEGEL,' ETC.

'My highest wish is to find within,
The God whom I find everywhere without.'

KEPLER.

TENTH EDITION.

EDINBURGH:
OLIVER AND BOYD, TWEEDDALE COURT.
LONDON: SIMPKIN, MARSHALL, AND CO.
1871

FAKIRBHAI MEHTA LIBRARY
THE M. S. UNIVERSITY OF BARODA

377
72
·52
010651
(010851)
SMT. HANSA MEHTA LIBRARY. BARODA.
RARE BOOK COLLECTION
UNIVERSITY LIBRARY.

PRINTED BY OLIVER AND BOYD, EDINBURGH

# CONTENTS.


| | PAGE |
|---|---|
| TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE, | ix |
| PREFACE TO THE THIRD EDITION, | xi |
| SKETCH OF THE LIFE OF SCHWEGLER, | xv |
| I.—GENERAL IDEA OF THE HISTORY OF PHILOSOPHY, | 1 |
| II.—DIVISION OF THE SUBJECT, | 5 |
| III.—A PRELIMINARY VIEW OF PRE-SOCRATIC PHILOSOPHY, | 6 |
| IV.—THE EARLIER IONIC PHILOSOPHERS, | 9 |
| V.—THE PYTHAGOREANS, | 11 |
| VI.—THE ELEATICS, | 14 |
| VII.—HERACLITUS, | 19 |
| VIII.—EMPEDOCLES, | 22 |
| IX.—THE ATOMISTS, | 25 |
| X.—ANAXAGORAS, | 27 |
| XI.—THE SOPHISTS, | 30 |
| XII.—SOCRATES, | 39 |
| XIII.—THE INCOMPLETE SOCRATICS, | 53 |
| XIV.—PLATO, | 58 |
| XV.—THE OLDER ACADEMY, | 93 |
| XVI.—ARISTOTLE, | 94 |
| XVII.—STOICISM, | 123 |
| XVIII.—EPICUREANISM, | 131 |
| XIX.—SCEPTICISM AND THE LATER ACADEMY, | 134 |
| XX.—THE ROMANS, | 137 |
| XXI.—NEO-PLATONISM, | 138 |
| XXII.—CHRISTIANITY AND SCHOLASTICISM, | 143 |
| XXIII.—TRANSITION TO MODERN PHILOSOPHY, | 146 |
| XXIV.—DESCARTES, | 156 |

PAGE

XXV.—GEULINX AND MALEBRANCHE, . . 164
XXVI.—SPINOZA, . . . . . 168
XXVII.—IDEALISM AND REALISM, . . . 176
XXVIII.—LOCKE, . . . . . 177
XXIX.—HUME, . . . . . 181
XXX.—CONDILLAC, . . . . . 184
XXXI.—HELVETIUS, . . . . . 186
XXXII.—FRENCH ILLUMINATION AND MATERIALISM, 187
XXXIII.—LEIBNITZ, . . . . . 192
XXXIV.—BERKELEY, . . . . . 201
XXXV.—WOLFF, . . . . . 203
XXXVI.—THE GERMAN ILLUMINATION, . . 207
XXXVII.—TRANSITION TO KANT, . . . 209
XXXVIII.—KANT, . . . . . 214
XXXIX.—TRANSITION TO THE POST-KANTIAN PHILOSOPHY, . . . . . 246
XL.—JACOBI, . . . . . 248
XLI.—FICHTE, . . . . . 255
XLII.—HERBART, . . . . . 278
XLIII.—SCHELLING, . . . . . 286
XLIV.—TRANSITION TO HEGEL, . . . 315
XLV.—HEGEL, . . . . . 321

ANNOTATIONS, . . . . . 345
I.—GENERAL IDEA OF THE HISTORY OF PHILOSOPHY, . . . . . 347
II. AND III.—DIVISION AND PRELIMINARY VIEW, . 349
IV.—THE EARLIER IONIC PHILOSOPHERS, . 350
V.—THE PYTHAGOREANS, . . . . 352
VI.—THE ELEATICS, . . . . . 357
VII.—HERACLITUS, . . . . . 371
VIII.—EMPEDOCLES, . . . . . 372
IX.—THE ATOMISTS, . . . . . 373
X.—ANAXAGORAS, . . . . . 375
XI.—THE SOPHISTS, . . . . . 380
XII.—SOCRATES, . . . . . 396
XIII.—PLATO, . . . . . 398
XIV.—ARISTOTLE, . . . . . 399
XV.—THE POST-ARISTOTELIAN PHILOSOPHY, . 402





PAGE

XVI.—TRANSITION TO MODERN PHILOSOPHY, . 403
XVII.—DESCARTES, . . . . . 404
XVIII.—MALEBRANCHE, . . . . . 407
XIX.—SPINOZA, . . . . . 408
XX.—HOBBES, . . . . . 411
XXI.—JOHN LOCKE, . . . . . 413
XXII.—DAVID HUME, . . . . . 415
XXIII.—LEIBNITZ, . . . . . 416
XXIV.—BERKELEY, . . . . . 417
XXV.—KANT, . . . . . 422
XXVI.—JACOBI, . . . . . 426
XXVII.—FICHTE, . . . . . 427
XXVIII.—HERBART, . . . . . 428
XXIX.—SCHELLING, . . . . . 428
XXX.—HEGEL, . . . . . 429

SUPPLEMENTARY NOTES—
I.—WHY THE HISTORY OF PHILOSOPHY ENDS WITH HEGEL, AND NOT WITH COMTE, . 446
II.—MR. LEWES'S ACCUSATION OF ATHEISM AGAINST HEGEL, . . . . . 468
III.—PANTHEISM AND PAGANISM, . . . 473
INDEX, . . . . . 477

# TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE.

THE reader will readily understand that this translation is a work of gratitude. The assistance of this little book to the student of Philosophy I have elsewhere pronounced 'indispensable;' and this is the result of a genuine experience. The resolution being once taken, again, to introduce the work to an English public, it appeared right that this should be effected by a new and native translation, rather than by the mere reproduction of a foreign one. Of the merits of this latter, Mr. Seelye's American translation, I cannot say a word: my translation has been executed without my seeing it, and in absolute independence generally. Perhaps I may be allowed to say this, however, that I am informed by the German publisher that the American translation follows the *first* German edition, 'whilst the present fifth edition contains a variety of improvements and additions.' From the same authority, writing some months ago, I learn that 'of the German issue 20,000 copies have been already sold, certainly a rare event in the case of a rigorously scientific book, and the best proof of its excellence.' How this 'excellence' has originated will be understood at once, when we consider that Schwegler, a remarkably ripe, full man, and possessed of the gift of style, wrote this History, so to speak, at a single stroke of the pen, as, in the first instance, an article for an Encyclopædia. A first, almost extemporized, draught of this nature usually

constitutes the happiest core for a larger and separate work. But originate as it may, the fact of this excellence is certain. The work has been already translated both in America and Denmark; its sale in its own country has, for such works (as we have seen), been unexampled; and we learn from Professor Erdmann (Preface to his *Grundriss* of the History of Philosophy) that its extraordinary success with students has given rise to various imitations. What I have found it myself, I have indicated in the opening of the Annotations at page 345.

As regards either the translation or the annotation, I know not that there remains anything to be said here. The reader will perhaps dislike the coinage *beënt;* but he cannot dislike it more than I do myself, and if *existent* could have served the turn, it would never have happened. This I believe to be the only coinage, however, and it will be found fully explained in the note on the Eleatics at page 359.

EDINBURGH, *September* 1867.

IN this, the second edition, the annotation will be found completed, and an Index added. Prefixed also there is a sketch of the Life of Schwegler, epitomized from the biographical notice of him which, written by his friend Zeller, the illustrious historian of Greek Philosophy, is inserted in the third volume of Schwegler's *Roman History*.

EDINBURGH, *February* 1868.

## PREFACE TO THE THIRD EDITION.

ADVANTAGE has been taken of the present opportunity for the introduction into the body of the work of a considerable number of corrections which were found necessary. Some of these it has been planned to signalize here, and one or two others may be at the same time referred to.

The phrase 'Gothic dome,' page 154, has been objected to, as itself Gothic, seeing that, in English, *dome* means *cupola*, and there is no such thing in Gothic architecture. My reply is simple: In using the phrase, the translator had really not a *cupola* but a *cathedral-interior* in his eye, and he sees no reason against extending the English *dome* into the German *Dom*,—*domus*, to say nothing of δῶμα, being, presumably, the warrant in the one case as in the other.

At page 218, line 18 from top, the two words *notions* and *without* will be found hitherto to have accidentally exchanged places. The occurrence and its rectification are very simple matters; still the former made such confusion of the sense that it went far to lead one of our most distinguished metaphysicians almost up to an accusation of misunderstanding, on the part of the translator, of one of Kant's most common and salient *dicta*.

The Greek phrase translated at page 362 by '*the more is the thought*,' perhaps scarcely bears the addition of the article ('*the*') to the noun '*thought*,' νόημα in the original

being without a τό, and Zeller having translated it by *Gedanke* alone without the so usual *der*. The 'the,' nevertheless, seems to let in quite a satisfactory light, if at all admissible.

I have hazarded the expression, at page 399, that 'in Germany the discussion of the order, dates, and authenticity of the Platonic dialogues,' will probably settle in the end into Schwegler's 'relative ruling,' 'though not original to him.' I have been requested to explain that such a settlement gets, in the progress of the discussion, less and less likely; Ueberweg, Schaarschmidt, and others, reasoning cogently against the legitimacy of ascribing to Plato several most important dialogues usually so ascribed. I may remark, in this connexion, that I was lately struck with the strong things said in advance (though not, probably, of Socher in 1820) by the illustrious Whewell, specially of the Parmenides.

It is necessary, by a word here on Schwegler's 'History of Greek Philosophy,' to supply an omission in the sketch of the life of Schwegler abridged from Zeller. This work has been printed, since the lamented death of its author, under the able editorship of Dr. K. Köstlin, whose various additions are so felicitously conceived and conveyed in the very spirit of his deceased friend that it would be difficult or impossible to recognise and distinguish them. This, too, has proved a success, and has been so much relished by Schwegler's fellow-countrymen, as to have passed into another (and by Köstlin much improved) edition. I am disposed to consider it an unexcelled work. Schwegler knows and can accomplish the *exact* to perfection, and the *exact* is at once full to the fullest, and short to the shortest. Schwegler's *exact*, indeed, can also be characterized as clear to the clearest. Now, of such *exactitude* the history in question may be regarded as a perfect specimen. Ueberweg, in reference to the book the translation of which is now before the reader (and since which translation it [1873] counts three more



editions in Germany), may be found speaking of 'the introduction, generally acknowledged to be excellent in its kind, by which Schwegler, too early lost to us by a premature death, rendered an inestimable service to the study of the history of philosophy;' and we have already seen in what terms Zeller refers to his 'gift of style,' and the other perhaps unrivalled excellences of Schwegler. Well, in no work ever written by Schwegler can these excellences be found in greater perfection than in this 'History of Greek Philosophy.' It is the story of a man who has long digested all, and gives easy emission to all without the necessity of either changing or repeating a word. There is not a word too much, indeed, in the whole book, and not a line that is not intelligible at sight: it is the last triumph of the *plainness* of ripe knowledge. Plato and Aristotle are here reduced into that easy every-day bulk of common-sense that any hand can grasp. It is this luminous succinctness of Schwegler that extends to him a ready triumph, so far, over all his brother historians. Erdmann possesses a harnessed dialectic of expression that is peculiarly masterly and all his own, but it often escapes the reader by the very attention which for interpretation it demands, and his work is at least three times the size of this present book of Schwegler's. Much the same thing, so far as magnitude is concerned, may be said of Ueberweg's Ground-plan of the history of philosophy, while, as regards style, however excellent, however faithful, however careful, be the writing of Ueberweg, it is not the brilliantly transparent, and yet perfectly full expression of Schwegler. Nor, on the whole, despite the brevity, can either Erdmann or Ueberweg be said to excel Schwegler in point of matter—discounting the fact, that is, that both the former treat of, what Schwegler does not, the middle-age philosophy, the subordinate followers of the greater moderns, and the post-Hegelian German contributions. The middle-age philosophy cer-

tainly deserves to be known, and the history of schools is at least curious, but I am not sure, great though some of the names be, that there is much profit to be drawn from what has yet followed Hegel anywhere. For this middle-age philosophy, and for their own merits otherwise, both the work of Erdmann and that of Ueberweg ought to be translated into English, and I am glad that we may soon expect this service, at least as regards one of them, Ueberweg, at the hands of a distinguished American. For myself, I should have been glad to have translated the middle-age part of Ueberweg's introduction (as a quite excellent and, indeed, indispensable work), and after that (and what I have already done) I know no German books, on the history of philosophy, which I should be at all tempted to translate, unless the history of Greek philosophy by Schwegler, and, perhaps above all, the history of philosophy by the master himself, Hegel.

EDINBURGH, *May* 1871.

1819-1857

## SKETCH OF THE LIFE OF SCHWEGLER.

ALBERT SCHWEGLER, a Suabian, like Hegel and so many other deeper Germans of late, was born February 10, 1819. His father, a country clergyman, who, with scanty means, did his best for his family, began himself the education of the boy, and subjected him, in general, to a discipline so severe that it left its marks on his character, and was borne in his memory for life. In his seventeenth year, Schwegler, as a student of theology, entered the University of Tübingen. Here he greatly distinguished himself. His intellect was unusually quick, ready, and retentive; his industry constant, his perseverance iron: he took many prizes, and, where certain essays were concerned, not without the higher compliment of express thanks. His university career accomplished, though amid many hardships, for his father's death in 1839 left a family, always straitened, in the most pressing difficulties, Schwegler —passing by Munich, Prague, and Vienna—went to Berlin, in the hope not only of scientific but of pecuniary profit. In this he was disappointed, and, visiting Holland, Belgium, and the Rhine, he returned home in a few months, to be presently found in Tübingen again, supporting himself as he could by services in a village church, by correcting the press, and by literature. One success in the last capacity enabled him (having qualified himself as a *privatim docens* in 1843) to spend some months in Italy, principally at Rome. On his return in 1847, he received the appointment of a Libra-

rian, and, in 1848, that of Extraordinary Professor of Roman Literature and Archæology, in the Evangelical Seminary of Tübingen.

The literary works of Schwegler are as follows:—His first appearance in print was with an essay in memory of Hegel, in the *Journal for the Elegant World* (1839). In 1841, he published his prize essay, *Montanism and the Christian Church of the Second Century*, an excellent work, which had immediate success. In 1842, he criticised Neander's work on the 'Apostolic Era' in the *German*, and the 'latest Johannine Literature' in the *Theological* Year-books. In this last periodical he also wrote several valuable papers after his return to Tübingen. Here, too, he became, in 1843, the editor of the *Annals of the Present*, and in this capacity wrote many admirable political papers. In 1845, his *Post-Apostolic Age* was published, and that work was followed by the *Clementine Homilies* in 1847, and the *Eusebian Church History* in 1852. In 1847 and 1848 we have his *Metaphysic of Aristotle*, and in the former year the first issue of his *Handbook of the History of Philosophy*, in the Stuttgart Encyclopædia. His latest work was the *Roman History*, which at his death was left incomplete. Of these works, the most important are *Montanism*, the *Post-Apostolic Age*, the *History of Philosophy*, the *Aristotle*, and the *Roman History;* but the tact and judgment, the courage and considerateness, the consistent adhesion to principles, the manly ripeness, the truth, penetration, and largeness of political perception, the clearness, power, and brilliancy of style, the irresistible polemic, which he displayed as editor of the *Annals of the Present*, demonstrated that Schwegler had the capacity likewise of becoming a master among Publicists. The work on *Montanism* showed acute intellect and much penetrative power of erudite research; it gave to think to the most accomplished judges. The *Post-Apostolic Age* was written in six months, and this fact, in view of the excellence of the work itself (a work not final in its sphere, however), bespeaks that 'iron industry, that ease of expression, and that complete mastery of the material, of which, and in an extraordinary degree, Schwegler might justly boast.' The *Aristotle* is characterized by accuracy and acuteness in selection and correction of the text, by successful interpretation of difficult passages, and by penetrating exposition of philosophical ideas. Beside the commentary of Bonitz it will always retain its own value. Of the 'short history of philosophy' Zeller tells us that by its 'spirited, luminous, and easy treatment of the subject it won for itself such approbation, that in the course of ten years three large editions, amounting to no less than 7000 copies, were found necessary,'—a success which, as we know, the next ten years have only increased. It is the *Roman History*, however, that has most attracted the admiration of experts—an admiration all the keener for the background of regret over the incompleteness left by the untimely death. Schwegler, it would seem, possessed, and in an extraordinary degree, all the leading qualifications that are requisite in an historian. 'His clear understanding,' says Zeller, 'to which distinct ideas were a necessity, could as little dispense with the *terra firma* of facts, as his vivid imagination with the visible shapes of the actual. The collecting of masses of materials was a delightful employment for his learned industry, as their analysis for his penetration and sagacity. His power of comprehensive survey was most specially attracted by the consideration, his architectonic talent by the scientific arrangement, his gift of style by the description, of historical situations and combinations.' Accordingly, the *Roman History*, in its kind, is a work of the greatest excellence. Zeller, in its reference, speaks of such transparency, of such complete control of the materials, of such assured insight, of such power of narrative, as must make every one regret to see 'so grandly-planned, so masterly-executed a work, left there a fragment only.'

At school, Schwegler was a quick, lively, kindly boy, docile, attentive, and industrious. As a youth, he was impetuous, generous, and high-spirited, proud, indignant at successful baseness, and eager for the truth. His, however, was a precocious nature, and in manhood he was already old. The disappointments of the world had soon set in, and he was withdrawn into silence and reserve. Still, within that cold and hard exterior, beat one of the warmest and softest of hearts. We have the evidence for this in his early friendships, in his filial and brotherly affection, and in his love for children. The first look of Schwegler gave what was harsh in him; thickset, and above the middle height, there was a gloomy expression over his eyes; he was strongly jawed also, and his mouth was severely closed. The yellowish hue of the smooth-shaven face contributed to the same effect. Otherwise, however, Schwegler's features were good. There were blue eyes and a fair-arched forehead under his light-brown locks. His nose was fine and regular; his mouth had eloquence on its curves, and his chin was classically rounded. When the ice was thawed, one saw in him good-nature,—one saw in him humour. Beneath all the apparent pride and bitterness lay love and the necessity for love, the longing for sympathy, for disclosure. In life he was long unfortunate, and he died so young. On the morning of the 5th of January 1857, he had lectured from eight to nine as usual; half-an-hour later he was found insensible on the floor of his study, and next day he died. On the 9th, the empty hull was laid in the ground. How fast we flit!

# HANDBOOK OF THE HISTORY OF PHILOSOPHY.

# HANDBOOK OF THE HISTORY OF PHILOSOPHY.

## I.—*General Idea of the History of Philosophy.*

PHILOSOPHY is reflection, the thinking consideration of things. This definition exhausts not the idea of philosophy, however. Man *thinks* in his practical activities as well, where he calculates the means to the attainment of ends; and all the other sciences—those even which belong not to philosophy in the stricter sense—are of the nature of thought. By what, then, does philosophy distinguish itself from these sciences? By what does it distinguish itself, for example, from the science of astronomy, or from that of medicine, or of jurisprudence? Not, certainly, by the difference of its matter. Its matter is quite the same as that of the various empirical sciences. Plan and order of the universe, structure and function of the human body, property, law, politics,—all these belong to philosophy quite as much as to their respective special sciences. What is given in experience—actual fact—that, their material, is the material of philosophy also. It is not, then, by its matter that philosophy distinguishes itself from the empirical sciences, but by its form, by its method,—so to speak by its mode of knowing. The various empirical sciences take their matter directly from experience; they find it ready to hand; and as they find it, they accept it. Philosophy, on the contrary, accepts not what is given in experience as it is given, but follows it up into its ultimate grounds, regarding each particular fact only in relation to a final principle, and as a determinate link in the system of knowledge. But just so it strips from such particular fact—which to our senses seems but a something given—

this its character of independency, individualness, and contingency. In the sea of empirical particulars, in the confused infinitude of the contingent, it establishes the universal, the necessary, the all-pervading law. In short, philosophy considers the entire empirical finite in the form of an intelligently articulated *system*.

From this it follows that philosophy (as the thought totality of the empirical finite) stands to the empirical sciences in a relation of reciprocity, alternately conditioning, and conditioned by them. It is as idle, therefore, to expect at any time the completion of philosophy, as the completion of empirical science. Philosophy exists rather in the form of a series of various historical philosophies, which, exhibiting thought in its various stages of development, present themselves hand in hand with the general scientific, social, and political progress. It is the subject-matter, the succession, and the internal connexion of these philosophies which it is the business of the history of philosophy to discuss.

The relation in which the various systems stand to one another is thus already indicated. As man's historical life in general, even considered from the point of view of a calculation of probabilities, is made coherent by an idea of intellectual progress, and exhibits, if with interruptions, still a sufficiently continuous series of successive stages; so the various historical systems (each being but the philosophical expression of the entire life of its time), constitute together but a single organic movement, a rational, inwardly-articulated whole, a series of evolutions, founded in the tendency of mind to raise its *natural* more and more into *conscious* being, into knowledge, and to recognise the entire spiritual and natural universe more and more as its life and outward existence, as its actuality and reality, as the mirror of itself.

Hegel was the first to enunciate these views, and to regard the history of philosophy in the unity of a single process; but the fundamental idea, though true in principle, has been perhaps overstrained by him, and in a manner that threatens to destroy, as well the freedom of the human will, as the notion of contingency, or of a certain existent unreason. Hegel holds the succession of the systems in history to be the same as that of the categories in logic. Let us but free, he says, the fundamental thoughts of the various systems from all that attaches to their mere externality of form or particularity of applica-



tion, and we obtain the various steps of the logical notion (being, becoming, particular being, individual being, quantity, etc.); while, conversely, if we but take the logical progress by itself, we have in it the essential process of the results of history.

But this conception can neither be justified in principle nor established by history. It fails in principle; for history is a combination of liberty and necessity, and exhibits, therefore, only on the whole, any connexion of reason, while in its particulars, again, it presents but a play of endless contingency. It is thus, too, that nature, as a whole, displays rationality and system, but mocks all attempts at *a priori schemata* in detail. Further, in history it is individuals who have the initiative, free subjectivities,—what consequently, therefore, is directly incommensurable. For, reduce as we may the individual under the influence of the universal, in the form of his time, his circumstances, his nationality, etc.,—to the value of a mere cipher, no free-will can be reduced. History, generally, is no school-sum to be exactly cast up; there must be no talk, therefore, of any *a priori* construction in the history of philosophy either. The facts of experience will not adapt themselves as mere examples to any ready-made logical schema. If at all to stand a critical investigation, what is given in experience must be taken as *given*, as handed to us; and then the rational connexion of this that is so given must be referred to analysis. The speculative idea can be expected at best —and only for the scientific arrangement of the given material—to afford but a regulative.

Another point of view which contradicts Hegel's conception is this: the historical development is almost always different from the logical. Historically, for example, the origin of the state was the desire of protection from violence and fraud; while logically, on the other hand, we are to find it, not in natural anarchy, but in the idea of justice. So it is here also: whilst the logical progress is an ascent from the abstract to the concrete, that of the history of philosophy is almost always a descent from the concrete to the abstract, from sense to thought,—a freeing of the abstract inner from the concrete outer of the general forms of civilisation, and of the traditional religious and social conditions in which he who would philosophize finds himself placed. The system of philosophy proceeds synthetically; its history

—the history of thought—analytically. With greater justice we may maintain the exact contrary of the Hegelian thesis, and assert that what is first in itself is precisely last for us. We find the Ionic philosophy, for example, beginning, not with being as an abstract notion, but with what is most sensuous and concrete, with the material notion of water, air, etc. Even the being of the Eleatics, and the becoming of Heraclitus, are not pure forms of thought, but impure notions, materially coloured conceptions. On the whole, the demand is futile, to refer each philosophy, according as it historically appears, to a logical category as its central principle, and simply for this reason, that the majority of these philosophies have for object the idea, not in its abstraction, but in its realization in nature and man, and for the most part, consequently, rest not on logical but on physical, psychological, and ethical questions. Hegel ought not, therefore, to have limited the comparison of the *historical*, with the *systematic* evolution to logic, but to have extended it to the whole system of philosophical science. The Eleatics, Heraclitus, the Atomists—and so far, certainly, the Hegelian logic corresponds to the Hegelian history of philosophy—display such logical category on their front; but then, Anaxagoras, the Sophists, Socrates, Plato, Aristotle? Should we force, nevertheless, on these philosophies a central principle, and reduce, for example, that of Anaxagoras to the notion of design, that of the Sophists to the notion of show (*Schein*), and that of Socrates to the notion of the good, which in part is impossible without violence, there arises the new difficulty that then the historical order of these categories no longer corresponds to that which they possess in logic. In point of fact, indeed, Hegel attempts not any complete realization of his main idea, but even on the threshold of Greek philosophy has already abandoned it. Being, becoming, individual being,—the Eleatics, Heraclitus, the Atomists,—thus far the parallel, as said, extends, but not farther. Not only there follows now Anaxagoras with the notion of a designing mind, but even from the first the two series agree not. Hegel would have been more consistent, had he entirely rejected the Ionic philosophy (for matter is no logical category), and had he assigned to Pythagoras a place—seeing that the categories of quantity follow those of quality—*after* the Eleatics and the Atomists. In short, he would



have been more consistent logically, had he put chronology entirely to the rout. Resigning this pretension, then, we must content ourselves if, in reproducing to thought the course which reflection has taken as a whole, there exhibit itself, on the main historical stations, a rational progress, and if the historian of philosophy, surveying the serial development, find really in it a philosophical acquisition, the acquisition of a new idea; but we shall be cautious of applying to each transition and the whole detail the postulate of immanent law and logical *nexus*. History marches often in serpentine lines, often apparently in retreat. Philosophy, especially, has not unfrequently resigned some wide and fruitful territory, in order to turn back on some narrow strip of land, if only all the more to turn this latter to account. Sometimes thousands of years have expended themselves in vain attempts, and brought to light only a negative result. Sometimes a profusion of philosophical ideas is compressed into the space of a single generation. Here reign no unalterable, regularly recurrent laws of nature; history, as the domain of free-will, will only in the last of days reveal itself as a work of reason.

## II.—*Division of the Subject.*

ON the limits and division of the subject a few words may suffice. Where and when does philosophy begin? After what has been said, manifestly there where an ultimate principle, an ultimate ground of existence, is first philosophically sought. Consequently with the philosophy of the Greeks. The Oriental (Chinese and Indian) so-called philosophy (rather theology or mythology), and the mythical cosmogonies of Greece itself at first, fall thus outside of our (more limited) undertaking. With us, as with Aristotle, the history of philosophy begins with Thales. For similar reasons we exclude also Scholasticism, or the philosophy of the Christian middle ages; which belongs (being not so much philosophy as rather a reflecting or a philosophizing within the presuppositions of a positive religion, and therefore essentially theology) to the historical science of the Christian dogmas.

What remains separates naturally into two parts: ancient (Græco-Roman) and modern philosophy. The inner relations of both epochs will (a preliminary com-

parative characterization being impossible without giving rise to repetitions) be noticed later, on occasion of the transition from the one to the other.

The first epoch separates again into three periods: 1. The Pre-Socratic philosophy (Thales to the Sophists inclusive); 2. Socrates, Plato, Aristotle; 3. The Post-Aristotelian philosophy (to Neo-Platonism inclusive).

### III.—*A Preliminary View of Pre-Socratic Philosophy.*

THE general tendency of Pre-Socratic philosophy is this, to find a principle of the explanation of nature. Nature it was—that which is most immediately present to us, that which lies nearest the eye, that which is palpablest—that first attracted the spirit of inquiry. Under its changeful forms, its multiplex phenomena, there must lie, it was thought, a first and permanent fundamental principle. What is this principle? What, it was asked, is the primitive ground of things? Or, more precisely, what natural element is the basal element? An answer to this question constituted the problem of *the earlier Ionic natural philosophers* or Hylicists. One suggested water, another air, and a third a chaotic primeval matter.

2. A higher solution of the problem was attempted by the *Pythagoreans*. Not matter in its sensuous concretion, but matter in its formal relations and dimensions, appeared to them to contain the explanatory ground of existence. As their principle, accordingly, they adopted numbers, the signs of relation. 'Number is the essence of all things,' this was their thesis. Number is a middle term between pure thought and the immediate things of sense. Number and proportion, indeed, have to do with matter only so far as it is extended and divided in time and space; but still without matter, without something to be seen, there is no counting, no measuring. This advance beyond, or elevation over, matter, which is yet at the same time a cleaving to matter, constitutes the nature and the position of the Pythagorean principle.

3. Absolutely transcending the given and factual, entirely abstracting from everything material, the *Eleatics* enunciated as principle this very abstraction, the negation of any material dividedness in space and time, that is, pure being. Instead of the sensuous principle of the



Ionics, or of the quantitative principle of the Pythagoreans, they proposed, consequently, an *intelligible* principle.

4. And thus there was completed the first or analytic period of Greek philosophical development, in order to give place to the second or synthetic period. The Eleatics had sacrificed to their principle of pure being this mundane existence with all its separate existences. But denial of nature and the world could not possibly be carried out. The reality of both pressed, against their wills, in on them, and they had themselves, though only hypothetically and under protest, been necessitated to speak of them. But from their abstract being they had no bridge, no longer any return to the concrete being of sense. Their principle was to have been an explanatory ground of existence, of the vicissitude of existence, and it was none. The problem, to find a principle that should explain the becoming, the vicissitude of existence, was left but the more urgent. *Heraclitus*, then, appeared now with his solution, and asserted for absolute principle the unity of being and non-being,—becoming. According to him, it belonged to the very nature of things that they should be in incessant change, in infinite flux. 'All fleets.' We have here, at the same time, in place of a primitive matter, as with the Ionics, the idea of a primitive living force, the first attempt to explain existence and the movement of existence by a principle that had been analytically acquired. After Heraclitus the question of the cause of becoming remained the chief interest and the motive of philosophical progress.

5. Becoming is unity of being and non-being. Into these two moments the Heraclitic principle was by the *Atomists* consciously sundered. Heraclitus, namely, had without doubt enunciated the principle of becoming, but only as fact of experience; he had only named, but not explained, the law of becoming: the point now was to demonstrate the necessity of that universal law. *Why* is the all in constant flux, in eternal movement? It was evidently necessary to advance from the indefinite unity of matter and motive force to a conscious and definite distinction, to the mechanical separation of both. Thus it was that to *Empedocles* matter became the principle of being, fixed and permanent being, while force became the principle of movement. We have here a

combination of Heraclitus and Parmenides. But with Empedocles the moving forces were as yet but mythical powers, love and hate; while, with the Atomists again, they became a pure un-understood and unintelligible necessity of nature. And so, therefore, by the method of a mechanical explanation of nature, becoming was rather periphrased than explained.

6. Despairing of any mere materialistic explanation of becoming, or the mundane process, *Anaxagoras* placed by the side of matter a world-forming intelligence; he conceived mind as the ultimate causality of the world and of the order and design that appeared in it. A great principle was thus won for philosophy,—an ideal principle. But Anaxagoras failed to give his principle any complete realization. Instead of an intellectual conception of the universe, instead of an ideal derivation of existence, he is found to offer again, at last, only mechanical theories; his 'world-forming reason' amounts really only to the first impact, to the motive force; it is but a *deus ex machina*. Despite his surmise, then, of a higher principle, Anaxagoras, like his predecessors, is still a physicist. Mind did not manifest itself to him as a veritably supranatural power, as the free organizing soul of the universe.

7. Further progress now is characterized thus. The distinction between mind and nature becomes definitely understood; and the former, as contrasted with the latter, is recognised as the relatively higher. This was the work of the *Sophists*. Their action was to entangle in contradictions such thought as had not yet emancipated itself from the objects of sense, from the *datum* of tradition, or from the *datum* of authority. In the first, and indeed somewhat boyish, consciousness of the superiority of subjective thought to the objectivity (in sense, tradition, and authority) by which it had been hitherto overmastered, they flung both elements wildly together. In other words, the Sophists introduced, in the form of a general religious and political *Aufklärung* (illumination), the principle of subjectivity, though at first only negatively, or as destroyer of all that was established in the opinions of existing society. And this continued till *Socrates* opposed to this principle of empirical subjectivity that of absolute subjectivity, or intelligence in the form of a free moral will, and asserted, as against the world of sense, thought to be the positively higher principle, and the truth of all reality. With the Sophists, as characteristic of the dissolution of the earliest philosophy, our first period is closed.



## IV.—*The Earlier Ionic Philosophers.*

THALES.—At the head of the Ionic physicists, and at the head, therefore, of philosophy in general, the ancients, with tolerable unanimity, place Thales of Miletus (640-550, B.C.), a contemporary of Crœsus and Solon. The proposition to which he owes his place in the history of philosophy is this: 'The principle (the *first*, the primitive ground) of all things is water; all comes from water, and to water all returns.' This assumption, however, in regard to the original of things, is no advance in itself beyond the position of the earlier mythical cosmogonies. Aristotle, in noticing Thales, speaks of several ancient 'theologians' (meaning, no doubt, Homer and Hesiod), who had ascribed to Oceanus and Tethys the origin of all things. The attempt, then, to establish his principle in freedom from the mythic element, and so to introduce scientific procedure,—it is this, and not the principle itself, which procures for Thales the character of initiator of philosophy. He is the first that trod the ground of the interpretation of nature on principles of the understanding. *How* he made good his proposition cannot now be exactly determined. He was probably led to his hypothesis, however, by the observation that moisture constituted the germ and nourishment of things, that it developed heat, that it was in general the formative, life-giving, and life-possessing element. Then, from the condensation and rarefaction of his primitive element, he derived further, as it seems, the changes of things. The process itself he has certainly not determined with any greater precision.

Such, then, is the philosophical import of Thales. A speculative philosopher in the more modern manner he assuredly was not, and philosophical literature being yet alien to the time, he does not appear, for preservation of his opinions, to have resorted to writing. In consequence of his reputation for ethico-political wisdom, he is included among the seven sages, and the characteristics which the ancients relate of him certainly testify specially to his practical understanding. It is reported of him, for instance, that he was the first to calculate an eclipse of

the sun, that, in order to enable Crœsus to cross the Halys, he effected a diversion of that river, and that he performed other similar feats. In regard to the statements of later authorities, that he had asserted the unity of the world, advanced the idea of a world-soul or of a world-forming spirit, taught the immortality of the soul, etc., these are to be regarded as beyond doubt but unhistorical transpositions of later ideas to a much less developed stand-point.

2. ANAXIMANDER.—Anaximander of Miletus, who is described by the ancients sometimes as a disciple and sometimes as a contemporary of Thales, but who, under every supposition, was somewhere about a generation younger than he, endeavoured still further to develop the principle of the latter. He defined his primitive matter, in connexion with which he is supposed to be the first who used the term principle (ἀρχή), as the 'eternal, infinite, indefinite ground, from which, in order of time, all arises, and into which all returns,' as that which comprehends and rules all the spheres of the universe, but which, underlying every individual form of the finite and mutable, is itself infinite and indefinite. How we are to think this principle of Anaximander is a question in dispute. It was certainly not one of the four usual elements. As certainly, again, it was not something immaterial, but was probably conceived by Anaximander as primal matter not yet sundered into its individual elements, the *prius* in time, the chemical indifference of our modern elementary contraries. In this respect, such primitive matter is doubtless 'unlimited' and 'indefinite,' or neither qualitatively defined nor quantitatively limited. It is by no means on that account, however, to be regarded as a pure dynamical principle, as, for instance, the friendship and hatred of Empedocles, but only as a more philosophical expression for the thought which the ancients endeavoured to represent by the supposition of chaos. Accordingly, Anaximander conceives the original contraries of heat and cold (as bases of the elements and of life) to separate from his primitive matter by virtue of an eternal movement immanent in it; and in this way it is clearly proved that his primitive matter is only the undeveloped, undivided potential being of these elemental contraries.

3. ANAXIMENES.—Anaximenes, a disciple or a contemporary of Anaximander, returned in some degree, to the



fundamental views of Thales, in so far as he conceived the principle of the universe to be the 'unlimited, all-embracing, ever-moving air,' from which by rarefaction (fire) and condensation (water, earth, stone), everything else is formed. The fact of the air surrounding the whole world, and of the breath being the condition of life, seems to have led him to this hypothesis.

4. RETROSPECT.—The three earliest Ionic philosophers have thus, and to this their entire philosophy reduces itself, (*a*) sought the universal primitive matter of existence in general; (*b*) found this in a material substrate; and (*c*) given some intimations in regard to the derivation from this primitive matter of the fundamental forms of nature.

## V.—*The Pythagoreans.*

THE POSITION OF THIS SCHOOL.—The Ionic philosophy, as we have seen, developed a tendency to abstract from the immediately given, individual quality of matter. We have the same abstraction, but on a higher stage, when the sensuous concretion of matter *in general* is looked away from; when attention is turned no longer to the qualitative character of matter, as water, air, etc., but to its quantitative character, its quantitative measure and relations; when reflection is directed, not to the material, but to the form and order of things as they exist in space. But the specific nature of quantity is wholly expressed in numbers, or, as we may also term it, in the cipher. Now this is the principle and the position of the Pythagoreans.

2. HISTORICAL FEATURES.—The numerical system in question is referred to Pythagoras of Samos, who is said to have flourished between the years 540 and 500 B.C. The later years of his life, however, were passed at Crotona, in Græcia Magna; where, with a view to the social and political regeneration of the cities of Lower Italy, disturbed at that time by the strifes of parties, he founded a society, the members of which bound themselves to purity and piety of life, to the closest reciprocal friendship, and to co-operation in maintaining the morality and discipline, the order and harmony, of the whole community. What is handed down to us concerning the life of Pythagoras, his travels, his political influence in Southern Italy, etc., is so thoroughly interwoven with

traditions, legends, and palpable fables, that on no point are we certain of having historical ground beneath us. Nor is this unintelligible when we consider, not only the partiality of the Pythagoreans themselves for the mysterious and the esoteric, but especially the fact that his Neo-Platonic biographers, Porphyry and Iamblichus, have written his life in the manner of an historico-philosophical romance. The same uncertainty obtains as regards his doctrine, and specially his share in the number-theory; which is nowhere attributed by Aristotle to him specially, but only to the Pythagoreans in general; from which we may suppose that it had received its completion only within the entire society. The accounts with reference to his school acquire some degree of security only towards the time of Socrates, or a hundred years after his own death. To the few points of light in this connexion belong the Pythagoreans, Philolaus and Archytas, the latter a contemporary of Plato, and the former mentioned in the *Phædo*. We possess the doctrine of the school also only in the shape into which it has been brought by these, and by Eurytus; for none of their predecessors has left anything in writing.

3. The Pythagorean Principle.—The fundamental thought of the Pythagoreans was that of proportion and harmony: this idea is to them, as well the principle of practical life, as the supreme law of the universe. Their cosmology regarded the world as a symmetrically arranged whole, that united in harmony within itself all the varieties and contrarieties of existence. This view especially announces itself in the doctrine that all the spheres of the universe (the earth among them), move in prescribed paths around a common focus, the central fire, from which light, heat, and life radiate into the whole world. This idea, that the world is, in definite forms and proportion, an harmoniously articulated whole, has for its metaphysical foundation and support the Pythagorean number-theory. It is through numbers that the quantitative relations of things, as extension, magnitude, figure (triangle, square, cube, etc.), distance, combination, etc., properly receive each its own individual quality. All forms and proportions of things are referred at last to number. So, then, it was concluded, as there exists nothing whatever without form and measure, number is necessarily the principle of things



themselves, as well as of the order which they exhibit in the world. The accounts of the ancients are not agreed as to whether number was considered by the Pythagoreans an actually material or a merely ideal principle, that is, a primitive form, according to which all had been ordered and disposed. Even the relative statements of Aristotle seem mutually contradictory. Sometimes he speaks in the one sense, and sometimes in the other. Later writers have supposed, therefore, that the theory had undergone several forms of development, and that, accordingly, there had been Pythagoreans of both opinions, now that numbers were material substances, and now that they were only the archetypes of things. We have a hint in Aristotle too, that indicates how we may unite the two opinions. Originally the Pythagoreans, without doubt, held number to be the stuff, the inherent essence and substance of things; and so it is that, in this reference, Aristotle ranks them with the Hylicists or Ionic physicists, and roundly says of them: 'They held things to be numbers' (*Meta.* I. 5, 6). But, again, as these Hylicists identified not their ὕλη, their *materia*—water, for example—directly with any particular individual of actual sense, but looked at it only as the *materia prima*, or prototype, of the several individual things, so numbers were capable of being regarded as similar prototypes, and Aristotle, in that reference, might justly say of the Pythagoreans: 'They held numbers to be more adequate prototypes of existence than water, air, etc.' Should there still appear to remain, nevertheless, any uncertainty in the expressions of Aristotle in regard to the meaning of the Pythagorean number-theory, its source can only lie in this, that the Pythagoreans themselves had not made the distinction between an ideal and a material principle, but had contented themselves with the general proposition that number was the principle of things, that all was number.

4. The Principle in Operation.—From the nature of the principle, we readily expect that its application in explanation of the various real spheres will end in a mere empty, barren symbolism. In discriminating number, for example, into its two kinds of odd and even, as into its inherent antithesis of limited and unlimited, and then in applying these distinctions to astronomy, music, psychology, ethics, etc., there arose such combinations as these: One is the point, two the line, three the plane,

four the solid, five the quality, etc., or the soul is a harmony, and equally so virtue, etc. Not only philosophical, but even historical interest disappears here; and it is intelligible how unavoidably the ancients themselves have, in the case of such arbitrary combinations, furnished us with the most discrepant accounts. Thus we hear that justice was to the Pythagoreans now three, now four, now five, and now nine. Naturally, in the case of so loose and arbitrary a mode of philosophizing, a great diversity of individual views will arise earlier than in other schools; some preferring one interpretation of a given mathematical form, and some another. What alone has any truth or importance in this arithmetical mystic is the leading thought that law, order, and agreement obtain in the affairs of nature, and that these relations are capable of being expressed in number and measure. But this truth the Pythagoreans have hidden away among the phantasies of a fanaticism at once unbridled and cold.

If we except the movements assigned to the earth and stars, there is but little of scientific merit in the physics of the Pythagoreans. Their ethics, too, are deficient. What has been transmitted to us in that respect is characteristic rather of the life and discipline of their peculiar society, than of their philosophy. The whole tendency of the Pythagoreans, in a practical aspect, was ascetic, and aimed only at a rigid castigation of the moral principle. Their conception of the body as a prison of the soul, which latter, for its part, belonged to loftier regions, their tenet of the transmigration of souls into the bodies of animals, from which only a pure and pious life delivered, their representations of the severe penalties of the other world, their prescript that man should regard himself as property of God, that he should obey God in all things, that he should strive after likeness with God,—ideas which Plato has considered and further developed, especially in the *Phædo*,—are all capable of being alleged in proof.

## VI.—*The Eleatics.*

RELATION OF THE ELEATIC PRINCIPLE TO THE PYTHAGOREAN.—If the Pythagoreans made material substance, so far as it is quantitative, multiplex, and consistent of parts, the basis of their philosophy,



and abstracted consequently only from its definite elementary quality, the Eleatics now went a step farther, and, drawing the last consequence of this abstracting process, took for principle a total abstraction from every finite particular, from all change, from all vicissitude of existence. If the Pythagoreans still held fast by the *form* of space and time, the negation of this, the negation, that is, of all dividedness in space and successiveness in time, has now become the fundamental thought of the Eleatics. 'Only being is, and non-being (becoming) is not at all.' This being is the pure characterless, changeless, general ground, not being that is contained *in* becoming, but being with exclusion of all becoming, being that is pure being and only to be comprehended in thought.

Eleaticism is consequently monism, so far as it endeavours to reduce the manifold of existence to a single ultimate principle; but it falls into dualism so far as it can neither carry out the denial of the phenomenal world of finite existence, nor deduce this world from the presupposed general ground of pure being. The phenomenal world, though explained to be only inessential null show, still is; there must be left to it (sensuous perception refusing to be got out of the way), the right of existence at least hypothetically; there must be procured for it, if even under protest and proviso, a genetic explanation. This contradiction of an unreconciled dualism between pure and phenomenal being is the point where the Eleatic philosophy discloses its own insufficiency; though not seen at first in the beginning of the school, under Xenophanes. The principle, together with its consequences, developed itself only in course of time; running through three successive periods, which distribute themselves to three successive generations. The foundation of the Eleatic school belongs to Xenophanes, its systematic development to Parmenides, its completion, and in part its resolution, to Zeno and Melissus (which latter we here omit).

2. XENOPHANES.—Xenophanes, a native of Colophon in Asia Minor, but who had emigrated to the Phocæan colony of Elea (in Lucania), a younger contemporary of Pythagoras, is the originator of the Eleatic tendency. He seems the first to have enunciated the proposition, 'all is one,' without specifying further, however, whether this unity be intellectual or material. Directing his

regards to the world as a whole, says Aristotle, he called God the one. The Eleatic 'One and All' (ἓν καὶ πᾶν) had still with him a theological, or a religious character. The idea of the unity of God, and the polemic against the anthropomorphism of the popular religion, this is his starting-point. He is indignant at the delusion that the gods were born, had human voices, shape, etc., and he inveighs against Homer and Hesiod for that they have imputed to the gods robbery, adultery, fraud, etc. God with him is all eye, understanding, ear; unmoved, undivided, undisturbed; ruling all through thought; and like to men neither in form nor understanding. In this manner, mainly intent on diverting from God all terms and predicates of finitude, and establishing his unity and immutableness, he enunciated at the same time this his true nature as the highest *philosophical* principle without however negatively carrying it out, by polemically turning it against finite being.

3. Parmenides.—The special head of the Eleatic school is Parmenides of Elea, a disciple, or at all events an adherent, of Xenophanes. However little has been transmitted to us for certain of the circumstances of his life, yet all antiquity is unanimous in the expression of its veneration for the Eleatic sage, and in admiration of the depth of his intellect, and of the earnestness and sublimity of his character, and the phrase, 'a Parmenidean life' became later, amongst the Greeks, proverbial.

Parmenides, like Xenophanes before him, gave his philosophy to the world in the shape of an epic poem, of which some considerable fragments are still preserved to us. It is divided into two parts. In the first part Parmenides discusses the notion of being. Raising himself far above the unreasoned conception of Xenophanes, he directly opposes this notion, pure simple being, to all that is multiplex and mutable, as to what is non-beënt and consequently unthinkable; and excludes from being not only all origination and decease, but also all elements of time and space, and all divisibility, diversity, and movement. This being he declares to be unbecome and imperishable, whole and sole, immutable and illimitable, indivisibly and timelessly present, perfectly and universally self-identical; and he appropriates to it, as single positive character (for previous characters had only been negative)—thought: 'being and thought are' to him



'one and the same.' In contrast to the deceptive and illusory ideas of multiplicity and change in the phenomena of sense, he designates the pure thought that is directed to this being as alone the true and infallible knowledge. Nor does he hesitate to regard as non-beënt and as illusion what mortals consider truth, namely origin and decease, perishable existence, multiplicity and diversity, change of place, and alteration of quality. We must be on our guard, then, against taking the one of Parmenides for the collective unity of all that is.

Thus far the first part of the Parmenidean poem. After the proposition, that only being is, has been developed in its negative and positive relations, we naturally believe the system at its end. But there follows now a second part which occupies itself hypothetically with the explanation and physical derivation of the non-beënt, that is, of the phenomenal world. Though firmly convinced that, in truth and reason, only the one is, Parmenides is unable to escape the recognition of a phenomenal and mutable complex. He prefaces, therefore,—as, compelled by sensuous perception, he passes to the discussion of the phenomenal world,—this second part, with the remark, that truth's discourse and thought are now ended, and henceforth it is only mortal opinion that is to be considered. Unfortunately this second part has come down to us very incomplete. This much may be gathered: he explains the phenomena of nature by the mixture of two immutable elements, designated by Aristotle as heat and cold, fire and earth. Of these Aristotle remarks further, he collocates the hot with the beënt, the other with the non-beënt. All things are made up of these antitheses: the more fire, so much the more being, life, consciousness; the more cold and immobility, so much the more lifelessness. The principle of the unity of all being is only preserved in this way, that in man the sensitive and intellective substance, body and soul, are, according to Parmenides, one and the same.

It need scarcely be remarked, that between the two parts of this philosophy, the doctrine of being and the doctrine of seeming, no scientific inward connexion has place. What in the first part Parmenides directly denies, and even declares incapable of being spoken, the non-beënt, the multiplex and mutable, this he grants in the second part as at least existent in human conception. But it is clear that the non-beënt could not exist even

in conception, if it existed not altogether and throughout; and that the attempt to explain a non-beënt of conception completely contradicts any exclusive acknowledgment of the beënt. This contradiction, the undemonstrated collocation of the beënt and the non-beënt, of the one and the many, was attempted to be surmounted by the disciple of Parmenides, Zeno, who sought, supported by the notion of being, dialectically to eliminate sensuous knowledge and the world consequently of the non-beënt.

4. ZENO.—The Eleatic Zeno, born about 500 B.C., a disciple of Parmenides, dialectically developed the doctrine of his master, and carried out, the most rigorously of all, the abstraction of the Eleatic *one* as in contrast to the multiplicity and natural qualitative individuality of the finite. He justified the doctrine of the one, sole, simple, and immutable being by indirect method, through demonstration of the contradictions in which the ordinary beliefs of the phenomenal world become entangled. If Parmenides maintained that only the one is, Zeno, for his part, polemically showed that there is possible neither (1.) multiplicity, nor (2.) movement, because these notions lead to contradictory consequences. (1.) The *many* is an aggregate of units, of which it is made up; but an actual unit (a unit that is not again multiple) is necessarily indivisible; but what is indivisible has no longer any magnitude (else, of course, it might be divided); consequently the many cannot have any magnitude, and must be infinitely little. Would we evade this conclusion (on the ground that what has no magnitude is the same as nothing) then we must grant the manies (the units of the many) to be self-dependent *quanta*. But a self-dependent *quantum* is only what has itself magnitude, and is separated from other *quanta* by something again that has also magnitude (as otherwise it would coalesce with them). These separating *quanta* again must (for the same reason) be separated, from those which they separate, by yet others, and so on; all, therefore, is separated from all by infinitely numerous *quanta;* all limited, definite magnitude disappears, there is nothing in existence but infinite magnitude. Further, if there is a many (a multiple of parts) it must be in respect of number, limited; for it is just as much as it is, no more, and no less. But the many must be equally unlimited in respect of number; for between that which is (any one part viewed as independent *quantum*), there



is always, again, a *third* (a *tertium quid*, meaning the necessarily inferred separating *quantum*), and so on *ad infinitum*. (2.) A moving body must before reaching term, accomplish one half of the distance to it, but of this half again it must previously accomplish the half, and so on; in short it must pass through infinite spaces, which is impossible; consequently there is no getting from one spot to another, no movement; motion can never get a start, for every space-part required to be described, sunders again into infinite space-parts. Further, at rest means to be in one and the same place. If we divide the time, then, during which an arrow flies into moments (each *a now*), then the arrow in each of these moments (that is, now), is only in one place; therefore, it is always at rest, and the motion is merely apparent. On account of these arguments, which first directed attention—and at least in part justly—to certain difficulties and antinomies involved in the infinite divisibility of matter, space, and time, Zeno is named by Aristotle the originator of dialectic. By Zeno, Plato too has been essentially influenced.

Zeno's philosophy, however, as it is the completion of the Eleatic principle, so also is it the beginning of its end. Zeno took up the antithesis of being and non-being so abstractly, and overstrained it so, that the inner contradiction of the principle became much more glaringly prominent with him than even with Parmenides. For the more consequent he is in the denial of an existence of sense, so much the more striking must the contradiction seem, on one side to apply his whole philosophic faculty to the refutation of sensuous belief, and on the other side to oppose to it a doctrine which destroys the possibility of the false existence itself.

## VII.—*Heraclitus.*

RELATION OF THE HERACLITIC TO THE ELEATIC PRINCIPLE.—Pure being and phenomenal being, the one and the many, fall, in the Eleatic principle, apart from each other: the attempted monism results in an ill-concealed dualism. Heraclitus reconciles this contradiction by enunciating as the truth of being and non-being, of the one and the many, the at once of both, —becoming. If the Eleatics persist in the dilemma, the

world is either beënt or non-beënt, Heraclitus answers, It is neither of them, because it is both of them.

2. Historical Characteristics.—Heraclitus of Ephesus, by his successors surnamed the Dark, flourished about the year 500 B.C., or later than Xenophanes, and nearly contemporaneously with Parmenides. He was the deepest of the pre-Socratic philosophers. His philosophical thoughts are contained in a work, 'On Nature,' of which a few fragments still remain. This work, made difficult by the abrupt transitions, the intensely pregnant expression, and the philosophical originality of Heraclitus himself, perhaps also by the antiquatedness of the earliest prose, became, for its unintelligibleness, very soon proverbial. Socrates said of it, 'that what he understood was excellent, what not he believed to be equally so; but that the book required a tough swimmer.' Later writers, particularly Stoics, have commentated it.

3. The Principle of Becoming.—As principle of Heraclitus, the idea is unanimously assigned by the ancients, that the totality of things is in eternal flux, in uninterrupted motion and mutation, and that their permanence is only illusion. 'Into the same river,' a saying of his ran, 'we go down, and we do not go down. For, into the same river no man can enter twice; ever it disperses itself and collects itself again, or rather, at once it flows-in and flows-out.' Nothing, he said, remains the same, all comes and goes, resolves itself and passes into other forms; out of all comes all, from life death, from the dead, life; there is everywhere and eternally only this one process of the alternation of birth and decay. It is maintained, not without reason, then, that Heraclitus banished peace and permanence out of the world of things, and when he accuses ears and eyes of deception, he doubtless means in a like reference, that they delude men with a show of permanence where there is only uninterrupted change.

It is in further development of the principle that Heraclitus intimates that all becoming is to be conceived as the result of opposing adversatives, as the harmonious conjunction of hostile principles. If what is did not continually sunder into contrarieties, which are distinguished from each other, which oppose each other, partly driving off and supplanting one another, partly attracting and supplementing, and flowing over into one another, all—



all actuality and life—would cease and decease. Hence the two familiar *dicta*—'Strife is the father of things,' and 'The one, sundering from itself, coalesces with itself, like the harmony of the bow and the lyre.' That is, there is unity in the world only so far as the life of the world parts into antitheses, in the conjunction and conciliation of which, indeed, this very unity consists. Unity presupposes duality, harmony discord, attraction repulsion, and only by the one is the other realized. 'Join together,' runs another of his *dicta*, 'whole and unwhole, congruous and incongruous, accordant and discordant, then comes from all one, from one all.'

4. Fire.—In what relation to this principle of becoming stands now the principle of fire, which is likewise ascribed to Heraclitus? Heraclitus, says Aristotle, made fire the principle, as Thales water, and Anaximenes air. But obviously we must not understand this statement as if Heraclitus, like the Hylicists, had made fire the primitive matter or element. He who ascribes reality only to becoming itself, cannot possibly collocate with this becoming an additional elementary matter as fundamental substance. When, therefore, Heraclitus names the world an ever-living fire that, in due measure and degree, extinguishes itself and again kindles itself, when he says, all is exchanged for fire and fire for all, as things for gold and gold for things, he can only understand by this that fire, this restless, all-consuming, all-transmuting, and equally (in heat) all-vivifying element, represents the constant force of this eternal alteration and transformation, the notion of life, in the most vivid and energetic manner. We might name fire in the Heraclitic sense as a symbol or manifestation of the becoming, if it were not also with him at the same time substrate of the movement, that is to say, the means of which the power of motion, that is precedent to all matter, avails itself for the production of the living process of things. Heraclitus then explains the multiplicity of things by the arrestment and partial extinction of this fire, in consequence of which it condenses itself into material elements, first air, then water, then earth. But this fire acquires equally again the preponderance over these obstructions, and rekindles itself afresh. These two processes of extinction and ignition in this fire-power, alternate, according to Heraclitus, in perpetual rotation with each other; and he taught, therefore, that in stated periods the world

resolves itself into the primal fire, in order to re-create itself out of it again. Moreover, also, fire is to him, even in individual things, the principle of movement, of physical as of spiritual vitality; the soul itself is a fiery vapour; its power and perfection depend on its being pure from all grosser and duller elements. The practical philosophy of Heraclitus requires that we should not follow the deceitful delusions of sense which fetter us to the changing and the perishable, but reason; it teaches us to know the true, the abiding in the mutable, and especially leads us tranquilly to acquiesce in the necessary order of the universe, and to perceive, even in that which seems to us evil, an element that co-operates to the harmony of the whole.

5. TRANSITION TO THE ATOMISTS.—The Eleatic and the Heraclitic principles constitute the completest antithesis to each other. If Heraclitus resolves all permanent existence into an absolutely fluent becoming, Parmenides resolves all becoming into an absolutely permanent being, and even the senses, eye and ear, to which the former imputes the error of transmuting the fleeting becoming into a settled being, are charged by the latter with the false opinion which drags immovable being into the process of becoming. We may say, accordingly, that being and becoming are the equally justified antitheses which demand for themselves mutual equalization and conciliation. Heraclitus conceives the phenomenal world as existent contradiction, and persists in this contradiction as ultimate. That which the Eleatics believed themselves obliged to deny, becoming, was not explained by being simply maintained. The question ever recurs again, Why is all being a becoming? Why is the one perpetually sundered into the many? The answer to this question, that is to say, the explanation of the becoming from the preconceived principle of the being, is the position and the problem of the philosophy of Empedocles and of the Atomists.

## VIII.—*Empedocles.*

GENERAL SURVEY.—Empedocles of Agrigentum, extolled by antiquity as statesman and orator, as physicist, physician, and poet, even as prophet and worker of miracles, flourished about the year 444 B.C., was conse



quently later than Parmenides and Heraclitus, and wrote a poem on nature, which is preserved to us in pretty large fragments. His philosophical system may be briefly characterized as an attempt at a combination between Eleatic being and Heraclitic becoming. Proceeding from the Eleatic thought, that neither what had previously not been could become, nor what was perish, he assumed, as imperishable being, four eternal, self-subsistent, mutually inderivative, but divisible primal matters (our own four elements). But, at the same time, combining herewith the Heraclitic principle of process in nature, he conceives his four elements to be mingled and moulded by two moving forces, the uniting one of friendship, and the disuniting one of strife. At first the four elements existed together, absolutely one with each other, and immovable in the *Sphairos*, that is, in the pure and perfect globe-shaped divine primitive world, where *friendship* maintained them in unity, till gradually *strife*, penetrating from the periphery into the inner of the *Sphairos*, that is, attaining to a disintegrating power, broke up the unity, whereby the world of contrarieties in which we live began to form itself.

2. THE FOUR ELEMENTS.—With his doctrine of the four elements, Empedocles unites himself, on the one hand, to the series of Ionic physicists, and on the other hand, he separates himself from these by his elementary *four*, as originator of which he is pointedly designated by the ancients. He distinguishes himself from the old Hylicists more definitely in this way, that he attributes to his four 'radical elements' an immutable being, by virtue of which they arise not out of each other, nor pass over into each other, and in general are capable not of any change in themselves, but only in their mutual composition. All that is called origination and decease, all mutation, rests therefore only on the mingling and unmingling of these eternal primitive elements; all the inexhaustible multiplicity of being on their various relations of intermixture. All becoming is thus now thought only as change of place. (Mechanical as opposed to dynamical explanation of nature.)

3. THE TWO FORCES.—Whence becoming now, if in matter itself there lie no principle and no ground explanatory of change? As Empedocles neither denied change, like the Eleatics, nor placed it, like Heraclitus, as an immanent principle in matter, there remained

nothing for him but to set beside matter a moving force. But, again, the antithesis of one and many attaching to his predecessors (and which called for an explanation) laid him under an obligation also to attribute to this moving force two originally different directions,—on one side a separating or repulsive tendency, and on the other an attractive one. The sundering of the one into many and the conjoining of the many into one, alone pointed to an opposition of forces which already Heraclitus had recognised. If Parmenides, now, with his principle of unity, so to speak, had adopted love for principle, and if Heraclitus, with his principle of the many, had selected strife, Empedocles makes here also, as principle of his own philosophy, the combination of both. He has not, it is true, exactly determined for his two forces their spheres of action as in mutual relation. Although, in propriety, friendship is the attractive, strife the repulsive force, nevertheless we find Empedocles at another time treating strife as the tendency of union and creation, and love as that of separation. And, in effect, the truth is that, in such a movement as becoming, any thorough disunion of a separating and a uniting force, is an impossible abstraction.

4. Relation of the Philosophy of Empedocles to those of the Eleatics and of Heraclitus.—In placing by the side of matter, as element of being, a moving force, as element of becoming, the philosophy of Empedocles is evidently a conciliation, or more properly a collocation, of the Eleatic and the Heraclitic principles. The systems of these two classes of predecessors he has woven into his own philosophy in equal shares. With the Eleatics, he denies origination and decease, that is, transition of what is, into what is not, and of what is not, into what is; with Heraclitus he has an equal interest in the explanation of change. From the former source he takes the permanent immutable being of his primitive matters; from the latter, the principle of a moving force. With the Eleatics, finally, he places true being in original undistinguished unity as Sphairos; with Heraclitus, again, he conceives the world we possess as the continual product of conflicting forces. It is with justice, then, that he has been described as an eclectic, who united, but not quite consequently, the fundamental ideas of his two immediate predecessors.



## IX.—*The Atomists.*

The Founders. — Like Empedocles, the Atomists, *Leucippus* and *Democritus*, endeavoured to effect a combination of the Eleatic and Heraclitic principles, but in another way. Democritus, the younger and better known of the two, born of wealthy parents, in the Ionian colony of Abdera, about 460 B.C., travelled extensively (he was the greatest polymath before Aristotle), and gave to the world the riches of his gathered knowledge in a series of writings, of which, however, only a very few fragments have come down to us. For splendour and music of eloquence Cicero compares Democritus to Plato. He lived to a great age.

2. The Atoms.—Instead of assuming, like Empedocles, an aggregate of qualitatively determinate and distinct primitive matters as original source, the Atomists derived all phenomenal specific quality from a primeval infinitude of original constituents, which, alike in quality, were unlike in quantity. Their atoms are immutable material particles, extended but indivisible, and differing from each other only in size, shape, and weight. As existent, but without quality, they are absolutely incapable of any metamorphosis or qualitative alteration, so that, as with Empedocles, all becoming is but local alteration; plurality in the phenomenal world is only to be explained by the various figures, order, and positions of the atoms, which present themselves, too, united in various complexions.

3. The Plenum and the Vacuum.—The atoms, to be atoms, that is, simple and impenetrable units, must be reciprocally bounded off and separated. There must exist something of an opposite nature to themselves, that receives them as atoms, and renders possible their separation and mutual independence. This is empty space, or, more particularly, the spaces existent between the atoms, and by which they are kept asunder. The atoms, as something beënt and *filled*; empty space, as what is void or non-beënt,—these two characters represent only in a real, objective manner, what the moments of the Heraclitic becoming, being and non-being, are as logical notions. Objective reality accrues thus to empty space as a form of the beënt not less than to the atoms, and Democritus expressly maintained, as against the Eleatics, 'being is by nothing more real than nothing.'

4. NECESSITY.—With Democritus, as with Empedocles, and even more, there occurs the question as to the *whence* of mutation and movement. What is the reason that the atoms take on these multiform combinations, and produce the wealth of the inorganic and organic worlds? Democritus finds this in the nature of the atoms themselves, to which the vacuum affords room for their alternate conjunctions and disjunctions. The atoms, variously heavy, and afloat in empty space, impinge on each other. There arises thus a wider and wider expanding movement throughout the general mass; and, in consequence of this movement, there take place the various complexions, like-shaped atoms grouping themselves with like-shaped. These complexions, however, by very nature, always resolve themselves again; and hence the transitoriness of worldly things. But this explanation of the formation of the world explains in effect nothing: it exhibits only the quite abstract idea of an infinite causal series, but no sufficient ground of all the phenomena of becoming and mutation. As such last ground there remained, therefore (Democritus expressly opposing the νοῦς, reason, of Anaxagoras), only absolute predestination or necessity (ἀνάγκη), which, as in contrast to the final causes of Anaxagoras, he is said to have named τύχη, chance. The resultant polemic against the popular gods, the idea of whom Democritus derived from the fear occasioned by atmospheric and stellar phenomena, and an ever more openly declared atheism and naturalism, constituted the prominent peculiarity of the later Atomistic school, which, in Diagoras of Melos, the so-called atheist, culminated in a complete sophistic.

5. POSITION OF THE ATOMISTS.—Hegel characterizes this position thus: 'In the Eleatic philosophy, being and non-being are as in mutual contradiction,—only being is, non-being is not. In the Heraclitic idea being and non-being are the same, both are together, or becoming is predicate of the beënt. Being and non-being, again, conceived as objects for the perception of sense, constitute the antithesis of the *plenum* and the *vacuum*. As the abstract universal, Parmenides assumes being, Heraclitus process, the Atomists individual being (individuality as in an atom).' So much is correct here, that the predicate of individual being is certainly pertinent to the atoms; but then the thought of the Atomists, and perhaps, of Empedocles, is rather this, that, under presupposition of these



individual unqualified substances, there be explained the possibility of mutation. To that end, the side which is averse from the Eleatic principle, that of non-being or the void, is formed and perfected with no less care than the side which is related to it, the primitive independence of the atoms, namely, and their want of quality. The Atomists in this way constitute a conciliation between Heraclitus and the Eleatics. Their atoms, for example, are, on the one hand, in their indivisible oneness, Eleatic, but, on the other, in their composite plurality, Heraclitic. Their absolute filledness, again, is Eleatic, while a real non-being, the *vacuum*, is Heraclitic. Lastly, the denial of becoming, or of origination and decease, is Eleatic, whereas the assertion of motion and of infinite power of combination is Heraclitic. Than Empedocles, at all events, Democritus has much more consequently worked out his thought; nay, we may say that he has completed the mechanical explanation of nature: his are the ideas that constitute the main ideas of every Atomistic theory up even to the present day. The radical defect, for the rest, of all such theories, was already signalized by Aristotle, when he pointed out that it is a contradiction to assume the indivisibility of what is corporeal and spatial, and so derive what is extended from what is not extended, as well as that the unconscious, motiveless necessity of Democritus banishes from nature any notion of a final cause. It is this latter fault, common as yet to all the systems, which the next system, that of Anaxagoras, begins, by its doctrine of a designing intelligence, to remove.

## X.—*Anaxagoras.*

PERSONAL.—Anaxagoras, born in Clazomenæ about the year 500, scion of a rich and noble house, again one of those who, in the exclusive investigation of nature and its laws, recognise the purpose of their life, took up, soon after the Persian war, his abode in Athens, and lived a considerable time there, till, being accused of blasphemy, he was forced to flee to Lampsacus, where he died, much respected and highly honoured, at the age of seventy-two. It was he who transplanted philosophy to Athens, which thenceforward became the centre of Grecian culture. By his personal relations also, especially with Pericles, Euripides, and other men of mark, he

exercised a decided influence on the progress of the time. The accusation of blasphemy was itself a proof of this; for it was raised, doubtless, by the political opponents of Pericles. Anaxagoras wrote a work 'On Nature,' which was widely current in the time of Socrates.

2. His relation to Predecessors.—The system of Anaxagoras rests wholly on the presuppositions of his predecessors, and is simply another attempt to solve the problem which they had set up. Like Empedocles and the Atomists, Anaxagoras, too, denies becoming in the proper sense. 'The Greeks,' runs one of his phrases, 'erroneously assume origination and destruction, for nothing originates and nothing is destroyed; all is only mixed or unmixed out of pre-existent things; and it were more correct to name the one process composition, and the other decomposition.' From this view, separation of matter and of moving force follows, for him as well as for his predecessors. But it is here that Anaxagoras strikes off in the direction peculiar to himself. Hitherto the moving force plainly had been imperfectly conceived. The mythical powers of love and hate, the blind necessity of the mechanical theory, explained nothing; or at least, whatever they explained, they certainly explained not the existence of design in the process of nature. It was consequently seen to be necessary that this notion of design should be identified with that of the moving power. This Anaxagoras accomplished by his idea of a world-forming intelligence (νοῦς) that was absolutely separated and free from matter, and that acted on design.

3. The principle of νοῦς.—Anaxagoras describes this intelligence as spontaneously operative, unmixed with anything, the ground of all motion, but itself unmoved, everywhere actively present, and of all things the finest and purest. If these predicates, in part, rest still on physical analogies, and disclose not yet the notion of immateriality in its purity, the attribute, on the other hand, of thought and conscious action on design, which Anaxagoras ascribed to the νοῦς, leaves no doubt of the distinctly idealistic character of his principle otherwise. He remained standing by the mere statement of his main thought, nevertheless, and procured not for it any fulness of completion. The explanation of this lies in the origin and genetic presuppositions of his principle. It was only the necessity of a moving cause, possessed at the same



time of designing activity, that had brought him to the idea of an immaterial principle. His νοῦς is in strictness, therefore, only a mover of matter: in this function its entire virtue is almost quite exhausted. Hence the unanimous complaints of the ancients (especially of Plato and Aristotle), of the mechanical character of his doctrine. Socrates relates in Plato's *Phædo* that, in the hope of being brought beyond merely occasional or secondary causes and up to final causes, he had applied himself to the work of Anaxagoras, but, instead of any truly teleological explanation of existence, had found everywhere only a mechanical one. And, like Plato, Aristotle also complains that Anaxagoras named indeed mind as ultimate principle of things, but, in explanation of existent phenomena, sought its aid only as *deus ex machina*,—there, that is, where he was unable to deduce their necessity from any natural causes. Anaxagoras thus, then, has rather postulated than demonstrated mind as the power in nature, as the truth and reality of material existence.

Side by side with the νοῦς, and equally original with it, there stands, according to Anaxagoras, the mass of the primitive constituents of things: 'all things were together, infinitely numerous, infinitely little; then came the νοῦς and set them in order.' These primitive constituents are not general elements, like those of Empedocles, fire, air, water, earth (which to Anaxagoras are already compound and not simple materials); but they are the identical, infinitely complex materials, constitutive of the individual existent things (stone, gold, bone-stuff, etc., and hence, by succeeding writers, called ὁμοιομερῆ or ὁμοιομέρειαι, like parts, parts, that is, like to their wholes), 'the germs of all things,' pre-existent there, infinitely small, infinitely simple, and in perfectly chaotic intermixture. The νοῦς brought movement into this inert mass in the form of a vortex that perpetuates itself for ever. This vortex separates the like parts and brings them together, not however, to the complete exclusion of all intermixture of like with unlike; rather, 'in all there is something of all,' or each thing consists for the most part of its own *likes* so to speak, but contains within it representatives of all the other primitive constituents as well. In the case of organized beings, more especially, we have the presence of the matter-moving νοῦς, which, as animating soul, is immanent in all living beings (plants, animals, men), but in different degrees of amount and

power. In this way we see that it is the business of the νοῦς to dispose all things, each in accordance with its own nature, into a universe, that shall comprehend within it the most manifold forms of existence, and to enter into, and identify itself with this universe as the power of individual vitality.

4. ANAXAGORAS AS THE TERMINATION AND CLOSE OF THE PRE-SOCRATIC REALISM.—With the νοῦς, with the acquisition of an immaterial principle, the realistic period of early Greek philosophy concludes. Anaxagoras brings all preceding principles into unity and totality. His chaos of primitively intermingled things represents the infinite matter of the Hylicists; the pure being of the Eleatics is to be found in his νοῦς, as both the becoming of Heraclitus and the moving forces of Empedocles in his shaping and regulating power of an eternal mind; and in his like parts or homœomeries we have the atoms. Anaxagoras is the last of an old and the first of a new series of development; the one by the proposition, the other by the incompleteness and persistently physical nature, of his ideal principle.

## XI.—*The Sophists.*

RELATION OF THE SOPHISTS TO THE EARLIER PHILOSOPHERS.—The preceding philosophers all tacitly assume that our subjective consciousness is in subordination and subjection to objective actuality, or that the objectivity of things is the source of our knowledge. In the Sophists a new principle appears, the principle of subjectivity; the view, namely, that things are as they seem to us, and that any universal truth exists not. The way was prepared for this position, however, by the philosophy that preceded it. The Heraclitic doctrine of the flux of all things, Zeno's dialectic against the phenomenal world, offered weapons enough for the sceptical questioning of all stable and objective truth, and even in the νοῦς of Anaxagoras, thought was virtually opposed to objectivity as the higher principle. On this new-won field now the Sophists disported, enjoying with boyish exuberance the exercise of the power of subjectivity, and destroying, by means of a subjective dialectic, all that had been ever objectively established. The individual subject recognises himself now as the higher existence and validity when opposed to the objective world, when opposed, particularly, to the laws of the state, to inherited custom, to religious tradition, to popular belief; he seeks to prescribe his laws to the objective world, and, instead of seeing in the given inherited objectivity, the historical realization of reason, he perceives in it only an unspiritualized dead material on which to exercise his own freedom. What characterizes the Sophists, then, is *illuminated* reflection. They have no philosophical system; for their doctrines and dicta display often so very popular and trivial a character, that they would on that account deserve no place whatever in the history of philosophy. Neither can they be said to compose, in any usual sense, a school; for Plato mentions, for example, under the common appellation of 'Sophists,' a very great many different individuals. What distinguishes them, then, is a spiritual movement of the time, with many ramifications, and with its roots in the entire social, political, and religious character of Hellenic life then—in short, it is the Greek *Aufklärung*, the Greek *illumination*.



2. RELATION OF THE SOPHISTS TO THE GENERAL LIFE OF THE TIME.—The Sophists are theoretically what, during the Peloponnesian war, Greek political life was practically. Plato justly remarks in the *Republic* that the doctrines of the Sophists express properly only the same principles which guided the practice of the multitude in their civil and social relations, and that the hate with which they were persecuted by actual statesmen, precisely proves the jealousy with which the latter saw in them as it were the rivals and mar-plots of their own policy. If, in fact, the absoluteness of the empirical subject (that is, the opinion that the single ego may determine quite at its own discretion what shall be true, just, good) is the principle of the Sophists theoretically, then in the boundless egotism that existed at that time in all the departments of life, both public and private, we have but the same principle practically applied. Public life was become an arena of passion and self-seeking; the party-strifes, which agitated Athens during the Peloponnesian war, had blunted and stifled the moral sentiment; every one accustomed himself to set his own private interest above that of the state and of the common good, and to seek in his own self-will and his own advantage the standard of his action and the principle of his guidance. The axiom of Protagoras, man is the measure of all things, was in

practice only all too truly followed, while the influence of rhetoric in public assemblies and decisions, the corruption of the masses and their leaders, the weak points which cupidity, vanity, and party-spirit betrayed to the crafty, offered only all too much occasion for its exercise. What was established, and had come down so, had lost its authority, political regulation appeared as arbitrary restriction, moral principle as a result of calculated political training, faith in the gods as human invention for the intimidation of free activity, piety as a statute of human origin which every man had a right to alter by the art of persuasion. This reduction of the necessity and universality of nature and reason to the contingency of mere human appointment, is mainly the point where the Sophists are in contact with the general consciousness of the cultivated classes of the time; and it is impossible to decide what share theory had here, and what practice; whether the Sophists only found practical life in a theoretical formula, or whether the social corruption was rather a consequence of the destructive influence which the Sophists exercised over the entire circle of the opinions of their contemporaries.

Nevertheless it would be to mistake the spirit of history, did we only condemn the epoch of the Sophists, and not allow it a relative justification. The peculiarities described were in part necessary results of the whole historical development. That belief in the popular religion so precipitately collapsed, this was only because the religion itself possessed no longer any inner moral validity. Mythological example might be alleged in justification or excuse of the greatest vices and the vilest actions; and even Plato, however much a friend to ancestral piety and faith, accuses the poets of having corrupted the moral sentiments of the people by the unworthy representations they had spread abroad in regard to the world of gods and heroes. It was inevitable too that advancing science should disturb tradition. The Hylicists from of old lived in open hostility to the popular religion, and the more convincingly they demonstrated in analogies and laws the natural causes of many things in which the direct action of divine power had been hitherto recognised, the more readily would the educated classes come to doubt of all their previous convictions. It was no wonder, then, if this altered spirit of the time penetrated into every province of art and poetry, if in



sculpture, quite in analogy with the rhetorical arts of the Sophists, the sentimental took the place of the high style, and if Euripides, the Sophist of tragic poets, brought upon the stage the entire philosophy of the day with all its mannerism of moral reflection, and made his characters, not the supporters of an idea like his predecessors, but only excitants of momentary emotion or other stage effect.

3. TENDENCIES OF THE SOPHISTS.—The Greek Sophists, like the French illuminati of the last century, displayed an encyclopædic universality of knowledge, and any distinct classification of them in accordance with the single idea of the historical movement, becomes on this account very difficult. The Sophists rendered general culture universal. Thus Protagoras was celebrated as a teacher of morals, Gorgias as a rhetorician and politician, Prodicus as a grammarian and etymologist, and Hippias as a polymath. This last, besides his astronomical and mathematical studies, occupied himself even with a theory of mnemonics. Some set themselves for task the art of education, others the exposition of the ancient poets. The brothers Euthydemus and Dionysodorus made war and military exercises the object of instruction. Several of them, Gorgias, Prodicus, Hippias, fulfilled ambassadorial functions. In short, the Sophists were to be found, each according to his individuality, in all the professions, in all the spheres of knowledge; what alone was common to them all was method. Then their relation to the cultivated public, their striving after popularity, notoriety, and pecuniary emolument suggests the inference that their studies and activities were, for the most part, directed and determined, not by any objective scientific interest, but by external considerations. Wandering from town to town with that migratory *tic* so characteristic of the later, more special Sophists, announcing themselves as thinkers by profession, and looking in all their operations mainly to good pay and the favour of the rich, they naturally chose questions of general interest and public advantage, though at times also the private fancies of particular rich men, as the objects of their discourse. Their special strength, therefore, lay much more in formal quickness, in subjective displays of readiness of wit, in the art of being able to rhetorize, than in positive knowledge. Their only instruction in morals consisted either in disputatious word-catching, or in

hollow rhetorical show; and even when their information rose to polymathy, mere *phrasing* on the subjects remained the main point. It is thus we find Hippias in Xenophon boasting of being able to say always something new on any matter. Of others we are expressly told that they did not consider it necessary to have any knowledge of the facts in order to speak in any required manner on any subject, or answer any question on the spur of the moment. Many of them, again, made it a point to hold measured discourse on the most insignificant objects possible—salt, for instance. In all of them, indeed, we see that the thing considered was but the means, while it was the word was the end; and we cannot wonder that they descended in this respect to that empty external trickery which Plato in the *Phædrus* subjects to so keen a criticism, and specially because of its want of seriousness and principle.

4. The historical significance of the Sophists as regards Culture.—The scientific and moral defects of the Sophists call attention of themselves, and require not, therefore—especially now that certain later historians have, with overstrained zeal, painted their dark side in the blackest colours, and brought forward a very serious charge of frivolity, immorality, love of pleasure, vanity, selfishness, empty disputatiousness, and the false show of learning—any further exposition at our hands; but what has been generally overlooked here is the merit of the Sophists historically as regards culture. If they possessed, as has been said, only the negative merit of having called forth the opposition of Socrates and Plato, then the immense influence and the lofty reputation of so many of them, as well as the revolution they produced in the thought of an entire nation, were phenomena inexplicable. It were inexplicable, for example, how Socrates could attend the discourses of Prodicus, and advise others to the same, if he did not acknowledge his grammatical contributions, and his merits in the interests of a healthy logic. In his rhetorical attempts, Protagoras also made many successful hits, and felicitously determined particular grammatical categories. On the whole, the Sophists introduced a profusion of general knowledge among the people, scattered a mass of fruitful and suggestive germs, called forth investigations into language, logic, and the theory of cognition, laid a foundation for the methodic treatment of many branches of human inquiry, and



partly originated, partly advanced, that admirable intellectual life of Athens then. Their linguistic service is their greatest. Of Attic prose we may regard them as the creators and improvers. They are the first who made style, as such, the object of attention and study, and instituted more special inquiry into measure and rhythm, as into the art of rhetorical expression. Only with them, and excited by them, is the commencement of Attic eloquence; and Antiphon and Isocrates, the latter the founder of the most flourishing school of rhetoric, are outshoots of the Sophists. There are grounds enough, then, surely, for not regarding the entire product of the time as a mere symptom of corruption.

5. The individual Sophists.—The first who is said to have been named Sophist in the given sense is *Protagoras* of Abdera, who flourished about the year 440 B.C. He taught—and was the first person who demanded payment for doing so—in Sicily and Athens. From this latter town he was banished as a blasphemer; and his book on the gods was burned in open market by the public crier. It began with the words:—'As for the gods, I am unable to know whether they are or whether they are not: for there is much that prevents us from knowing these things, as well the obscurity of the subject as the shortness of the life of man.' In another work he developed his theory of cognition or incognition. Proceeding from the Heraclitic hypothesis of perpetual flux, and specially applying it to the individual subject, he taught that man is the measure of all things, of those things that exist, that they are, and of those things that do not exist, that they are not. That, namely, is true for the percipient subject, whatever, in the perpetual flux of things and himself, he at any moment perceives and feels. For theory, then, there exists no other relation to the external world than sensation of sense, and for practice, no other than the gratification of sense. But now, as perception and sensation are with countless people countlessly diverse, and excessively various even in one and the same person, there resulted from this the further consequence, that there are in general no such things as any objective affirmations or determinations whatever; that opposed assertions in regard to the same object are to be received as equally true; that we may dispute *pro* and *contra* on all things and everything with equal authority; and that neither error nor refutation of error can possibly

take place. This proposition, that there is nothing absolute, that all is an affair of subjective conception, opinion, arbitrary will, found its application, at the hands of the Sophists, chiefly to justice and morality. Nothing is by nature (φύσει) good or bad, but only by positive statute or agreement (νόμῳ); and therefore we may make law, or regard as law whatever we please, whatever the advantage of the moment brings with it, whatever we have the strength and skill to realize. Protagoras himself appears not to have attempted any logically consequent completion of these propositions in practice; for, according to the testimony of the ancients, an estimable personal character cannot be denied him, and even Plato (in the dialogue under his name) contents himself with imputing to him complete ignorance of the nature of morality, whereas the later Sophists are (in the *Gorgias* and *Philebus*) accused by him of immorality in principle.

After Protagoras, *Gorgias* was the most celebrated Sophist. He came (427) during the Peloponnesian war from Leontium in Sicily to Athens, in order to represent there the cause of his native town, then oppressed by Syracuse. In Athens, after having brought his affairs to a successful issue, he dwelt some time, and later in Thessaly, where he died about the same time as Socrates. The swashbuckler ostentation of his external appearance is more than once mockingly mentioned by Plato. A like character marked his *occasional* speeches, which sought to dazzle by poetical ornaments, flowery metaphors, unusual phraseology, and a multitude of previously unknown figures of rhetoric. As a philosopher he attached himself to the Eleatics, especially to Zeno, in order that, with their dialectical schematism as basis, he might demonstrate that nothing exists, or if something exists, that it cannot be known, or if it can be known, that it cannot be communicated. His work then bore, characteristically enough, the title,—'Of the Non-existent, or of Nature.' The proof of the first proposition—namely, that nothing exists, since whatever were assumed to exist can neither be something existent nor something non-existent, because something existent must have either originated or not originated, neither of which alternatives is possible to thought—rests principally on the assumption that everything that actually is holds of space, or is corporeal and local, and is therefore the ultimate, self-negating consequence, the self-resolution of the preceding physical philosophy.



The later Sophists, in the consequences they drew, advanced with unhesitating audacity far beyond Gorgias and Protagoras. They were for the most part free-thinkers, whose views could only tend to destroy the national religion, laws, and observances. In this connexion, *Critias* the tyrant, *Polus*, and *Thrasymachus* are specially to be named. The two latter openly characterized might as the law of nature, the unrespecting gratification of desire as the natural right of the stronger, and the institution of restrictive laws as the cunning invention of the weaker; and Critias, the ablest but the cruellest of the thirty tyrants, described, in a poem, faith in the gods as the invention of crafty politicians. *Hippias* of Elis, the polymath, bears a better character, although, perhaps, not behind the others in vain-glory and the mania of ostentation. But of them all the best was *Prodicus* of Ceos, from whom comes the proverb, 'wiser than Prodicus,' and of whom Plato, nay even Aristophanes, speaks not without respect. Particularly well known among the ancients were his parenetic compositions on the choice of the road in life (Hercules at the parting of the ways, adopted by Socrates in Xenophon's *Memorabilia*, II. 1), on worldly goods and the use of them, on life and death, etc., discourses in which he displays a chastened moral feeling and fine observation of life, although, in consequence of the want of a higher ethical and scientific principle, he must be placed inferior to Socrates, as whose predecessor he has been sometimes designated. The still later generations of Sophists, as they appear in Plato's *Euthydemus*, had sunk to common buffoonery and a disgraceful greed of money; their dialectical arts they expressed in certain formulas for syllogisms of a captious and sophistical nature.

6. Transition to Socrates, and Character of the following Period.—The right of the Sophists is the right of subjectivity, of self-consciousness (that is to say, the demand that all that is to be acknowledged by me shall establish itself as reasonable to my consciousness); its unright is the regarding of this subjectivity as only finite, empirical, egoistic subjectivity (that is to say, the demand that my contingent will and personal opinion shall have the decision of what is reasonable); its right is to have established the principle of free-will, of self-conviction,

its unright is to have set upon the throne the contingent will and judgment of the individual. To complete the principle of free-will and self-consciousness into its truth, and by the same means of reflection, with which the Sophists had been able only to destroy, to win a veritable world of objective thought, an absolute import, to set in the place of empirical subjectivity absolute or ideal subjectivity, objective will, and rational thought, —this now was the task which Socrates undertook, and achieved. Instead of empirical subjectivity, that absolute or ideal subjectivity should be made the principle, this means, that it is announced as known and acknowledged fact, that the true standard of all things is not *my*, this single person's, opinion, pleasure, and will; that it does not depend on my or any other empirical subject's good-will and election what is to be true, right, and good, but that what is to decide here is certainly *my* thought, but also my *thought*, or that which is rational in me. My thought, my reason, however, is not something specially appertaining to me, but something common to all rational beings, something universal; and so far as I comport myself as a rational, thinking being, my subjectivity is a universal subjectivity. But every thinking being has the consciousness that what he holds for right, duty, good, is not merely so to him, but that it is so also for every rational being, and that consequently his thought has the character of universality, a universal validity, in a word, objectivity. This, therefore, is, as opposed to that of the Sophists, the standpoint of Socrates, and on this account there begins with him the *philosophy of objective thought*. What Socrates could do in contradistinction to the Sophists was this, to bring it about that reflection should lead to the same results as had been previously realized in unreflecting faith and submission, and that the thinking man should, of free consciousness and his own conviction, judge and act in the same manner as life and established custom had hitherto unconsciously dictated to ordinary persons. That undoubtedly man is the measure of all things, but man as a universal, thinking, rational man—this is the fundamental thought of Socrates, and the philosophy of Socrates is by virtue of this thought the positive complement of the Sophistic principle.

With Socrates begins the second period of Greek philosophy. It realizes itself in three great philosophical systems, the originators of which, connected personally also in the relation of teachers and taught, represent three successive generations—Socrates, Plato, Aristotle.



## XII.—*Socrates.*

HIS PERSONALITY.—In Socrates, the new philosophical principle appears as a personal character. His philosophy is wholly individual practice; life and doctrine cannot in his case be separated. A full exposition of his philosophy is therefore essentially biography; and what Xenophon records as the particular doctrine of Socrates, is for this reason only an abstraction of the Socratic character, as expressed in casual conversation. As such archetypal personality, Plato in especial has conceived his master. The glorifying of the historical Socrates is the motive particularly of his later and riper dialogues, and of these the *Banquet* is the noblest apotheosis of the personal Socrates, as the incarnated Eros, of love to philosophy realized in a character.

Socrates was born in the year 469 B.C.; he was the son of Sophroniscus, a statuary, and of Phænarete, a midwife. He was brought up in his youth to his father's calling, and not without success. As late as the time of Pausanias, who saw them, there existed on the Acropolis three statues of draped Graces, which were designated as works of Socrates. For the rest, there is little known historically of the formation of his character. He availed himself, indeed, of the lessons of Prodicus and the musician Damon, but he stands in no relation to any philosopher proper, either before or at the same time as himself. All that he became was due to himself, and for that very reason he constitutes a chief crisis of ancient philosophy. He has been named by some a disciple of Anaxagoras, and by others of the Hylicist Archelaus; but the one statement is demonstrably false, and the other at least improbable. Other means of culture than those offered by the place of his birth he seems never to have sought. With the exception of a holiday trip, and the expeditions to Potidæa, Delium, and Amphipolis, in which he served, he was never out of Athens.

How early Socrates may have begun to devote himself to the teaching of youth, can—the date of the Delphic oracle which pronounced him the wisest of men

being unknown,—be only approximately inferred from the time of the first representation of the *Clouds* of Aristophanes, which took place in the year 423. In the productions of his disciples, he appears almost invariably as already elderly, or even old. His manner of instructing was quite free and easy, conversational, popular, taking its occasions from what was nearest and plainest, borrowing examples and illustrations from things of every day (his contemporaries reproached him with always speaking of pack-asses, smiths, cobblers, and curriers), quite the opposite of the pretentious ostentation of the Sophists. It is thus we find him on the market-place, in the gymnasia, and workshops, occupied early and late, in discoursing on life and the purpose of life with youths, with younger men and older men, in convicting them of their own ignorance, and in rousing within them the slumbering seeds of knowledge. In every human endeavour, were it directed to the affairs of the state or to the affairs of the house, to business, to knowledge, or to art, he knew always, magister as he was of spiritual obstetrics, how to find points of connexion for the quickening of true knowledge and moral self-reflection, how frequently soever his attempts miscarried, or were rejected with bitter contempt, and requited with hatred and ingratitude. But inspired by a clear conviction that a thorough amendment of the state must proceed from a sound instructing of youth, he remained, to the vocation he had chosen, true to the last. Wholly Greek in these relations to the rising generation, he loves to call himself the most zealous eroticist, Greek also in this that in comparison with those free relations of friendship, domestic life was with him quite in the background. Nowhere does he bestow any great attention on his wife and children; the notorious, if even much exaggerated shrewishness of Xantippe allows us a glimpse of no uninterrupted domestic felicity.

As man, as a practically wise man, Socrates is depicted by all the authorities in the brightest colours. 'He was,' says Xenophon, 'so pious, that he did nothing without the sanction of the gods; so just that he never wronged any one even in the least degree; so much master of himself that he never preferred the agreeable to the good; so wise that in deciding on the better and the worse he never failed,' in short, he was 'the best and happiest man that could possibly exist,' (Xenoph. *Mem.*



I. 1. 11; IV. 8. 11). What, however, invests his person with so attractive a peculiarity, is the happy combination and harmonious blending of his characteristic qualities as a whole, the perfection of an equally universal and thoroughly original nature. In this many-sided tact, this skill to reconcile in one harmonious whole the most contradictory and incompatible qualities, in his triumphant superiority to human weakness, in a word, in his consummate originality, he is best represented in the brilliant panegyric of Alcibiades, in the *Banquet* of Plato. But even in the more sober description of Xenophon we find him everywhere a classic shape, a man replete with the finest social qualities, full of Attic urbanity, infinitely removed from all gloomy, anxious asceticism, a man as doughty in battle as in the drinking-bout, with all his self-reflection and all his self-control moving in the most unconstrained freedom, a consummate type of the happiest Athenian era, without the sourness, the unsociableness, the morbid self-seclusion of later men, a pious and peaceful exemplar of genuinely human excellence. A particularly characteristic feature is the 'demonic' element which he attributed to himself. He believed himself to receive from an inner divine voice, premonitions in regard to the success and unsuccess of men's undertakings, warnings of this and of that. It was the fine, deep, divining tact and instinct of a pure soul, that saw clearly into life, and involuntarily presaged the good and the consequent everywhere, even in the most individual emergency, that announced itself in these warnings, and nothing could have been more erroneous than the endeavour of his accusers to construe this demonic reference into a denial of the national gods, and an attempt at the introduction of new divinities. There certainly lay in this, that with Socrates this oracle of inner prophecy assumed the place of the established means of prediction and augury, which was already an advance to an inwardness of individual judgment alien as yet to the Grecian mind. But this advance was an involuntary one; Socrates himself still held by the ancient form of faith in a transcendent revelation; he was without opposition to the prevailing ideas, and conformed therefore perfectly to the national religion in general, although it had taken on with him the more philosophical form of a belief in a supreme intelligence of the universe, that ordered all things with design.

2. Socrates and Aristophanes.—Through the entire mode and manner of his personality, Socrates appears to have early acquired a universal notoriety. Nature had already furnished him with a striking exterior. His broad, bent, upturned nose, his great prominent eyes, his bald pate, his thick stomach, gave him a striking resemblance to Silenus, a comparison which is wrought out in Xenophon's *Banquet* with lively fun, in Plato's, with equal ingenuity and penetration of thought. This singular figure was made still more remarkable by his shabby clothes, his want of shoes, his peculiar gait, his trick of standing still frequently and of throwing his eyes about. With all this it cannot seem strange to us that the Athenian comedy should have seized for itself so striking a personality. In the case of Aristophanes there was present yet another and a peculiar element. Aristophanes, namely, was the most devoted admirer of the good old times, the enthusiastic panegyrist of ancestral institutions and polity. As his chief effort is always to awaken and quicken again in the people the desire for these good old times, so his passionate hatred is directed against all the modern tendencies in politics, art, and philosophy, against that growing illumination (*Aufklärerei*), that advances hand in hand with a degenerating democracy. Hence his envenomed ridicule of Cleon the demagogue (in the *Knights*), of Euripides the melodramatic poet (in the *Frogs*), of Socrates the Sophist (in the *Clouds*). The last, as representative of a quibbling pernicious philosophy, must appear equally destructive to him as in politics the party of the movement that unscrupulously trampled under foot all the inheritance of antiquity. And thus, then, it is the leading thought of the *Clouds* to expose Socrates to public contempt as representative of the teaching of the Sophists, of a useless, idle, youth-corrupting, manners-and-morals-undermining, sham wisdom. The motives of Aristophanes in this may, from a politico-ethical point of view, be found excusable, but they are not justifiable. It is certainly true that Socrates had much formal likeness to the Sophists, but no such circumstance is sufficient to justify Aristophanes' picture of him, a picture into which all the characteristic features of the Sophists, even the vilest and hatefullest, are introduced, but without interfering with the success of the resemblance. The *Clouds* can be regarded only as a lamentable misunderstanding, as a



wrong prompted by the blindness of passion; and Hegel, when he attempts a defence of the proceedings of Aristophanes, forgets that the comic poet may caricature, but without having recourse to manifest calumny. The whole politico-social tendency of Aristophanes, in general, rests on a great misunderstanding of historical progress. The good old times, as he pictures them, are a fiction. As little as an adult can ever again become a child by course of nature, so little does it lie in the power of possibility to bring back by main force the unreflecting obedience and simple *naïveté* of the infancy of a people, into an age in which reflection has eaten into and licked up all spontaneous instinct, all unconscious pious innocence. Aristophanes himself pronounces the impossibility of such return, when in mad humour, with cynical mockery, he abandons to ridicule all authorities, human and divine, and so gives proof that, however worthy the patriotic background of his comic extravagance may be, even he stands no longer on the level of ancestral virtue, that even he is the son of his time.

3. The Condemnation of Socrates.—Four-and-twenty years later, Socrates fell a sacrifice to the same confounding of his objects with those of the Sophists, and to the same tendency to restore by violent means the political faith and pious trust of the past. After he had lived many years, occupying himself in his wonted way at Athens, after the storms of the Peloponnesian war and the despotism of the thirty tyrants had passed over this state, after democracy had been restored in it, he was summoned, in the seventieth year of his age, into court, and accused of denying the national divinities, introducing new gods, and seducing the young. His accusers were, Melitus, a young poet, Anytus, a demagogue, and Lycon, an orator, three men insignificant in every respect, but, as it appears, not prompted, nevertheless, by any motive of personal enmity. The result of the accusation was the condemnation of Socrates. Rejecting all opportunities of flight, but allowed by a fortunate accident thirty days of the society of his friends in prison, he drank the poison appointed by the State, and died in the year 399 B.C.

The first motive of his accusation was, as said, his identification with the Sophists, the actual belief that his teaching and influence were characterized by the same dangerous principles, in a political aspect, by which the

Sophists had already given rise to so much evil. To this all the three articles in the accusation point, though manifestly resting on misunderstandings: they are exactly the same as those by which Aristophanes sought to expose the Sophist in the person of Socrates. Seduction of the young, introduction of new principles of morality, of new modes of education and discipline,—these charges were precisely those which had been brought against the Sophists, and it brings light to find that one of the three accusers, Anytus, appears in Plato's *Meno* as a bitter foe to the Sophists and their methods of instruction. Denial of the national gods is quite similarly situated; it was as accused of this that already Protagoras had had to flee from Athens. Even five years after the death of Socrates, Xenophon, who had not been present at the trial, thought it necessary to write his *Memorabilia* in defence of his master, so universal and inveterate was the prejudice against him.

There was present also another, and perhaps more decisive element, a political one. Socrates was no aristocrat, but he was too firm of character ever to lend himself to an accommodation with the humours of the sovereign masses, and too truly convinced of the necessity of a lawful and intelligent control of political affairs, to be able to make friends with the Athenian democracy as it was. Nay, to this latter, from his whole mode of life, he could only seem a bad citizen. He had never employed himself in State affairs; only once, as chief president of the Prytanes, had he filled a public office, and then only to fall into opposition to the will of the people and of those who held power (Plat. *Apol.* p. 32; Xenoph. *Mem.* I. 1. 18); for the first time in his life he ascended the tribune in his seventieth year, on the occasion of his own accusal (Plat. *Apol.* p. 17). There was added to this, that he allowed only men of knowledge and discrimination to be entitled to administer State affairs; that on every occasion he spoke against democratic institutions, especially election by ballot; that he gave the Spartan State the decided preference over the Athenian; and that by his intimate relations with the former heads of the oligarchical party, he excited the mistrust of the democrats (Xenoph. *Mem.* I. 2. 9). Amongst other men of oligarchical, Spartan-favouring tendencies, Critias, one of the thirty, had been his disciple, and Alcibiades no less—two men who had wrought the



Athenian people so much woe. When we see it perfectly authenticated that two of his accusers were considerable men of the democratic party, and further that his judges were men who had taken flight at the time of the thirty, and who had subsequently overthrown the sway of the oligarchy, we find it more intelligible how they, in pronouncing sentence against the accused, believed themselves to be acting in the interest of the democratic principle, especially besides as appearances enough could be brought against him. That they proceeded with such rapidity and haste cannot surprise us in the case of a generation which had grown up during the Peloponnesian war, and a people that rushed as quickly to violent resolutions as they again repented them. Nay, when we consider, that Socrates scorned to have recourse to the usual forms and expedients of the capitally accused, and to win the compassion of the people by lamentation and flattery, that, in the proud confidence of his innocence, he bade defiance to his judges, we shall rather on the contrary be inclined to wonder that his condemnation was carried only by a majority of from three to six. And even then he had it in his power to avoid the sentence of death, had he, in the appraising of his punishment, but consented to bow himself before the award of the sovereign people; but as he scorned to seek to mitigate the penalty by the exchange (to a fine, perhaps) allowed him by custom, because this would have been to acknowledge himself guilty, this defiance of the condemned so exasperated, as was to be expected, the excitable Athenians, that it is quite intelligible how eighty of the judges who had previously voted for his acquittal, now voted for his death. And thus an accusation, in the first instance perhaps, only intended to humble the aristocratic philosopher, and compel his acknowledgment of the competence and majesty of the people, had a result the most deplorable, and afterwards bitterly repented by the Athenians themselves.

Hegel's view of the fate of Socrates, when he sees in it a tragical collision of equally legitimate forces, the tragedy of Athens, and apportions blame and blamelessness to each side equally, is not borne out historically, as neither Socrates can be exclusively regarded as only representative of the modern spirit, of the principle of free-will, of subjectivity, of inwardness, nor his judges as champions of the ancient Attic obedience to established

observance. This is not so in the former case, for Socrates, although his principle was incompatible with that of old Greek observance, stood yet so much on the basis of the traditional that the accusations brought against him were *in this shape* groundless and false. Nor is this any more so in the latter case, for at that time, subsecutive to the Peloponnesian war, the ancient principle and piety had long shown themselves in the entire people canker-eaten, and had given place to the new ideas; and the prosecution of Socrates is rather to be regarded as an attempt to restore by force, at the same time with the ancient constitution, the dead-letter as well of ancient custom and inherited mode of thought. The blame consequently is not to be equally distributed to the two sides, and the conclusion must remain this, that Socrates fell a sacrifice to a misunderstanding, to an unwarranted reaction.

4. The Sources of the Socratic Philosophy.—It is an old and well-known controversy as to whether Xenophon or Plato is to be regarded as having drawn historically the truer and completer image of Socrates, and as being the source of the Socratic philosophy. This question comes more and more to be decided in favour of Xenophon. It has been frequently attempted, indeed, as well in more ancient as in more modern times, to disparage Xenophon's *Memorabilia* as a shallow and incompetent authority, because their homely and nothing less than speculative matter appeared to afford no satisfactory motives for such a revolution in the realm of spirit as is attributed to Socrates, for the lustre which invests his name in history, or for the rôle which Plato assigns to him; further, this opinion has been maintained, because the *Memorabilia* bear on their face an apologetic purpose, and the defence they contain concerns not so much the philosopher as the man; finally because they were supposed to give the impression that they had degraded philosophical statement into the unphilosophical style of the common understanding. There were distinguished thus an exoteric and an esoteric Socrates, the former drawn from Xenophon, the latter from Plato. But the giving of precedence to Plato over Xenophon has, in the first place, no historical right on its side, so far as Xenophon presents himself as an historian and asserts a claim to historical authenticity, while Plato, on the contrary, only in a few passages expressly gives himself out as an historical narrator, but by no means wishes all the rest that is put



into the mouth of Socrates to be regarded as authentic speech and utterance of this latter; and we possess no historical right, therefore, to view at will what belongs to Plato as belonging also to Socrates; secondly, the subordination of Xenophon rests for the most part on the false conception that Socrates had a philosophy, that is a speculative philosophy, on an unhistorical mistaking of the limits by which the philosophical character of Socrates was necessarily conditioned and opposed. There was not even a Socratic doctrine, but only a Socratic life; and just in this we have the explanation of the disparate philosophical directions of his followers.

5. General Character of the Socratic Philosophizing.—The philosophizing of Socrates is conditioned and determined by its antithesis partly to the preceding philosophy, partly to the teaching of the Sophists.

The pre-Socratic philosophy was in essential character an investigation of nature. With Socrates, mind for the first time turns on its own self, on its own essential nature, but it does this in the directest fashion, in that it regards itself as active, or as endowed with morality. The positive philosophizing of Socrates is exclusively of an ethical nature, exclusively an inquiry into virtue, and so exclusively and one-sidedly this, that, as is always the way on the appearance of a new principle, it even announced itself as a despising of the preceding endeavour, of natural philosophy and mathematics. Placing all under the point of view of direct moral furtherance, Socrates found in 'irrational' nature so little worth study, that he could conceive it rather in a common teleological manner only as external means to external ends. Nay, as he says in Plato's *Phædrus*, he never goes out into the country for a walk as there is nothing to be learned from fields and trees. Knowledge of one's-self, the Delphic γνῶθι σεαυτόν, this appeared to him as the single problem worthy of a man, as the starting-point of all philosophizing. All other knowledge he called so insignificant and worthless, that he purposely boasted of his ignorance, and conceived that his pronounced superiority in wisdom to other men must lie in the fact that he, for his part, *knew* his ignorance (Plat. *Apol.* p. 21, 23).

The other side of the Socratic philosophizing is its opposition to the philosophy of the time. He understood his task here, and saw that it consisted in placing himself on the same ground as the Sophists themselves,

and in conquering them through themselves, through their own principle. That he shared their position has been already observed. Many of his opinions, particularly the propositions that no one intentionally does wrong, and that whoever intentionally lies, or otherwise does wrong, is better than he who should do the same unknowingly,—bear at the first glance a quite Sophistic stamp. The higher tenet of the Sophists, that all moral action must be a conscious action, is not less his. But, whilst the Sophists made it their business, by means of subjective reflection, to confound and subvert all established prescripts, and render impossible all objective standards, Socrates recognised thought as the act of the universal, the free objective idea as the measure of all things, and so brought back duty and all moral action in general, from the opinion and caprice of the individual, to the true principle, the principle of universal objective spirit. It was under guidance of this idea of an absolutely true cognition, that he endeavoured to establish by thought unconditioned universal moral assignments, and to acquire possession of a rational objectivity that should be absolutely fixed, absolutely certain in itself, and perfectly independent of the self-will of the individual. Hegel's expression for this is, that Socrates set *Moralität* in the place of *Sittlichkeit* (the subjective morality of individual conscience in place of the objective morality of societary observance). Hegel, that is, distinguishes *Moralität* as the conscious, reflecting right-doing that rests on internal principles, from *Sittlichkeit* as the spontaneous, natural, half unconscious (almost instinctive) virtue that rests on obedience to established custom (use and wont, natural objective law, that is at bottom, according to Hegel, rational, though not yet subjectively cleared, perhaps, into its rational principles). This ethical endeavour of Socrates had for logical presupposition, the method of definition, that is, the ascertainment and establishment in any matter of the *notions* involved. Xenophon relates (*Mem.* IV. 6. 1), that Socrates was uninterruptedly employed in trying to find the 'what' of everything; and Aristotle says expressly (*Meta.* XII. 4), that two merits must be conceded to Socrates, *the method of induction*, and *logical definitions* (definitions of the implied notions, the universals), two things which constitute the foundation of science. How both cohere with the principle of Socrates, we shall presently see.



6. THE SOCRATIC METHOD.—Of the Socratic method we must understand that, in contrast to what is now called method, it rose not in the consciousness of Socrates formally as method, and in abstraction, therefore, from every concrete case, but that it had spontaneously grown up with the very mode and manner of his philosophizing, which last aimed not at the communication of a system, but at the schooling of the individual himself into philosophical thought and life. His method was only the subjective art he applied in his pedagogical procedure, only the manner that was peculiar to him in his philosophical intercourse in actual life.

The Socratic method has two sides, the one negative and the other positive. The negative one is what is known as the Socratic *irony*. Making believe to be ignorant, namely, and seeming to solicit information from those with whom he conversed, the philosopher would unexpectedly turn the tables on his seeming instructors, and confound their supposed knowledge, as well by the unlooked-for consequences which he educed by his incessant questions, as by the glaring contradictions in which they were in the end by their own admissions landed. In the perplexity in which one is placed when one finds one's-self not to know what one supposed one's-self to know, this supposed knowledge itself executes, we may say, on its own self, its own process of destruction. By way of gain, however, the representative of the supposed knowledge becomes mistrustful of his own presuppositions, of his accustomed fixed ideas; 'what we knew has refuted itself,'—this is the refrain of the most of these dialogues.

But, were this all, the outcome of the Socratic method would be only to know that we do not know; and, indeed, both in Xenophon and in Plato, a great part of the dialogues ostensibly does stop with only this negative result. There is, in effect, another moment, however, by means of which the irony loses its merely negative look.

This positive side of the Socratic method is the *maieutic* (that is, maieutic or obstetric art). Socrates likened himself, namely, to his mother Phænarete, who was a midwife, because, if no longer able to bear thoughts himself, he was still quite able to help others to bear them, as well as to distinguish those that were sound from those that were unsound (Plat. *Theæt.* p. 149). The nature of this spiritual midwifery will be more distinctly seen, if we consider that the philosopher, by means of

his incessant questioning and the resultant disentanglement of ideas, possessed the art of eliciting from him with whom he conversed a new and previously unknown thought, and so of helping to a birth his intellectual throes. A chief means here was his method of induction, or the transformation of the conception (*Vorstellung*) into the notion (*Begriff*). Proceeding, for example, from some certain concrete case, and, at the same time, assisting himself by connexion with the most usual conceptions, the most trivial and commonplace facts of sense, the philosopher contrived, ever comparing particular with particular, and so gradually separating and casting out what was contingent and accidental, to bring to consciousness a universal truth, a universal discernment, that is, *to form notions* (universals). To find the notion of justice, of fortitude, for instance, departure was taken from several particular examples of justice, of fortitude, and from them the universal *nature*, the notion of these virtues, abstracted. From this we see what the Socratic induction aimed at,—logical *definition*. I define a notion when I tell its *what*, its *nature*, its *tenor*, import, or contained meaning. I define the notion of justice, when I exhibit the logical unity of its various forms in actual experience, what is common to all of them. And this was the object of Socrates. 'To investigate the nature of virtue,' says Aristotle (*Eud. Eth.* I. 5), 'appeared to Socrates the problem of philosophy, and for this end he inquired what is justice, what fortitude (that is, he demanded the essence, *nature*, the notion of justice), for all virtue was to him knowledge.' In what connexion this his method of definition, or of the formation of notions, stood with his practical objects, is from this easily to be inferred. He sought the notion of each separate virtue, justice for instance, only because he was convinced, namely, that the knowledge of this notion, that a clear perception of it, was the surest guide for every particular case, for every particular moral relation. All moral action, he believed, must proceed from the notion as something consciously known and understood.

In accordance with this, the Socratic method may be described as the art of finding, by means of induction, in a certain sum of given particular cases, their underlying and supporting, or fundamental universal, their logical unity. This method has for its presupposition the acknowledgment that the true nature of the objects



HANSRAJ MEHTA LIBRARY UNIVERSITY OF BARODA

in the world lies in thought, and can be discovered by thought; that the notion is the true being of things. We see from this how the Platonic theory of ideas was but an objectivizing of this method, which method, in the case of Socrates, is as yet but a subjective knack or skill. Plato's ideas are but Socrates' universals (generalized notions), conceived as real definite existences. Aristotle, then (*Meta.* XIII. 4), precisely hits the relation of the method of Socrates to the ideas of Plato, when he says: 'Socrates did not consider the universals as particular substances separately existent; this was Plato's work, who forthwith named them ideas.'

7. THE SOCRATIC DOCTRINE OF VIRTUE.—The only positive tenet which has come down from Socrates is, that virtue is knowledge, wisdom, intellectual discernment. In other words, virtue is an act that proceeds from a clearly understood recognition of the notion of whatever any particular action contemplates, of the ends, means, and conditions that belong to this action, and not, therefore, any merely innate or mechanically acquired power and ability. Action without perception is a contradiction, and destroys itself; action with perception carries straight to the mark. Consequently, there can be nothing bad that happens with perception, and nothing good that happens without perception. Defect of perception it is that leads men into vicious acts. There follows from this the further proposition, nobody is willingly wicked; the wicked are wicked against their own wills. Nay more, whoever knowingly does wrong is better than he who does so unknowingly; for in the latter case, as knowledge is wanting, virtue in general must also be wanting, while in the former case, were it supposed possible, virtue would be only temporarily injured. Socrates would not admit that anybody could know the good without immediately doing it. The good was not to him, as it was to the Sophists, an arbitrary law, but that on which unconditionally depended the well-being of the individual as well as of the race, and this, because it was alone an intellectual act. Thus, too, that he who desired his own happiness, should at the same time knowingly neglect it, amounted to him to a logical contradiction; for to his mind, the good doing followed as necessarily from the good knowing, as the logical conclusion from the logical premises. The proposition that virtue is knowledge, has for *logical* consequence the unity and identity of all

virtues, so far as the intellectual perception that conditions the right act is universally one and the same, let it be directed to what objects it may. The same proposition again has for *practical* consequence the teachableness of virtue; and it is because of this teachableness that virtue is something universally human, something through instruction and practice to be attained to by every one. With these three propositions, which comprise all that can be called Socratic philosophy, Socrates laid the first stone of a scientific theory of morals, which accordingly dates only from him. No more than the first stone, however; and partly because he attempted no completion of his principle in all its details, no realization of a concrete moral theory, but often, in good old fashion, referred only to the laws of the state, or to the unwritten laws of universal usage; partly also because he not unfrequently supported his ethical principles on external, utilitarian, eudæmonistic motives, that is, on the particular advantages and profitable results of virtue; a manner, however, in which we do not the less miss the more strictly scientific treatment. Although the obligation to morality lay for him in the fact that man, as a thinking reasonable being, must, unless indeed he would fall below himself, act with rational judgment and purpose, still he stood withal completely on the platform of his day, and conceived virtue at the same time as the road to the realization of the specific objects of well-being, happiness, contentment, power, and honour. These objects he received as experience gave them to him, without comprehending them again in a higher collective object; he summoned to one and the same virtue in all the spheres of action, but he left these spheres themselves still lying in that empirical contingency which they possess for our ordinary consciousness and conviction in the practice of life. An exaltation over sensuous greeds and cravings, a freedom from desire such as lifts man nearest to God, a calm of mind whose equilibrium is never to be ruffled, a glad consciousness of undiminished strength and integrity of soul—these, in his own person, no doubt, he exhibited as the highest happiness, and thus already identified the notions of virtue and felicity. But he expressed this, not as a universal, but as an individual principle; he lived too much in the old way of looking at things to be able to deny the authority of actual concrete ends, and to sacrifice them to his personal ideal of happiness.



## XIII.—*The Incomplete Socratics.*

THEIR RELATION TO THE SOCRATIC DOCTRINE.—The death of Socrates was the transfiguration of the life of Socrates into an archetypal universal or universal archetype, which, as inspiring principle, acted henceforth in many directions. This conception of Socrates as general exemplar, we find, indeed, to be the common character of the first Socratic schools. That a universal, absolutely true end must guide mankind, this was the necessary consequence of the Socratic principle, which declares it the business of man to give his action unity and law through thought. But as there appeared in answer to the question, In what does this end consist? no complete, scientific Socratic system, but only a life, the life of Socrates, so many-sided, and now but closed, all came necessarily to the mode of regarding this life, to the subjective conception of the personality of Socrates, which, as is natural to anticipate, would in various be variously reflected. Socrates had many scholars, but no school. There are three of these reflexes or types which have specially become historical. These are the Cynic, Cyrenaic, and Megaric schools, founded on the conceptions of Antisthenes, Aristippus, and Euclid respectively. Each of these three conceptions possesses a true moment of the Socratic character, but, separated from each other, they break asunder what in the master lay blended together in harmonious unity, and enunciate isolated elements of the Socratic character as the true nature of the whole. They are thus, all of them, one-sided, and give a false picture of Socrates, the blame of which, however, is not, in fact, specially theirs. They too are proofs—Aristippus being obliged to return to Protagoras, and Euclid to the Eleatics, the one for a theory of knowledge, and the other for a metaphysic—of the unfinished, unmethodic, subjective character of the Socratic philosophizing; and in their own defects and one-sidednesses, they disclose in part only the original defects and weak points which clung to the teaching of their master.

2. ANTISTHENES AND THE CYNICS.—As strict literal adherent of the doctrine, and as zealous, nay coarse and often caricaturing, imitator of the manner, Antisthenes stands nearest his master. He was at one time a disciple of Gorgias, and himself a Sophistic teacher; but he attached

himself, apparently in advanced life, to Socrates, becoming his most inseparable attendant; and, after his death, founded a school in the Cynosarges, a gymnasium intended for those who, like him, were not full-blooded Athenian citizens, whence (or, according to others, from their mode of life) his disciples and adherents received later the name of Cynics. The teaching of Antisthenes is only an abstract expression for the Socratic moral ideal. Like Socrates, he regarded a moral life as the ultimate end of mankind, as necessary, nay as alone sufficient for happiness; and, like Socrates too, he held virtue to be knowable, teachable, and one. But the ideal of virtue, as it is before him in the person of Socrates, consists for him only in freedom from desires (in his very exterior he imitated the beggar, carrying staff and wallet), and consequently in the neglect of all other spiritual interests. Virtue to him is only directed to the avoidance of evil, that is to say, of those desires and greeds which bind us to enjoyments, and it stands not in need, therefore, of any dialectical argumentation, but only of Socratic strength. The wise man is to him sufficient for himself, independent of all, indifferent to marriage, family, and State (a quite unancient characteristic), as also to riches, honour, and enjoyment. In this rather negative than positive ideal of Antisthenes, we completely miss the fine humanity and universal openness of the master, and still more any turning to advantage of the fertile dialectical elements which lay in the Socratic philosophizing. Cynicism, as was natural, took on later a more decided disregard of all knowledge, a yet greater contempt for public propriety, and became often a disgusting and shameless caricature of the spirit of Socrates. Such, particularly, was *Diogenes of Sinope*, the only disciple that persisted in remaining by his master, when Antisthenes drove all the others away from him. These Cynics, who have been happily called the Capuchins of the Greek world, retained, in their high estimation of virtue and philosophy, let us say, a memory of their original; but they sought virtue, according to their own expression, 'by the shortest way,' in a life according to nature, that is, in seclusion to self, in complete independency and freedom from desire, in renunciation of art and science, and of every definite end in general. The wise man, they said, is master over all his wants and desires, without weakness, free from the fetters of societary



law and societary custom,—the peer of the gods. An easy life, Diogenes averred, is assigned by the gods to him who restricts himself to what is necessary, and this true philosophy is attainable by every one through endurance and the power of renunciation. Philosophy and philosophical interest alike vanish in the case of such beggar-philosophy; what we have from Diogenes are but anecdotes and sarcasms.

We see, then, that the ethics of the Cynic school became lost in thoroughly negative and preventative prescripts, a legitimate result of the original defect of a concrete positive context and systematic completion on the part of the Socratic theory of morals. Cynicism is the negative side of Socraticism.

3. ARISTIPPUS AND THE CYRENAICS.—Aristippus of Cyrene, up to the death of Socrates considered one of his adherents, but styled a Sophist by Aristotle—this probably because he took money for his lessons—appears in Xenophon as a man devoted to pleasure. The practical address with which he could adapt himself to circumstances, and the knowledge of mankind, by which he was enabled to procure himself under all relations the enjoyments of good living and luxury, were well known to the ancients. In his intercourse with courtesans and courtiers, at a distance from political cares in order not to be dependent, and mostly in foreign countries in order to be able to withdraw himself from all clogs of connexion, he endeavoured to realize his maxim of conforming circumstances to self, not self to circumstances. However little such a man appears to merit the name of a Socratic, he possesses nevertheless two points of contact with his master which are not to be overlooked. Socrates had pronounced virtue *and* felicity as co-ordinately the highest human end. That is to say, he had given the highest authority to the idea of moral action; but, stating it only in an undeveloped abstract form, he had been unable to find any other foundation for the obligatoriness of the moral law in any concrete case, than a eudæmonistic one, through reflection on the advantages of morality. This side now it was that Aristippus held fast and raised into a principle *per se*; pronouncing pleasure to be the ultimate aim of life, the supreme good. But now, this pleasure, as Aristippus understands it, is only the special, present, bodily sensation of pleasure, not happiness as a condition that comprehends the entire life; and

consequently, according to him, all moral limitations and obligations are, as against this pleasure, of no account. Nothing is wicked, shameful, godless, if it procures pleasure; what denies this is mere opinion and prejudice (as with the Sophists). But when Aristippus, as means for the attainment and preservation of enjoyment, recommends judgment, self-control, and moderation, the power to resist the mastery of any special desire, and in general the cultivation of the mind, he demonstrates that the spirit of Socrates is not wholly extinct in him, and that he deserves the name of a *pseudo*-Socratic, which Schleiermacher gives him, not without further consideration.

The remaining members of the Cyrenaic school, *Theodorus*, *Hegesias*, *Anniceris*, we can only briefly notice. The further development of the school hinges wholly on the more particular definition of the pleasure to be aimed at; that is to say, on the question, whether it is to be understood as sensation of the moment or condition to last, as spiritual or bodily, as positive or negative (that is, mere absence of pain). Theodorus declared for the supremacy of that mental joy which arises from judgment, and from the ability, in all relations of life, to direct one's-self in perception of a rational purpose, and in freedom from all the bonds of prejudice and superstition. Hegesias found a pure life of pleasure unattainable, and, therefore, not to be sought. Prevention of pain, with exertion of every faculty, was, according to him, the aim of the sage, and the only one that was left us, for life was full of evils. Lastly, Anniceris taught that withdrawal from family and society is incapable of being realized, that the true aim rather is to get from life as much enjoyment as can be got, and as for the occasional bitter that arises in the course of our efforts for friends and country, to take it too into the bargain; that is, he endeavoured to reconcile again the principle of pleasure with those demands of life and circumstances, to which it stood in such irreconcilable antagonism.

4. Euclid and the Megarics.—Combination of dialectical with ethical elements is the character of all the imperfect Socratic schools: the distinction is only this, that here ethics subserve dialectics, there dialectics ethics. The former is particularly the case with the Megaric school, whose special peculiarity was designated



by the ancients as a combination of the Socratic and Eleatic principles. The idea of the good is the same thing ethically as that of being physically. It was only a Socratic transformation of the Eleatic doctrine, then, when Euclid of Megara maintained that only that which is beënt, self-identical, and one with itself, is good (true in itself), and that only this good *is*, while all change, plurality, dividedness, that is opposed to this good, is only apparent. This self-identical good, however, is not sensuous but intellectual being, truth, reason, which for man also is the only good. The only end, as Stilpo of the same school taught later, is reason and knowledge, with perfectly apathetic indifference to all that has nothing in common with knowledge of the good. This plainly is but a one-sided exaggeration of the tendency of Socrates towards a thinking consideration of things, with concomitant peace of mind, and is only a finer, more intellectual Cynicism.

Any further information about Euclid is meagre, and cannot be more particularly prosecuted here. The Megaric school, under various leaders, continued to propagate itself for some time, but without living force, and without any independent principle of organic development. The later Megaric Eristic, indeed, constitutes the transition to Scepticism, as Cynicism led to Stoicism, and the Hedonism of the Cyrenaics to the Creed of Epicurus. Their sophisms and paralogisms, for the most part polemically directed in the manner of Zeno against sensuous opinion and experience, were familiar to the ancients, and much spoken of.

5. Plato as the completed Socratic.—The attempts which we have seen hitherto to build further on the the main pillars of the Socratic doctrine, being from the very beginning without any thriving germ of life, ended fruitless, resultless. The complete Socrates was understood and represented by only one of his disciples, Plato. Proceeding from the Socratic idea of knowledge, he collected into a single focus all the elements and rays of truth which lay scattered, not only in his master, but in the philosophers before him, and made of philosophy a whole, a system. That thought is the true being, and alone real, this proposition was understood by the Megaric school only abstractly, and by Socrates only as principle. The latter, indeed, proposed cognition by means of universal notions only as a postulate, and gave it no

further development. His philosophizing is not a system, but only seed and germ of logical analysis and philosophical method. Systematic exposition and analysis of the absolutely valid notions, of the world of ideas, this was left for Plato.

The Platonic system is the objectivized Socrates, the conciliation and fusion of all previous philosophy.

## XIV.—*Plato.*

PLATO'S LIFE.—(*a.*) *His youth.*—Plato, the son of Ariston, and descendant of a noble Attic family, was born in the year 429 B.C., the year in which Pericles died, the second year of the Peloponnesian war, a year so unfortunate for the Athenians. Born thus in the centre of Grecian culture, and son of an ancient and noble house, he received an education befitting his circumstances, although with the exception of the useless names of his teachers, we possess no information on the history of his earliest instruction. That the growing youth preferred the seclusion of philosophy to the career of politics may seem strange, seeing that he must have had, we should think, many inducements to the latter. Critias, for example, one of the Thirty, was the cousin of his mother, while his uncle was Charmides who subsequently met his death on the same day with Critias, fighting on the side of the oligarchical tyrants of Athens against Thrasybulus. Nevertheless, he never once publicly appeared as a speaker in the assembly of the people. In view of the commencing degeneration and extending corruption of his country, too proud to court the favour of the many-headed rabble, more inclined, upon the whole, to Dorism than to Democracy and Athenian political life as it was, he preferred to make science his occupation, rather than fall, vainly fighting as a patriot with inevitable misfortune, a martyr to his convictions. The Athenian State he considered lost; and he thought it useless to bring another sacrifice to its unavoidable ruin. (*b.*) *His spiritual apprenticeship.*—Plato was twenty years of age when he first attended Socrates, and he passed eight years in his society. Except some anecdotes unworthy of credence, we possess no particulars in regard to this period. There is only a passing mention of Plato in the *Memorabilia* of Xenophon (III. 6); it is sufficient to indicate, however, a



greater than usual intimacy between the disciple and his master. Plato himself, in the dialogues, reveals nothing of his personal relations to Socrates, only once (*Phæd.* p. 59) does he even name himself among the more particular friends of Socrates. But what influence he received from Socrates, how he recognised in him the perfected portrait of a wise man, how he found not only in his teaching but in his life and actions the fruitfullest philosophical germs and hints, what significance in general the personality of his master in its authority as exemplar had for him—this he has sufficiently demonstrated in his writings, by putting his own far more developed philosophical system into the mouth of his teacher as the centre of the dialogues, and the arbiter of the conversation. (*c.*) *His travels.*—After the death of Socrates (399 B.C.), fearing to be involved in the reaction that had now set in against philosophy, Plato, in the thirtieth year of his age, quitted, with other friends of Socrates, his native city, and took up his abode at Megara, with his former fellow-disciple, Euclid, the founder of the Megaric school (compare XIII. 4). Hitherto a pure disciple of Socrates, he became now, in consequence of intercourse with the Megarics, among whom a peculiar philosophical direction, a modification of the teaching of Socrates, had already declared itself, infinitely stimulated and enriched. We shall see again how far this sojourn at Megara was of influence in the formation of his philosophy, especially in the dialectic founding and completing of his ideas. An entire period of his literary activity, an entire group of his dialogues, finds satisfactory explanation only in the spiritual impulses he had received here. From Megara Plato travelled to Cyrene, Egypt, Magna Græcia, and Sicily. In Magna Græcia he was introduced into the Pythagorean philosophy, which was then at its perfection. His stay among the Pythagoreans was very important for him: as man he gained in practical discernment, in interest in life, and in a regard for public concerns, and the affairs of society; as philosopher, in scientific stimulus and literary motive. Traces of Pythagorean philosophy run throughout the entire series of his latest literary productions. In especial, his dislike to public and political life seems to have been much modified by his intercourse with the Pythagoreans. Whilst the *Theætetus* still signalizes in the directest manner the incompatibility of philosophy with public life,

the later dialogues, especially the *Republic*, and even the *Statesman* in which the Pythagorean influence appears already begun, return by preference to reality again; and the familiar proposition, Rulers ought to be philosophers, is a very characteristic expression for this later modification in the philosophical mood of Plato. His visit to Sicily led to his acquaintance as well with the elder Dionysius, as with Dion, his brother-in-law. The ways of the philosopher, it is true, agreed ill with those of the tyrant. Plato is said to have attracted his displeasure to such a degree that his life was in danger. After nearly ten years of travelling, Plato, in his fortieth year (388 or 389), returned to Athens. (*d.*) *Plato as head of the academy: the period of mastership* (that is, after his *Lehrjahre* and *Wanderjahre*, we have now his *Meisterjahre*).—After his return, Plato soon drew around him a circle of disciples. The place in which he taught was the *Academy*, a gymnasium outside Athens, where he possessed a garden belonging to his inheritance from his father. Of information in regard to the external history of his school and later life, we have scarcely any. His life passed smoothly, interrupted only by two other voyages to Sicily, where meanwhile the younger Dionysius had attained sovereignty. This second and third sojourn at the Syracusan court are pregnant with events and vicissitudes; they show us the philosopher in the most multiform positions and circumstances, as described by Plutarch in the life of Dion. For his philosophical character, however, these voyages are only so far important, as, according to all probability, Plato availed himself of the opportunities they offered for putting his political theory into practice. To that end he endeavoured to realize in Sicily his ideal of the State, and, by a philosophical education of the new ruler, to unite philosophy and government in one and the same hand, or at least, in some manner or other, by means of philosophy, to effect a wholesome reform of the Sicilian constitution in an aristocratic direction. His efforts were fruitless; circumstances were unfavourable, and the character of the young Dionysius, 'one of those mediocre natures which in their halfness aspire to fame and distinction, but are incapable of any depth or of any earnestness,' disappointed the expectations which Plato, on the report of Dion, had believed himself warranted to entertain of him. As concerns Plato's philosophical activity in the academy



we are struck at once by the change it manifests in the position of philosophy to public life. Instead of making philosophy, like Socrates, an object of social conversation and of ordinary intercourse, instead of entering into philosophical discourse in the streets and other public places with every one who was that way inclined, he lived and worked in retirement from the business of the outside world, confined to the circle of his disciples. In proportion as philosophy grows now into a system, and systematic form comes to be considered essential, philosophy itself ceases to be popular, begins to demand a scientific preparatory knowledge, and to become an affair of the school, a something esoteric. The reverence of the name of philosopher, and especially of Plato's, was still so great, however, that, as is related, the proposal was made to him by various States to frame for them a code of laws; and he is said to have actually done this in several instances. Surrounded by a crowd of true disciples, even women among them in the attire of men, the object of unbounded homage, up to the last moment in possession of undiminished mental power, he reached the advanced age of eighty-one years. The latest period of his life appears to have been troubled by certain differences and divisions in the school, for which Aristotle is particularly named as responsible. While engaged writing, or, according to others, at a marriage-feast, he was overtaken by death as by a gentle slumber in the year 347 B.C. His remains were laid in the Ceramicus, not far from the Academy.

2. HISTORY OF THE INNER DEVELOPMENT OF THE WRITINGS AND PHILOSOPHY OF PLATO.—That the Platonic philosophy is essentially an historical development, that it is not to be conceived as completed at once in the form of an individual system, to which a variety of writings are as supplementary fragments, but that the several writings are rather stages of evolution, as it were stations passed and left behind in the intellectual progress of the philosopher—this is an extremely important point of view for the correct understanding of the Platonic writings.

The philosophical and literary activity of Plato falls into three periods, which may be variously designated. In reference to chronology or biography, they are the periods of apprenticeship, travel, and mastership (or of *Lehrjahre*, *Wanderjahre*, and *Meisterjahre* as already named). In reference again to the dominant outer influ-

ence and points of junction respectively present in each, these periods are the Socratic, the Heraclitico-Eleatic, and the Pythagorean. In reference lastly to their subject-matter, they are respectively the antisophistico-ethical, the dialectical or conciliative, and the systematic or constructive periods.

*The first period*, the Socratic, is characterized externally by the predominance of a certain imitative dramatic element, and internally in relation to the philosophical stand-point, by the adoption of the method and chief matter of Socrates. Not yet acquainted with the results of the older inquiries, and, from the Socratic point of view, rather repelled than attracted by the study of the history of philosophy, Plato restricts himself as yet to analytic treatment of the notions, especially the ethical ones, and to such an imitation of his master as is still philosophically incomplete, though certainly beyond any mere repetition of what had been got verbally by rote. His Socrates betrays not any other view of life or philosophical attainment than the historical Socrates of Xenophon has possessed. His efforts too, like those of his contemporary fellow-disciples, are directed principally to practical wisdom, while his polemic, like that of Socrates, concerns the want of scientific knowledge prevalent in life, the Sophistical superficiality and defect of principle, infinitely more than the antagonistic tendencies of philosophy. The whole period displays still an eclectic and protreptic character. The highest point in which the dialogues of this group culminate, is the desire, still thoroughly Socratic indeed, to establish the certainty of absolute principles, the existence in and for itself (the objective reality) of the good.

Plato's historical development, certainly, would take on quite another character, were the views of some later inquirers in reference to the place of the *Phædrus* to be considered right. If the *Phædrus*, namely, were Plato's first work, this circumstance would from the beginning bespeak for Plato quite another course of culture than could possibly be anticipated on the part of a simple disciple of Socrates. The allusions in this dialogue to the pre-existence of the soul and its periodical migrations, to the affinity of earthly to heavenly truth, to divine inspiration as in contrast to human reflection, the erotic notion, the Pythagorean ingredients,—all this is so discrepant from the original considerations of Socrates, that



it would require us to place in the very beginning of his philosophical development the greatest part of what Plato had creatively struck out only in the course of his entire career. This improbability itself, and, still more, numerous other objections, pronounce for a much later composition of this dialogue. The *Phædrus* being set aside, the history of Plato's development runs pretty well thus :—

The short dialogues, which treat in a Socratic manner Socratic theories and questions are (those of them that are genuine) the earliest. The *Charmides*, for example, discusses temperance, the *Lysis* friendship, the *Laches* fortitude, *Hippias minor* voluntary and intentional wrong-doing, the *first Alcibiades* the moral and intellectual requisites of a statesman, etc. The youthfulness and immaturity of these dialogues, the disproportionate expenditure of scenic display as compared with the matter in them, the scantiness and feebleness of this matter, the indirect manner of the inquiry, that ends not in any positive result, the formal analytic handling of the discussed notions,—all this vouches for the early or maiden character of these lesser dialogues.

As special type of the Socratic period, the *Protagoras* may be taken. In this dialogue, when Plato directs his entire polemic against the Sophists, and concerns himself more especially with their external procedure, their contemporary influence, and their peculiar method as opposed to that of Socrates, without entering more deeply into the grounds and character of their philosophy itself, when further, occupied now with what is philosophical in the stricter sense, he exclusively discusses, and in the manner of indirect inquiry, the Socratic idea of virtue in its various aspects, as knowledge, as one, and as teachable (compare XII. 7),—there are exhibited to us, and in the clearest fashion, the tendency, character, and defects of the first period.

The third and highest stage of this period (the *Protagoras* standing for the second), is represented by the *Gorgias*, written shortly after the death of Socrates. Directed against the Sophistical identification of virtue and pleasure, of the good and the agreeable, or, what is the same thing, against the affirmation of an absolute moral relativity, this dialogue proves that the good, far from owing its origin only to the right of the stronger, and so only to the caprice of the subject, is something

existent in and for itself, objectively valid, and consequently alone veritably useful, and that, therefore, the standard of pleasure must give place to the higher standard of the good. It is in this direct thetical polemic against the Sophistic principle of pleasure, this tendency towards something fixed, permanent, and secure against subjective self-will, that the superiority of the *Gorgias* to the *Protagoras* principally consists.

In the first or Socratic period, the Platonic philosophizing became ripe and ready for the reception of Eleatic and Pythagorean categories. With help of these categories, to struggle up to the higher questions of philosophy, and so to free the philosophy of Socrates from its involution with practical life,—this was the task of the second period.

*The second period*, the dialectic or Megaric, is characterized externally by a retrocession of the form and poetic animation, not unfrequently by obscurity and stylistic difficulties; while inwardly it is characterized by the dialectical formation of the ideal theory, in conciliation and amalgamation with the thought of the Eleatics.

Plato was brought into relation, through his journey to Megara, with opponents, through his voyage to Italy, with other philosophical tendencies, with whom and with which he was bound to come to an understanding before being able to raise the principle of Socrates into its true significance. It was thus he was led to acquire the philosophical theories of the older thinkers, for the study of which, in view of the absence at that time of any literary publicity, the requisite appliances were not yet in existence at Athens. By means of a settlement with these different positions, such as had already been attempted by his elder fellow-disciples, he sought, transcending the narrow limits of mere ethical inquiry, to penetrate into the ultimate grounds of knowledge, and perfect the Socratic *art* of universalization into a *science* of it, into the theory of the ideas. That all human action depended on knowledge, and that all knowledge depended on its universal or notion, to these results Plato was already able to advance by a scientific generalization of the Socratic doctrine. But to introduce now this Socratic cognition through notions into the circle of speculative thought, to establish the notional unities dialectically as the element of permanence in the vicissitude of the phenomenal, to discover the foundations of knowledge, which, so to speak,



had only been *turned* by Socrates, to grasp the theories of opponents direct in their scientific grounds, and follow them up into their ultimate roots,—this is the problem which the Megaric dialogues set themselves to resolve.

At the head of this group stands the *Theætetus*. Its main contents are a polemic against the Protagorean theory of cognition, against the identification of thought and sensuous perception, or against the assumption of an absolute relativity of all knowledge. As the *Gorgias*, before it, sought to ascertain and establish the absolute principle of ethical ideas, so now the *Theætetus*, ascending from practice to theory, seeks to ascertain and establish the absolute principle of logical ideas, of those ideas which underlie all perception and all thought,—in a word, it seeks to ascertain and establish the objectivity of truth, a realm of knowledge that is independent of sensuous perception, that is immanent to thought. Such ideas are to him the universal notions, likeness, unlikeness, identity, difference, etc.

The *Theætetus* is followed by the trilogy of the *Sophist*, the *Statesman*, and the *Philosopher*, with which the Megaric group is completed. The object of the first of these dialogues is to investigate the notion of show (*Schein*, appearance), that is to say, of non-being; that of the last,—represented by the *Parmenides*,—the notion of being; and both are explanations come to with the views of the Eleatics. Plato, indeed, after having come to recognise the universal notions and the logical categories as what is permanent in the outward mutability, could not fail to have his attention awakened to the Eleatics, who by an opposite path had reached the same result,—that in unity, namely, lies all true substantiality, and that to plurality, as such, there can attach no true being. Developing this leading thought of the Eleatics into its consequences, in which the Megarics had already preceded him, it would necessarily be all the easier for him to advance to the elevation of his abstract universal notions (ideas), into metaphysical substances. On the other hand, it would be impossible for him, unless he were prepared entirely to surrender the plurality of existence, to be satisfied with the immobility and exclusiveness of the Eleatic one, and he would be obliged rather, by means of a dialectical development of the Eleatic principle, to attempt to show that the one must at the same time be an organized and co-articulated whole that included the plurality

within its own unity. The *Sophist*, in demonstrating the existence of show or of non-being (that is to say, the plurality of the ideas, and their nature to possess specific quality each only in a mutual contrast of pairs that are *counterparts*, results due to the presence of negation), discusses this double relation to the Eleatic principle polemically as against the latter. The *Parmenides* again—in demonstrating the Eleatic one, by virtue of its own logical consequence, to strike round into its reverse, and undergo diremption into plurality—effects the same object irenically. The internal progress of the ideal theory in the Megaric group is therefore this, that the *Theætetus* makes good, as against the Heraclitico-Protagorean doctrine of an absolute becoming, the permanent, objective reality of the ideas; the *Sophist* again their reciprocal relation and susceptibility of combination; and the *Parmenides* finally their entire dialectic complex, their relation to the phenomenal world, and their self-conciliation (fusion) with the latter.

*The third period* begins with the return of the philosopher to his native country. It unites the perfection of form of the first with the deeper philosophical substance of the second. The memories of his young years appear at that time to have arisen anew before the soul of Plato, and to have again imparted to his literary faculty its long-unwonted freshness and fulness, whilst at the same time his experience of foreign countries, and his acquaintance in particular with the Pythagorean philosophy, had enriched his mind with a wealth of images and ideals. This revival of old memories announces itself specially in this, that the writings of this group return with preference and love to the personality of Socrates, and manifest the entire Platonic philosophy to be in a measure, but a glorifying of the Socratic theory, but an exaltation of the historical Socrates into the idea. In contrast to the two former periods, the third is characterized externally, hand in hand with the growing influence of Pythagoreanism, by an increasing predominance of the mythic form, and internally, in speculative reference, by the application of the ideas to the concrete spheres of psychology, ethics, and natural science. That the ideas are objective realities, the seat of all substantiality and truth, as conversely that the phenomena of sense are copies of these,—this theory is now no longer argued, but is assumed as proved, and is made principle or dialectical basis of the discussion of the *real* disciplines. Combined with this is the tendency to conjoin into the totality of a system the separate disciplines hitherto divided, as well as inwardly to fuse together all the previous principles of philosophy, that is, the ethical of Socrates, the dialectical of the Eleatics, and the physical of the Pythagoreans.



Thus the *Phædrus*, which is Plato's inaugural programme on opening of his Academic career, and the *Banquet*, which is connected with it, attempt—both starting from the *erotic* notion as the veritable philosophical germ—to subject the rhetorical theory and practice of the time to a critique on principles, in order to show, in contrast to both, that only exclusive devotion to the idea, the true Eros, affords that understood and settled stability of a scientific principle which is alone in a condition to secure us from subjectivity, absence of principle, and crudeness. Thus, too, the remaining greater works are but similar attempts, as the *Phædo*, to found the immortality of the soul on the ideal theory, the *Philebus* to apply the highest categories of the system to the notions of pleasure and the supreme good, and finally the closing and consummating works of the *Republic* and the *Timæus* to determine the true character of the state and of nature, of the physical and the spiritual universe.

Having thus delineated the history of the inner development of the Platonic philosophy, we turn now to its systematic exposition.

3. Division of the Platonic System.—Plato himself having given us no systematic exposition of his philosophy, no classifying principle realized in actual application, but only the history of his thought, or only the exposition of his philosophical development, we find ourselves reduced here to mere hints. From these, various proposals have resulted, as now a division of the Platonic system into theoretical and practical sciences, and again into philosophies of the beautiful, the good, and the true. Better than these, perhaps, is another division, which has some support in certain ancient intimations. Some of the ancients say, namely, that Plato first collected the various parts of philosophy from their dispersion among the earlier philosophers, and so obtained three parts of philosophy,—logic, physics, ethics. The exacter statement is certainly that of Sextus Empiricus, that Plato virtually employed this classification, but had not definitely expressed it; it is only his disciples Xenocrates

and Aristotle who shall have expressly recognised this distribution. The Platonic system is at least susceptible of being, without violence, arranged into the three parts named. Several dialogues there are, it is true, which combine together, some more and some less, all three at once,—logic, ethics, and physics. Nay, even in those in which Plato is occupied with special disciplines, we find always the one flowing into the other, physics issuing in ethics, ethics returning to physics, and dialectic finally pervading the whole. Still, particular dialogues there undoubtedly are, in which this ground-plan can be distinctly recognised. That the *Timæus* is predominatingly physical, as the *Republic* is predominatingly ethical, admits not of a doubt. And if dialectic is exclusively represented in no single dialogue, the Megaric group at least, which closes in the *Parmenides*, and which constitutes, even according to the external intimation of Plato, a connected tetralogy, pursues the common purpose of an exposition as well of science as of its object (being), and is in its matter, therefore, decidedly dialectical. Seeing, then, that Plato must, by the very course of previous philosophy, have been naturally led to this tripartite division, that Xenocrates is not likely to have invented it, and that Aristotle assumes it as universally known, we cannot hesitate to adopt it as ground-plan in an exposition of the Platonic system.

We have no clearer declaration in Plato in regard to the *order* of the parts either. The first place belongs evidently, however, to dialectic, as the foundation of all philosophy; and Plato himself, while he gives the general prescript (*Phæd.* p. 99, and *Phædr.* p. 237), to begin in every philosophical investigation with the determination of the idea, does afterwards actually discuss all the concrete spheres of science from the point of view of the ideal theory. The position of the other two parts would seem still more doubtful. As, however, physics culminate in ethics, while, conversely, ethics, in the inquiry into the animating principle (soul) of nature, have physics for foundation, the latter will necessarily precede the former.

From philosophy the mathematical sciences have been expressly excluded by Plato. He considers them, indeed, as educational means for philosophical thought (*Rep.* VII. 526), as a necessary step in knowledge, without which no one can ever attain to philosophy



(*Ibid.* VI. 510); but still to him mathematics is not philosophy, for the former presupposes the principles of the latter, as if they were already known to all, and without giving any account of them,—a mode of procedure which, in pure science, is inadmissible; mathematics, too, has recourse in its proofs to visible pictures, although it is not of these that it treats, but of what is seen by the understanding alone (*Ibid.*) It stands then to him in the middle between correct opinion and pure science, clearer than the one, obscurer than the other (*Ibid.* VII. 533).

4. The Platonic Dialectic.—(*a.*) *Idea of dialectic.*—Dialectic or logic has been used by the ancients mostly in a very wide sense, by Plato frequently as interchangeable with philosophy. Nevertheless he treats it at other times as only a branch of philosophy. He separates it as science of the eternal and immutable from physics as science of the mutable, of what never *is*, but always only *becomes*. He separates it also from ethics, so far as the latter consider not the good in and for itself, but only in its concrete application in morals and the state. Dialectic is still thus, in a measure, philosophy in the more eminent sense of the word, whilst physics and ethics add themselves to it as two less exact sciences, as it were as not yet of the nature of completed philosophy. Plato expressly defines dialectic in the usual sense of the word, as the art of developing knowledge conversationally by question and answer (*Rep.* VII. 534). But the art of correct communication in conversation being at the same time to Plato the art also of correct thought, as indeed the ancients generally could not separate thought and speech, and every process of thought was for them a living discourse, we find him also defining dialectic as the science of duly conducting discourse, and duly joining or disjoining the genera of things, the universal notions (*Soph.* p. 253; *Phædr.* p. 266). Dialectic is for him twofold then, to know what can be joined, what not; and to know how to divide, how to combine. If along with this latter definition we consider that, for Plato, the universal notions, the ideas, are alone what is veritably actual, veritably beënt, we shall find a third definition, which also not unfrequently appears in Plato (particularly *Phileb.* p. 57), and is not by any means discrepant, this, namely, that dialectic is the science of the beënt, of the veritable, of the everlasting self-identical,—in a word, that it is the science of all the other sciences. So conceived, it may be briefly

designated as the science of what absolutely *is*, or of the ideas.

(*b.*) *What is science?* (*aa.*) *In contradistinction to sensation and sensuous conception.*—The discussion of this question, as against the sensualism of Protagoras, is the business of the *Theætetus*. Protagoras said, namely, that all knowledge is perception, and that both are one and the same. From this it followed—consequences which Protagoras himself drew—that the things are as they appear to me to be, that perception or sensation is infallible. But as again perception and sensation are with countless people countlessly diverse, as even in the case of one and the same individual they are extremely variable, it follows further, that there are no objective assignments or predicates whatever, that we can never say what anything is in itself, that all notions, big, little, light, heavy, more, less, have only a relative signification, and that consequently the universals likewise, as themselves but reductions of the changeful many, are devoid of all permanence and consistence. In opposition to this Protagorean thesis, Plato calls attention to the following contradictions and counter-instances :—*Firstly*, The Protagorean proposition leads to the most startling consequences. Being and seeming, knowledge and perception namely, being one and the same, then any irrational brute that is capable of perception is equally the measure of all things ; and instinctive sentiment, as the expression of my subjective experience, of my condition for the moment, being infallible, then there is no longer possible any instruction, any scientific discussion, any debate, or any refutation. *Secondly*, The Protagorean proposition is a logical contradiction. For according to it Protagoras must call right whoever calls him wrong ; since indeed, as is maintained by himself, nobody perceives or feels incorrectly, but, on the contrary, everybody quite correctly. The pretended truth of Protagoras, therefore, is true for nobody, not even for himself. *Thirdly*, Protagoras annihilates all knowledge of the future. What *I* hold to be useful, namely, does not on that account necessarily prove itself such in result. For, as what is useful always refers to the future, and as men, taken individually, do not possess in themselves any necessary standard for estimating the future, but one man more, another less, the inference is clear, that it is not man *simpliciter*, but only the wise man that can be regarded as a criterion. *Fourthly*,



The theory of Protagoras demolishes perception itself. Perception according to him depends on a *for one another* (a reciprocity, a synthesis) of perceived object and perceiving subject, and is the common product of both. But the objects, in his view also, are in such uninterrupted flux and motion, that it is impossible to fix them whether in seeing or in hearing. This absolute mutability renders all knowledge of sense, and, consequently, all knowledge in general—both being identical to Protagoras—impossible. *Fifthly*, Protagoras knows not the *a priori* element of knowledge. It results from an analysis of sensuous perception, that not the whole sum involved in any one act of perception is produced or introduced by the action of the senses, but rather that, besides this sensuous action, there are implied as well certain intellectual functions, and, consequently, an independent sphere of extra-sensuous knowledge. We see with the eyes and hear with the ears ; but, to conjoin these perceptions, thus acquired by means of different organs, and to embrace them in the unity of self-consciousness,—neither is this an affair of the senses. But further : we compare the various perceptions of sense with one another, and this is a function also which cannot be performed by the senses themselves, for it is impossible for us to receive through sight the perceptions of the ear, or conversely. Of the perceptions themselves finally, we affirm qualities, such as being and non-being, likeness and unlikeness, identity and difference, etc., which plainly cannot be derived by means of sense itself. These qualities, to which belong also the good and the bad, beauty and the reverse, etc., constitute a peculiar sphere of knowledge, which the soul itself creates in independency of all perception of sense, and through its own spontaneous action. In other dialogues Plato introduces, in his polemic against sensualism, the ethical moment as well. We must, he says (in the *Soph.*), make *better* men of those who materialize all things, and who maintain what is tangible to be alone true, before they can become susceptible of knowledge. Then, however, they will see the truth of the soul, acknowledge justice and reason in it, and admit that these are real things, albeit neither tangible nor visible.

(*bb*). *Knowledge in relation to opinion.*—Opinion (crude conception, feeling, instinctive conviction) is just as little identical with knowledge as perception of sense. Incorrect opinion falls of itself to the ground ; but even cor

rect opinion cannot be maintained as truth proper, for (*Theætet.*) it may be produced by the art of the orator without being legitimately describable as on that account true knowledge. Correct opinion, if materially true, is formally inadequate, and stands therefore in the middle between knowledge and non-knowledge, participant of both.

(cc.) *Science in relation to thought.*—As against the Protagorean sensualism, there has been already proved, on the part of the soul, and in independence of sensuous perception and sensation itself, a power of investigating the universal abstractedly, and of grasping in thought that which truly *is*. There are thus two sources of knowledge, on one side external sensation with inner instinctive opinion, and on the other rational thought. The former of these is employed on what is in constant process, in constant change, on what, as purely momentary, is in perpetual transition from the *was* through the *now* into the *will be* (*Parm.* p. 152); and is, consequently, a source of troubled, impure, and uncertain knowledge. Thought, on the contrary, is employed on the permanent, on that which neither begins nor ends, but always in like manner *is* (*Tim.* p. 51). There are two sorts of things, says the *Timæus* (p. 27, *seq.*), one 'that always is, and becomes not, and one that always becomes, and never is. The former, that, namely, which is always in the same state, is apprehended through reflection by means of reason; the other, again, which comes to be and ceases to be, but properly never is, is apprehended through opinion by means of sensuous perception, and without reason.' True knowledge, therefore, comes only from the pure and wholly inner activity of the mind, freed from the body and all sensuous troublings and disturbances (*Phæd.* p. 65). The soul in this state perceives things in their purity, as they are (*Phæd.* p. 66) in their eternal essence, in their own immutable nature. Hence it is that the desire of death, the longing to escape from the body as an obstacle to true knowledge, and to become pure spirit, is portrayed in the *Phædo* (p. 64) as the true mood of a philosopher. Science, after all this, then, is the thought of the veritably beënt, or of the ideas. Dialectic, as the art of joining and disjoining ideas, is the organ of their apprehension, the means of their discovery and recognition; and, conversely, the ideas are the true object of dialectic.

(c.) *The ideal theory in its genesis.*—The Platonic ideal theory is the common product of the Socratic method of notional formation (universalization), of the Heraclitic principle of an absolute becoming, and of the Eleatic doctrine of an absolute being. Plato owes to the first the idea of notional knowledge, to the second the conception of the sensuous world as mere becoming, to the third the assumption of a sphere of absolute reality. Plato connects the ideal theory elsewhere (in the *Philebus*), with the Pythagorean thought that all consists of unity and plurality, of the limited and the unlimited. To come to an understanding with the principles of Heraclitus and the Eleatics is the object of the *Theætetus*, the *Sophist*, and the *Parmenides*. This is accomplished in the *Theætetus* polemically against the principle of an absolute becoming; in the *Sophist* polemically against the principle of abstract being; and in the *Parmenides* irenically in relation to the Eleatic one. Of the *Theætetus* we have just spoken; in the *Sophist* and *Parmenides* the progress of the ideal theory is constituted as follows:—



The purpose of the dialogue so-named is ostensibly to demonstrate the Sophist as a caricature of the philosopher; in truth, however, to establish the reality of mere show or of the non-beënt; and speculatively to discuss, therefore, the relation of being and of non-being. The teaching of the Eleatics had ended in the rejection of all sensuous knowledge, and in the declaration of what we believe ourselves to perceive as regards a plurality of things, or a becoming, to be mere show. Here the contradiction was plain, of directly denying non-being, and yet admitting its existence in human conception. Plato demonstrates this contradiction at once, by explaining that any apparent knowledge which should furnish us with a false object or a false conception were impossible, if thought in general of the false, the untrue, the non-existent, were impossible. This, Plato continues, is precisely the greatest difficulty in thinking non-being, that he who denies it is obliged quite as much as he who affirms it, to contradict himself. For although it is incapable of being expressed, or of being thought whether as one or as many, yet he who speaks of it is compelled to concede to it both characters. If we grant a false opinion to exist, we at least presuppose the conception of non-being; for only that opinion can be named false that either declares the non-existent existent, or the existent non-existent. In short, if a false conception actually

exists, a non-existent, in truth and actuality, also exists. Having established in this way the reality of non-being, Plato proceeds to discuss the relation of being and non-being, or the relation of notions in general, their capacity of combination, and their antithesis. If, namely, non-being has no less reality than being, and being no more than non-being,—if, for example, the not-large be as real as the large, then every notion may in the same way be expressed as the side of an antithesis, and recognised as at once beënt and non-beënt. It is beënt in reference to itself, as what is identical with itself; it is non-beënt in reference to each of the innumerable other notions which may be referred to it, and with which it cannot enter into communion, as being different from them. The notions of the identical (*ταὐτόν*) and the other (*θάτερον*), express the form of the antithesis in general: they are the universal formulas of combination for all notions. This reciprocal relation of notions, as at once beënt and non-beënt, by means of which they become arranged together, is the foundation of the art of dialectic, the business of which is to decide what notions shall be combined together, and what not. Plato shows by example of the notions being, motion (= becoming), and rest (= *quasi*-fixed being, mortal state), what results from the combination of notions and their reciprocal exclusion of one another. Of the notions named, for instance, those of motion and of rest cannot be combined together, but, with the notion of being, either may. The notion of rest is, therefore, in reference to itself, beënt; in reference to motion non-beënt, or other. Thus, the ideal theory, its general establishment having been attempted in the *Theætetus*, through demonstration of the objective reality of the ideas, is now, in the *Sophist*, developed into the doctrine of the community of notions, that is of their reciprocal subordination and co-ordination. The category that conditions these reciprocal relations is the category of non-being, or the other. The fundamental thought of the *Sophist*, then, that neither is being without non-being, nor non-being without being, may, in modern phraseology, be expressed thus: negation is not non-being, but determinateness, and, conversely, all determinateness, and concreteness of notions, all affirmativeness, is only through negation, through exclusion, contrariety; the notion of antithesis is the soul of the philosophical method.



As positive consequence, and as a further development of the Eleatic principle, we have now the ideal theory in the *Parmenides*. The burden of this dialogue being put into the mouth of Parmenides himself, the Platonic doctrine is thus, even in its external form, presented as the special view of the Eleatic philosopher. No doubt, the leading thought here, namely, that the one is not thinkable without the many, nor the many without the one, but that both necessarily presuppose and mutually condition each other, stands in direct contradiction to the Eleatic doctrine. Still, Parmenides, in attempting to discuss and explain, in the first part of his poem, the one, and in the second (though according to his own protestation only in deference to erroneous opinion), the world of the many, had himself, in a certain way, postulated an inner conciliation between these seemingly incoherent parts of his system; and to that extent, therefore, the Platonic ideal theory is justified in giving itself out as a further development, and as the true sense of the Parmenidean philosophy. This dialectical conciliation between the one and the many, Plato attempts in four antinomies, which ostensibly have only a negative result, so far as they demonstrate, that on assumption as well as on rejection of the one, contradictions follow. The positive sense of these antinomies, which, however, can only be got by means of inferences that are not made by Plato himself, but left by him to the reader's activity, is as follows:—The first of the antinomies shows that the one, if conceived in abstract contradiction to the many, is not even one, that is, that it is unthinkable. The second shows, that in this case the reality of the many is also unthinkable. The third shows that the one, or the idea, cannot be thought, as not being, since of the absolutely non-existent there can neither be notion nor predicate, and since, if non-being be excluded from all community with being, all coming to be and ceasing to be, all likeness and unlikeness, all conception and explanation of it are also denied. The fourth, lastly, shows, that the not-one cannot be thought without the one, the many not without the idea. What now is Plato's object in this discussion of the dialectical relation between the notions of the one and the many? Does he intend by the notion of the one only to render clear, as it were by an example, the method of the dialectical manipulation of the notions; or is the discussion of this notion itself the

special object of the exposition? Plainly the latter must be the case, if the dialogue is not to end resultless, and its two parts are not to rest without inner connexion. But how comes precisely this notion of the one to be treated by Plato in a special inquiry? If we will remind ourselves that the Eleatics had, in the antithesis of the one and the many, contemplated the antithesis of the true and the phenomenal, that Plato likewise regards his ideas as unities of the multiplex, as what in the many is one and identical, using indiscriminately, indeed, 'idea' and 'the one,' as synonymous, and defining dialectic the art of combining the many into unity (*Rep.* VII. 537), we shall perceive that the one which is the object of inquiry in the *Parmenides* is the idea in general, that is, in its logical form, and that in the dialectic of the one and the many, Plato consequently seeks to exhibit the dialectic of the idea and the phenomenal world, or to determine and establish dialectically the correct view of the idea as the unity in this phenomenal world. Proof being led in the *Parmenides*, on the one hand, that the many cannot be thought without the one, and, on the other hand, that the one must be such as comprehends within itself the many, there results, on the one hand, that the being of the phenomenal world, or of the many, has only so far truth as the one, the notion, is in it, and, on the other hand, that the notion, in order to be capable of existence in the phenomenal world, actually is of such a nature as not to be an abstract one, but multiplicity in unity. Matter—this is the indirect result of the *Parmenides*—has, as the indeterminate, infinitely divisible mass, no actuality; it is in relation to the world of ideas non-beëns: and, if indeed the ideas, as what truly is, obtain in it their manifestation, still all that is real in the manifestation is the idea itself: the world of manifestation holds from the world of ideas that shines into it its entire existence in fee, and being comes to it only so far as its import is the notion.

(*d.*) *Positive exposition of the ideal theory.*—The ideas may, according to the various sides of their historical connexion, be defined as the common element in the manifold, the universal in the individual, the one in the many, the fixed and permanent in the mutable. In a subjective reference, they are principles of cognition, certain in themselves and inderivative from experience, the in-born regulatives of all our knowledge. In an objective reference, they are the immutable principles of existence and the world without, incorporeal, indivisible, simple unities, that are present in whatever may in any way prove itself self-subsistent. The ideal theory originates in the desire to express the essence of things, what each thing veritably is, to state in notions what of being is identical with thought, to comprehend the real world as an intellectual world organized within itself. Aristotle expressly assigns this desire of scientific cognition as motive of the Platonic theory of ideas. 'Plato,' he says (*Meta.* XIII. 4), 'came upon his ideal theory, because he was convinced of the truth of the Heraclitic view of the things of sense, and regarded them as an eternal flux. But if, Plato reasoned, there is to be a science or scientific knowledge of anything, there must, together with the things of sense, exist other entities possessed of stability; for there can be no science of the fleeting.' It is for the idea of science, then, that the reality of the ideas is demanded; but this can only be possible if the notion is the ground of all being. This is the opinion of Plato. Neither a true knowing nor a true being is for him possible without the absolute notions, the ideas.



What now does Plato understand by idea? That not only the ideal notions of the beautiful and the good are for him ideas, appears from what has been said. An idea, as the name alone (εἶδος) intimates, has always place wherever a general notion of species and genus has place. Thus Plato speaks of the idea of a bed, of a table, of strength, of health, of the voice, of colour, of ideas of mere relation and quality, of ideas of mathematical figures, nay, even of ideas of the non-beëns, and of what is in its nature only a contradiction to the idea, as depravity and vice. In a word, there is always an idea to be assumed whenever a many is designated by the same appellative, by a common name (*Rep.* X. 596); or, as Aristotle has it (*Meta.* XII. 3), Plato assumed for every class of existence an idea. Plato expresses himself in this sense in the opening of the *Parmenides*. The young Socrates is there asked by Parmenides what he takes for an idea? Socrates then enumerates the moral ideas, those of the just, the beautiful, the good, without condition; he also admits, but with hesitation, the physical ideas, as of man, fire, water. As for ideas of what is only formless mass, or only part in something else, such as hair, filth, and dirt, these he will not admit, but is

advised by Parmenides, that when philosophy shall have taken full possession of him, he will no longer despise such things, that is, he will perceive how even they, though in a remoter manner, participate in the idea. Here, at least, the demand is expressed, to assume no sphere of being as abandoned of the idea, to vindicate for rational cognition even what is apparently the most irrational and contingent, and to comprehend all that exists as an existence of reason.

(*c.*) *The relation of the ideas to the world of sense.*—In analogy with the various definitions of the idea are the various designations which Plato uses for the things of sense and the world without. The latter he names the many, the divisible, unlimited, indeterminate, and measureless, that which becomes, the relative, the big and little, the non-beënt. The question, however, in what relation the two worlds of sense and of the ideas stand to each other, Plato has answered neither satisfactorily nor in agreement with himself. When he characterizes, as is most usual, the relation of things to the notions as one of participation, or when he speaks of things as copies or adumbrations of the ideas which are then as archetypes, the main difficulty of the ideal theory is, by such figurative expressions, not removed, but only concealed. The difficulty lies in the contradiction, that Plato now grants the reality of becoming and of its sphere, and again declares the ideas, these stable and ever self-identical substances to be alone what is actual. Formally, indeed, Plato is so far consistent with himself that he designates crass matter not as positive substrate, but as the non-beënt, and expressly protests that the sensuous is not for him beënt, but only like to what is beënt (*Rep.* x. 597). Consistent with this also is the demand of Parmenides that a completed philosophy should find, even in the smallest particular, the idea as that which is knowable in the material world, and that in the latter there should be left behind no remnant of an existence incommensurable with thought, but that all dualism should be got rid of. Finally Plato, in many of his expressions, would seem to regard the phenomenal world as only subjective appearance, as product of subjective conception, of a confused mode of conceiving the ideas. In this view the phenomena as opposed to the ideas are quite deprived of self-subsistency; beside these they are no longer anything but the idea itself in



the form of non-being; the phenomenal world holds from that of the ideas which shines into it, its whole existence in fee. But when again Plato names the sensuous element a mixture of the element of self with that of the other or non-being (*Tim.* p. 35); when he calls the ideas vowels which, chainlike, pervade all things (*Soph.* p. 253); when he thinks to himself the possibility of matter exhibiting resistance to the creative power of the ideas (*Tim.* p. 56); when he gives intimations of a malevolent world-soul (*Laws*, x. 896), and of an undivine natural principle in the world (*States.* p. 268); when he conceives in the *Phædo* the relation between body and soul as quite heterogeneous and antagonistic,—there remains, even after withdrawal of the mythical form, as in the *Timæus*, and of the rhetorical, as in the *Phædo*, enough to substantiate the contradiction which was pointed out above. It is most observable in the *Timæus*. Here Plato, in figuring the world of sense to be formed by the Creator on the model of the ideas, assumes for this world-forming power of Demiurgus, something at bottom that is adapted to receive into itself the image of the ideas. This something is compared by Plato himself to the material which artisans work up (whence the later name *Hylè*); he describes it as completely indefinite and formless, but as capable of copying in itself all kinds of forms, as invisible and shapeless, a something that is hard to be defined; and indeed it actually refuses to be exactly defined at any time by Plato. The actuality of matter is thus denied; and even when Plato compares it to space, he considers it only as *place* of the sensuous world, as its negative condition; it participates in being only as receiving into itself the ideal form. But it is still the objective manifestation of the idea; the visible world arises through the mixture of the ideas with this substrate, and when matter is, according to its metaphysical term, designated the 'other,' it is, as result of the dialectical discussions, with logical necessity, quite as much bëent as non-beënt. As Plato concealed not this difficulty from himself, he was contented to speak in similes and metaphors of a presupposition which he was as little able to dispense with as intelligibly conceive. He was unable to dispense with it, without either raising himself to the notion of an absolute creation, or considering matter as latest emanation of the absolute spirit, as basis of his self-conciliation with himself, or directly declaring it to be subjective

appearance. The Platonic system is thus a futile struggle against dualism.

(*f.*) *The idea of the good, and the Divine Being.*—If the truth of existence is expressed in the notions, and these again are so related that a higher notion comprehends and combines within it several lower ones, and in such a manner that, proceeding from one, we may find all the rest (*Meno*, p. 81), the ideas must constitute as a whole an articulate organism, a graduated series, in which a lower term must always present itself as basis and presupposition for the next higher. This series now must terminate in an idea which shall require for its support no higher idea or presupposition. This highest idea, the 'ultimate in cognition,' the presupposition of the rest, itself without presupposition, is for Plato the idea of the good, that is, of the metaphysical, not the moral good (*Rep.* VII. 517).

What, however, this absolute good is, Plato undertakes to show, as he says himself, only in copy. 'As the sun is the cause of sight, and cause not only of the visibility of things, but of their generation and growth, so the good is of such power and beauty that it is not only cause of science for the soul, but source of being and of truth for everything that is an object of science; and as the sun is not itself either seeing, or what is seen, but stands above them, so likewise the good is not itself science and truth, but is over both, and both are not the good, but only the goodly' (*Rep.* VI. 506). The idea of the good excludes all presupposition, so far as it has unconditional worth, and to all else gives worth. It is the ultimate ground at once of knowledge and of being, of reason and of what is reasoned, of subjective and objective, of ideal and real, but it is itself raised above this disjunction (*Rep.* VI. 508–517). Actual derivation, however, of the various other ideas from the single idea of the good, Plato has not attempted; he proceeds here quite empirically; a class of existence is assumed as given, is referred to its common quality, and the latter is then expressed as idea. Nay, in having hypostasized the individual ideas, and thereby declared them each fixed and complete in itself, he has prescinded any reciprocal derivation of them, and rendered directly impossible any immanent progress from the one to the other.

In what way, now, this idea of the good, and the ideas in general, are, in Plato's view, related to God, is a difficult question. All things considered, it must be held probable that Plato conceived both (God and the idea of the good) as identical; but whether he understood again the supreme cause more specifically as a personal being or not, is a question that hardly admits of any quite definite answer. The system itself excludes, in consistency, any personality of God. For if only the universal (the ideas) is what veritably *is*, the absolute idea, or God, must also be absolutely universal. But that Plato himself consciously drew this consequence, can as little be maintained as the contrary proposition, that he was with definite philosophical consciousness a theist. For if, on the one hand, mythically or popularly, he makes mention, in innumerable places, of God, or the gods, this very plurality of gods proves that he is speaking then in the sense of the traditional religion; while, on the other hand, whenever his discourse is rigorously philosophical, he assigns to the personality of God a very insecure place beside the ideas. The probability is, then, that he never definitely put to himself the entire question of the personality of God; that he allowed himself to entertain the religious idea of God as his own natural conviction; that, in an ethical interest, he even vindicated it as against the anthropomorphism of the mythological poets (*Republic, Laws*); that he attempted to establish it from the facts of design in nature and of a universally diffused belief in God (*Laws*); but that philosophically he made no use of it.



5. THE PLATONIC PHYSICS.—(*a.*) *Nature.*—Through the notion of veritable being, which, conceived as the good, is the presupposition of all teleological explanation of nature, and through the notion of becoming, which is the fundamental quality of nature, dialectics pass into physics. As belonging to the sphere of reasonless, sensuous perception, nature cannot claim, however, the same minuteness of consideration as dialectics. Plato would seem, then, to have applied himself to physical inquiries with less affection than to those of ethics and dialectics, and that too only in his later years; he has devoted to them, indeed, only a single dialogue, the *Timæus*, and has gone to work there much less independently than anywhere else, that is to say, almost wholly in the manner of the Pythagoreans. The difficulty of the *Timæus* is augmented by its mythical form, which provoked, indeed, the ancient commentators them-

selves. If we take the description it gives simply as it offers itself, however, we find it to assume, first, before the creation of anything, a world-former (Demiurgus), as moving deliberating principle; and then, beside him, on the one hand the ideal world (which, ever self-identical, remains immovable as the eternal archetype), and on the other, a chaotic, formless, lawless, fluctuating mass, which holds within it the germs of the material world, but without yet possessing any definite form or substance. With these two elements, the Creator composes, next, the soul of the world, that is, the invisible dynamical principle of order and motion in the world (which is conceived, however, as extended in space). Demiurgus spreads out now this world-soul like a colossal net or frame, throughout the whole extent which the world is afterwards to occupy; dividing it into the two spheres of the fixed stars and the planets, and the latter again into the seven special circles. Then the material world, —first realized through development of the chaotic mass into the four elements,—is built into this frame; and, finally, by formation of the organic world its inner completion is accomplished. In this cosmogony of the *Timæus*, it is hard to discriminate between what is mythical and what philosophical; it is particularly difficult to decide, for instance, how far the succession of the creative acts in time, or what is historical in the construction, is to be considered as mere form. The meaning of the world-soul is clearer. In the Platonic system generally, the soul is the middle term between the ideas and what is corporeal, the medium by virtue of which the material element is formed and individualized, animated and ruled; in short, the medium by which it is raised from confused plurality into organic unity, and so retained. Quite in the same way, numbers are to Plato a middle term between the ideas and the world, so far as through them the sum of material existence is brought into definite, quantitative relations of multitude, magnitude, figure, parts, position, distance, etc.,—in other words, is arithmetically and geometrically disposed,—instead of existing as a limitless and distinctionless mass. Both of these functions are united in the world-soul: it is the universal medium between the ideas and matter; the grand world-schema to which the latter on the great scale owes its formation and articulation; the mighty cosmical power by which it (in the heavenly bodies, for example) is



retained in the given arrangement, moved (made to revolve), and raised by such movement in law into a real copy of the ideas. Plato's explanation of nature, in contrast to the earlier mechanical ones, is thoroughly teleological; it is constructed according to the idea of the good. Plato conceives the world as the work of unenvious divine goodness, which wills to create what shall be like itself. Demiurgus, by model of the eternal ideas, has fashioned it in perfection. Endowed with life and reason through the soul that is immanent in it, destined to endure throughout all time and never to become old, it is withal the infinitely beautiful, the infinitely divine copy of the good. Made in the image of perfection, it corresponds to the sole, all-embracing, and essential one, and is itself one; for an infinite number of worlds cannot be thought as conceivable and actual. For the same cause it has the form of a globe, the most perfect and uniform of shapes, and which comprehends all others; its motion also is that of a circle, because, as return into itself, that movement is the likest of all to the movement of reason. The details of the *Timæus*, the derivation of the four elements, the distribution of the seven planets in conformity to the musical octave, the conception of the stars as immortal superior beings, the representation of the earth as at rest in the middle of the world—an idea which was subsequently developed through subsidiary hypotheses into the Ptolemaic system,—the reduction of all the forms of matter to those of geometry, the classification of animated beings in accordance with the four elements into beings of fire or light (gods and demons), of air, of water, and of earth, the discussions on organic nature, and especially on the structure of the human body, can here only be mentioned. These matters possess philosophical interest, not so much in consequence of their substantial value—for they only expose the entire insufficiency of the natural philosophy of the period—as of the main conception that the world is the product and copy of reason, that it is an organism of order, harmony, and beauty, that it is the self-realization of the good.

(*b.*) *The Soul.*—The theory of the soul, so far as it enters not into the discussion of applied morality, but only considers the foundations of the moral act, is the completion, the cope-stone of the Platonic physics. The individual soul possesses the same nature and character as the universal soul; and it belonged to the perfection

of the world, that there should be a plurality of souls, through which the principle of reason and of life might be individualized in a plenitude of particular beings. The soul in itself is indestructible, and, through reason, in which it participates, of a divine nature; it is by its very principle destined for the cognition of the divine and eternal, for a pure blissful life in the contemplation of the ideal world. But its union with a material body is no less essential; the race of perishable beings was, for completion of the genera of things, necessarily also represented in the universe, and through that life in the body which devolves on the individual soul. The soul, as united with the body, participates in its motions and changes, and is in this reference akin to the perishable, being subject to the fluctuation of the conditions of sensuous life, and to the influence of sensuous feelings and greeds. It cannot consequently maintain itself in its pure divinity, but sinks from the celestial to the earthly, from the divine to the mortal. The conflict between the higher and the lower principle has its seat in the individual soul; intelligence succumbs to the power of sense; the absolute dualism of idea and reality, which in the great whole of the world disappears into unity, comes here into full actuality. The soul, on the one hand, sways and controls the body; but, on the other hand, the body no less sways and controls the soul, which is then debased into the lower life of sense, into forgetfulness of its higher origin, into mere finitude of perception and will. This interaction of soul and body is brought about by a lower, sensuous faculty, and Plato distinguishes, therefore, two constituents of the soul, one divine and rational, the other mortal and irrational. It is between these two that courage (*θυμός, courage, cœur*, heart), as intermediating link, appears. Courage is nobler, indeed, than sensuous appetite, but because it manifests itself also in children, and even in brutes, and frequently allows itself to be blindly hurried on without reflection, it belongs, like sense, to the natural side in man, and must not therefore be confounded with reason. The soul, consequently, is to Plato, during its connexion with the body and the world of sense, placed in a condition utterly inadequate to its proper being. In itself divine, possessed of true knowledge, independent, free, it is in life the reverse, weak, sensuous, passive to the influences of the bodily nature, betrayed into evil and



into sin by all the disquietudes, lusts, passions, contests, which arise to it from the preponderance of the sensuous principle, from the necessity of physical self-preservation, and from the struggle for possession and enjoyment. A dim sense of its higher origin, a longing for its home, the world of ideas—this, indeed, remains to it, and announces itself in love to knowledge, in enthusiasm for beauty (*Eros*), in the battle of the spirit to become lord of the body. But this very longing proclaims that the soul's true life is not this present sensuous existence, but lies rather in the future, in the future that follows its separation from the body. The soul which had given itself up to sense incurs the penalty of migration into new bodies, it may be even into lower forms of existence from which it is only delivered, when, in the course of time, it has recovered its purity. The pure soul, which has stood the proof of association with the corporeal world untainted, returns at death into the state of blissful repose, but only, after once more tasting it, to resume afresh the life of the body. The Platonic descriptions of these future states of the soul do not always agree, indeed; the *Phædrus* and the *Phædo*, the *Republic* and the *Timæus*, differ from each other in many respects; but Plato, like the Pythagoreans, is in earnest with them. It is really his opinion that the process of the world, the history of the universe, has no other import than this perpetual transition of Psyche between the higher and the lower, the divine and the human world. Psyche is of too noble a nature only to begin with this life and then vanish; she is divine and immortal; but she is not pure being as the idea is, she has in her something of the character of the 'other;' she is at once spiritual and unspiritual, free and unfree; these two contradictory elements of her being attain to manifestation in that alternation of higher and lower states, in the form of a succession in time. The soul exhibits the enigma of an equal inclination to the ideal and the sensuous; and this enigma, according to Plato, finds its answer in this theory of the nature and destiny of the soul itself. All this seems very alien to Socrates; the Socratic postulate that man shall act not from sense but from intellect, appears transformed here into a speculative philosopheme that purports to explain whence there is in man the union of both, sense and reason. But precisely in this closing concentration of his entire philosophy into the single point of the ethical

nature and destiny of the soul, does Plato manifest himself as a true disciple of his master, whose veritable vocation it had been to kindle in his pupil this lofty ideal of the sublimity of the soul in comparison with sense.

6. THE PLATONIC ETHICS.—The question in Plato's ethics (which ethics are nothing else than the ideal theory practically applied) is—with him as well as with the other Socratics—to ascertain and establish the *summum bonum*, the end or aim, which it shall be the object of all will and of all action to realize. It is in accordance with this principle (the *summum bonum*) that the theory of virtue is determined, which again forms the foundation of the theory of the state as the objective actualization of the good in human society.

(*a.*) *The supreme good.*—What is the ultimate end is the simple result of the entire idea of the Platonic system. Not life in the non-being, the perishableness, the changefulness of sensuous existence, but exaltation into true, into ideal being, is, whether in its own nature or in its relation to the soul, that which is the good absolutely. The task and destiny of the soul is flight from the inward and outward evils of sense, purification and emancipation from corporeal influence, the striving to become pure, just, and like withal to God (*Thæt.*, *Phædo*); and the path to this is withdrawal from sensuous imaginations and appetites, retirement into thought, into the cognition of truth, in a word, philosophy. Philosophy, for Plato as for Socrates, is not something merely theoretical, but the return of the soul into its true being, the spiritual new birth, in which it regains its lost knowledge of the ideal world and a consciousness of its own loftier origin, of its pristine exaltation over the world of sense. In philosophy, spirit purifies itself from all sensuous admixture, it comes to its own self, it regains the freedom and peace of which it had been deprived by its immersion in matter. It was natural that, with this view, Plato should offer the most determined opposition to the Sophistico-Cyrenaic hedonism; to the refutation of which the *Gorgias* and the *Philebus* are especially dedicated. It is demonstrated in these that pleasure is something insubstantial and indefinite, from which no order or harmony can result to life, that it is something exceedingly relative, transforming itself readily into pain, and all the more pain the more boundlessly it is worshipped; and that it is a contradiction to seek to



put pleasure, this that is inwardly worthless, above the power and virtue of the soul. On the other side, Plato nowise approves, nevertheless, any more in his practical than in his theoretical philosophy, of the Cynico-Megaric abstraction, which, besides cognition, will recognise nothing positive,—no concrete spiritual activity, no special science or art, as well as no refinement of life by means of a lawful pleasure. The concrete sciences and arts, and those kinds of enjoyment which interfere not with the harmony of spiritual life, those pure, innocent, passionless, unsophisticated delights that arise from intellectual and natural beauty,—these have their rights as well as pure philosophy. The good is not a life consisting merely of knowledge or merely of pleasure, but one commingled of both, though still such that knowledge presides in it as that element which introduces measure, order, and rationality of will and action. A certain vacillation, however, is not to be denied in Plato's views with respect to the highest good. As sensuous existence is for him, at one time, only pure non-being, the mere disturbance and distortion of ideal being, and at another time the fair copy of its ideal archetype, so there appear in the ethics at one time an inclination to a quite ascetic conception of sense as the single fountain of evil and sin (*Phædo*), and at another time a more positive view (*Banquet*, *Philebus*), which designates a life without enjoyment as too abstract, monotonous, spiritless, and therefore allows its own right to the beautiful equally with the good.

(*b.*) *Virtue.*—In his theory of virtue, Plato is at first quite Socratic. That virtue depends on *knowledge* (*Protagoras*), and is, therefore, capable of being *taught* (*Meno*), this with him is established; and as for its *unity*, though it must have resulted to him from his later dialectical investigations, that the one is at the same time many and the many at the same time one, and that consequently virtue may be regarded not more as one than as many, he still, by predilection, accentuates, nevertheless, the unity and natural connexion of all the virtues. Particularly in the preliminary dialogues is it his object to depict each of the individual virtues as comprehending in it the sum of all virtue. In classifying the virtues, Plato assumes, for the most part, the popular quadruplicity which he found current; only for the first time in the *Republic* (IV. 441) does he attempt their scientific derivation through reduction to his psycho-

logical triplicity. The virtue of reason is wisdom, the guiding and tempering virtue; for in the soul it is reason that must rule. The virtue of the heart is courage, reason's auxiliary; or it is the heart that, imbued with true knowledge, approves itself in the struggle against pleasure and pain, as the correct judge of what is fearful or not fearful. The virtue of sensuous appetite, by which the latter is reduced to its proper measure, is temperance. Finally, that virtue, to which falls the due ranging and ranking of the single faculties reciprocally, the regulatrix of the soul, and, therefore, the bond and the unity of the other three virtues, is justice.

The virtue of justice it is also which, as it conjoins in itself all the other threads of virtue, leads beyond the sphere of individual life, and founds the totality of a moral world. Justice 'in large letters,' morality as actualized in the life of society,—this is the state. Only here does the demand for a perfected harmony of human life become real. In and through the state it is that there takes place for reason the complete working-up of its own material.

(c.) *The State.*—The Platonic state is usually regarded as a so-called ideal, as a chimera, the product indeed of a brain of genius, but amongst men, as in this sublunary world they once for all are, entirely impracticable. Plato himself, it is supposed, shall have viewed the matter not otherwise, and—his *Republic* being but the sketch of the pure ideal of a political constitution—shall, in the *Laws*, as this work itself expressly declares, have intended to prefigure that which is actually practicable, and to furnish, from the point of view of ordinary consciousness, an applied philosophy of the state. But this, firstly, was not Plato's own opinion. Although he does himself undoubtedly declare that the state which he has described is not likely to be found on earth, and is only an archetype in heaven for the instruction of the philosopher (IX. 592), yet he requires that its realization be asymptotically approached; nay, he investigates the conditions and means under and through which such a state may be possibly accomplished; and so it is, also, that his particular institutions are largely directed against the various vices which must inevitably arise from the various characters and temperaments of men. To a philosopher like Plato, who only in the idea sees the actual and true, a constitution alien to the idea could only appear as the



untrue; and the usual theory that makes him compose his *Republic* with a consciousness of its impracticability, entirely mistakes the position of the Platonic philosophy. Further, the question whether such a state as that of Plato is possible and the best, is, in itself, inapposite and irrelevant. The Platonic state is the Greek idea of a state in general, presented in the form of a narrative. But the idea, as the rational import at every moment of the world's history, is,—just because it is an absolute actuality, the essential and the necessary in the existent,—no idle and impotent ideal. The true ideal is not *to be* actual, but *is* actual, and alone actual; that an idea should be too good for existence, or empirical reality too bad for an idea, this were a fault of the ideal itself. Plato, then, did not deal in the manufacture of abstract theories; the philosopher cannot overleap his time, but must recognise and comprehend it only according to its own genuine significance. This did Plato; he stands quite on the level of his day; it is Greek political life raised into the idea that constitutes the genuine burthen of the Platonic *Republic*. In it Plato has exhibited Grecian morality on its substantial side (side of instinctive observance). If the Platonic republic appeared mainly as an ideal irreconcilable with empirical reality, it is not the ideality, but rather a defectiveness in ancient political life that is to blame for this. It is the restrictedness of personal subjective freedom that, before the Greek states began to break up in license, constituted the characteristic of the Hellenic political view. Thus in Plato, too, political morality has the character of *substantiality* (customary observance, not conscious action on subjective discernment and conviction). The institutions of his state, whatever ridicule and censure they may have provoked even from the ancients, are only consequences, which, drawn with inexorable necessity, result from the idea of the Grecian state, so far as that state, in its differences from the states of modern times, granted, neither to the corporations nor to the citizens individually, any legal sphere of action independent of itself. The principle of subjective freedom failed. This non-recognition of the subject, Plato, as against the destructive tendencies of the time, and in a rigorously logical manner, has certainly made the principle of his own ideal state.

The general character of the Platonic state is, as said, the sacrifice, the exclusive abandonment of the individual to the universal, to the political element,—the reduction of moral to political virtue. Political observance shall, so Plato wills it, become universal, and attain to an immutable existence; the principle of sense shall everywhere be checked, and subjugated to that of intelligence. But if this is to be so, then a universal, a political authority must undertake the training of all to virtue, or the conservation of public morals; and all subjective self-will, every egotistic end, must disappear in the collective will and in the collective end. So powerful is the principle of sense in men, that only by the might of common institutions, only by the suppression of all subjective activity for private interests, only by the disappearance of the individual in the universal, can it be neutralized. Virtue is possible—and consequently true well-being—only by these means. Virtue must be real in the state, only so will it become real in the individual citizen. Hence the severity and rigour of the Platonic political idea. In a perfect state all should be in common to all,—joy and sorrow, even eyes and ears and hands. All men shall have scope only as universal men. For the realization of this perfect unity and universality, there must be the disappearance of all individuality and particularity. Private property and domestic life (in place of which a community of goods and women appears), education and instruction, the choice of professional and other avocations, even all the remaining activities of the individual in art and science—all this must be sacrificed to the end of the state, and intrusted to the guidance and control of the presiding authorities. The individual must be contented to claim only that good which belongs to him as a component particle of the state. The Platonic construction of the ideal state descends, therefore, even to the minutest details. The two formative means of the higher ranks, gymnastics and music, the study of mathematics and philosophy, the selection of musical instruments and metre of verse, the bodily exercises and the military service of the female sex, the arrangement of marriages, the age at which any one may study dialectics, or contract wedlock, or beget or bear children—on all these matters Plato has given the exactest prescripts and instructions. The state is for him only a huge educational establishment, a single family on the great



scale. Even lyrical poetry Plato will have practised only under the supervision of judges. Epic and dramatic poetry (nay Homer and Hesiod themselves!) shall be banished from the state, the one because it excites and misleads the mind, the other because it propagates debasing representations of the gods. With like rigorism the Platonic state proceeds against physical defects: feeble children, or children born imperfect, are to be cast out; the sick are not to be tended and nourished. We find here the main antithesis of the ancient states *by nature* to the modern states *by law*. Plato recognised not the knowledge, will, and purpose of the individual, and yet the individual has a right to demand this. To reconcile the two sides—the general end and the individual end—to combine with the greatest possible omnipotence of the state the greatest possible freedom of the conscious individual will, this was the problem reserved for the modern state.

The political institutions of the Platonic state are decidedly aristocratic. Grown up in aversion to the extravagances of the Athenian democracy, Plato prefers an unlimited monarchy to all other constitutions, but still only such a one as shall have for its head a consummate ruler, a perfected philosopher. The saying of Plato is familiar, that only when philosophers shall become rulers, or when those who are at present rulers shall philosophize fully and truly, and shall unite political power and philosophy together, will it be possible to elevate the state to its true purpose (v. 473). That there should only be one ruler, this appears to him just, because there are so few men possessed of political wisdom. In his *Laws*, Plato renounces this ideal of a perfect ruler, who as a living law shall have power to govern the state according to his own unrestrained authority, and prefers as the best, those mixed constitutions which combine in themselves both something of monarchy and something of democracy. It is the aristocratic tendency of the Platonic political ideal which gives rise further to the sharp distinction of the various classes, and the entire exclusion of the third from any share in political life proper. Psychologically, Plato in strictness has only a bipartition into the senses and the intellect, into mortal and immortal; politically also he has only a similar division into the government and its subjects. This distinction is proclaimed the necessary condition of every state; but, in analogy with the

psychological middle term of the heart, there is intercalated, between the ruling class and the working class, the middle term of the fighting class. We have thus three classes, that of the rulers, correspondent to reason, that of the warriors correspondent to heart, and that of the workers correspondent to appetite. To these three classes belong three several functions: to the first the function of legislation, of acting and consulting for the universal; to the second the function of defending the common weal against enemies from without; to the third the function of providing for the material singular, for the daily want, as in agriculture, the raising of cattle, and the building of houses. Through each of the three classes and its functions there accrues to the state a special virtue: through the class of rulers wisdom, through the class of warders or warriors courage, through the class of workers temperance, which, as securing obedience to the rulers, is peculiarly the virtue of this last class. From the due union of these three virtues in the general life of the state, there arises justice, a virtue, consequently, which represents the systematic articulation of the totality, the organic distribution of the whole into its moments. With the lowest class, that of manual labourers, Plato occupies himself the least; for the state it is only an instrument. Even legislation and the administration of justice in reference to the labouring mass of the people, he holds for inessential. The distance between rulers and warders is less marked; Plato rather, as if reason were but the highest development of courage, allows, in analogy with the fundamental psychological bipartition, the two classes to pass over into each other, in appointing that the oldest and best of the warders shall be selected for rulers. The education of the warders, therefore, shall be carefully planned and administered by the state, in order that with them the principle of courage, without forfeiting the energy peculiar to it, may be imbued with reason. The most virtuous, and dialectically the most accomplished among the warders, are, immediately on completion of their thirtieth year, to be taken apart, tried, and ordered to the discharge of offices. When in these they have again approved themselves, they are in their fiftieth year to be raised to the highest rank, and to be held bound in duty, if they have realized the idea of the good, to substantiate that exemplar in the state, yet so that each,



only when his turn comes, shall undertake the control of the state, but shall devote to philosophy the rest of his time. By means of these dispositions the state shall be exalted into an unconditional sovereignty of reason under guidance of the idea of the good.

7. Retrospect.—With Plato, Greek philosophy has attained to the culminating point of its development. The Platonic system is the first complete scientific construction of the entire natural and spiritual universe under guidance of a philosophical principle; it is the first type and pattern of all higher speculation, of all metaphysical as well as of all ethical idealism. Reared on the simple foundation of Socrates, the idea of philosophy has here for the first time gained an all-embracing realization. The spirit of philosophy has, indeed, raised itself here into full consciousness of itself, a consciousness which first awoke in Socrates only as a dim and uncertain instinct. The eagle flight of the genius of Plato required to add itself before there could be unfolded into full reality that for which Socrates had been able only to clear the way. At the same time, nevertheless, with Plato, philosophy exhibited an idealistic antithesis to the given actuality, an antithesis which, lying more in the character of its originator and in his relation to the time, than in the nature of the Greek spirit, demanded the supplement of a more realistic theory of things. This was supplied by Aristotle.

## XV.—*The Older Academy.*

In the older academy the spirit that prevailed was not one of invention. With the exception of a few attempts at continuation, we find only standstill, and a gradual retrogression of the Platonic philosophizing. After the death of Plato, Speusippus, his nephew, taught in the academy for the period of eight years; Xenocrates succeeded him; and Polemon, Crates, and Crantor followed. We find ourselves in a time now in which express educational institutions for higher culture are established, and the earlier teacher transfers the succession to the later. The older academy, so far as can be gathered from the scanty records, was characterized in general by a predominance of the tendency to erudition, by the increase of Pythagorean elements,—particularly as regards

the Pythagorean number-theory, with which were connected the high estimation of the mathematical sciences (especially arithmetic and astronomy), and the regression of the ideal theory,—and finally by the coming into vogue of fantastic demonological conceptions, in which worship of the stars played a principal part. At a later period efforts were made to return again to the unsophisticated doctrine of Plato. Crantor is named as the first expounder of the Platonic writings.

As Plato was the only true disciple of Socrates, so in turn the only true disciple of Plato was, though by his fellows accused of infidelity, *Aristotle*.

To him we pass at once for the demonstration, as well of his true relation to Plato, as of his advance beyond Plato, and *within* Plato's own philosophy. (Compare XVI. 3, *c. aa.*)

## XVI.—*Aristotle.*

LIFE AND WRITINGS OF ARISTOTLE.—Aristotle was born at Stagira, a Greek colony in Thrace, in the year 384 B.C. Nicomachus, his father, was the physician and friend of Amyntas, king of Macedonia. The former relation may have influenced the scientific pursuits of the son; the latter his subsequent call to the Macedonian court. Early deprived of his parents, he came in his seventeenth year to Athens; and here in Plato's society he remained twenty years. Of his personal relations to Plato there are several rumours, — some favourable, as that Plato, for his unceasing study, shall have called him the reader, and, comparing him with Xenocrates, shall have said, the latter requires the spur, the former the bridle,—some also unfavourable. Among the latter is the reproach of ingratitude to his master, and although the most of the anecdotes in this connexion deserve little credit,—especially as we find Aristotle on friendly terms with Xenocrates, even after the death of Plato,—yet the *author* Aristotle cannot be altogether acquitted of a certain unscrupulousness towards Plato and the philosophy of Plato, which is still capable, perhaps, of a certain *psychological* explanation (through indication, that is, of human motive). Aristotle, after the death of Plato, went with Xenocrates to the court of Hermeias, prince of Atarneus in Mysia, whose sister or niece Pythias he took to wife, when



Hermeias fell beneath the perfidy of the Persians. After the death of Pythias he married Herpyllis, by whom he had his son Nicomachus. In the year 343, he was appointed by Philip, king of Macedon, to superintend the education of his son Alexander, then thirteen years old. Father and son honoured him highly, and the latter subsequently assisted his studies with royal munificence. When Alexander set out on the Persian expedition, Aristotle took up his abode in Athens, teaching in the Lyceum, the only gymnasium left open for him; for the Academy and the Cynosarges were already occupied, the one by Xenocrates and the other by the Cynics. His school derived its name, Peripatetic, from the shady walks (*περίπατοι*) of the Lyceum, in which Aristotle was accustomed to walk about as he philosophized. He is said to have lectured in the morning to his more advanced disciples on abstruser science (*acroamatic* investigation), and in the evening to a larger audience on the disciplines which concern a more general education (*exoteric* discourses). After the death of Alexander, with whom latterly he had fallen out of favour, being accused (probably from political motives) of blasphemy by the Athenians, he left their city, where he had taught for thirteen years, in order, as he expressed it, that they might not sin a second time against philosophy. He died in the year 322 at Chalcis in Eubœa.

Aristotle left behind him an unusual multitude of writings, of which the fewer number (a sixth perhaps), but incomparably the more valuable, have come down to us: in such a state, nevertheless, as leaves room for many doubts and difficulties. The account given by Strabo, it is true, of the fate of the Aristotelian writings, and of the damages received by them in the cellar at Scepsis in Troas, has been proved a fable, or at least to be limited to the original manuscripts: but the fragmentary, sketch-like appearance of several of them, and these the most important, as the *Metaphysics*, the repeated revision and reconstruction of the same treatise, as the *Ethics*, the disorder and striking repetitions in single works, the distinction made by Aristotle himself between writings acroamatic and writings exoteric,—all this leads to the conjecture that we have before us for the most part but redactions of oral discourses at the hands of pupils.

2. GENERAL CHARACTER AND CLASSIFICATION OF THE

ARISTOTELIAN PHILOSOPHY.—With Aristotle, philosophy, which in Plato's hands remained popular both in form and matter, becomes universal, freed from its Hellenic specialty. The Platonic dialogue is metamorphosed into dry prose. In the place of poetic drapery and myths we have a cold fixed technical dialect; the faculty which in Plato was intuitive is in Aristotle discursive; the direct vision through reason of the one is replaced in the other by reflection and logic. Turning from the Platonic unity of being, Aristotle prefers to direct his regards to the variety of the world; he seeks the idea only in its concrete realization, and seizes the individual fact in its characteristic quality and differences, rather than in its relation to the idea. He receives with equal interest the fact of nature, or of history, or of the soul of man. But he proceeds always by reference to what is individual; he requires always a *datum*, on occasion of which to unfold his thoughts; it is always what is empirical and matter-of-fact that solicits his speculation and leads it forward. His whole philosophy is a description of the given and empirical, and only because it takes this up in its totality, takes up its synthesis, only because it carries the induction completely out, does it deserve the name of a philosophy. Only as the absolute empiricist is it that Aristotle is the true philosopher.

This character of the Aristotelian philosophy explains in the first place its encyclopædic tendency, inasmuch as all the facts of experience have, as such, equal claims on observation. Hence Aristotle is the founder of several sciences unknown before him: he is not only the founder of logic, but the founder also of natural history, of empirical psychology, and of the theory of morals.

The love of facts in Aristotle explains further his predominating inclination for physics; for nature is what is most a fact, what is most undeniably *there*. It coheres with this, too, that Aristotle is the first philosopher, who (in his own way) deigned to bestow on history any exact attention. The first book of the *Metaphysics* is the first attempt at a history of philosophy, just as his *Politics* are the first critical history of the various forms and constitutions of the state. As through criticism of his predecessors in the one, so through criticism of the pre-existent constitutions in the other, does he lay the ground for his own theory, which he desires to appear always only as the consequence of historical fact.



It is clear from this that likewise the method of Aristotle must be different from that of Plato. He proceeds, not synthetically and dialectically like the latter, but almost exclusively analytically and regressively, that is to say, passing ever backwards from what is concrete to its ultimate grounds and principles. If Plato took his stand on the idea, in order from that position to elucidate and explain the *data* of experience, Aristotle, on the contrary, takes his stand on these *data* in order to discover in them and demonstrate in them the idea. His method, therefore, is induction, that is, the derivation of general inferences and results from a sum of given facts and phenomena, while his exposition is the usual *raisonnement*, a dispassionate estimate of facts, phenomena, circumstances, and possibilities. He bears himself mostly only as a thoughtful observer. Renouncing any expectation of universality and necessity in his conclusions, he is contented to have established an approximate truth, and satisfied to have reached the greatest possible probability. He frequently declares, that science relates not merely to the immutable and necessary, but also to what *generally* happens: beyond its province, he says, there is only the contingent. Philosophy has consequently for him the character and the value of a calculation of probabilities, and his mode of exposition assumes not unfrequently only the form of a dubious counting up. Hence no trace of the Platonic ideals. Hence his dislike to imaginative flights and poetic figures in philosophy, a dislike which on one hand led him, indeed, to a fixed philosophical terminology, but was the occasion, on the other, of a frequent misinterpretation of those who had preceded him. Hence, too, in the sphere of action his invariable submission to the existent fact.

With the empirical character of Aristotle's philosophizing, there coheres finally the disjointed nature of his writings, their want of any systematic classification and division. Always advancing from particular fact to particular fact, he takes each region of reality by itself, and makes it the object of a special treatise; but he omits for the most part to demonstrate the threads by which the parts might mutually cohere and clasp together into the whole of a system. He obtains thus a plurality of co-ordinated sciences, each of which has its independent foundation, but no highest science which should comprehend all. A leading and con-

necting thought is doubtless present; all his writings follow the idea of a whole; but in the exposition systematic arrangement fails so much, each of his works is so much an independent monograph, that we are often perplexed by the question, What did Aristotle himself consider a part of philosophy and what not? Nowhere does he supply either scheme or skeleton, seldom any concluding results or general summaries; even the various classifications which he proposes for philosophy differ very much the one from the other. Sometimes he distinguishes practical and theoretical science, sometimes he places with these a third science, named of artistic production, and sometimes he speaks of three parts, ethics, physics, and logic. Theoretical philosophy itself, again, he divides at one time into logic and physics, and at another into theology, mathematics, and physics. None of these classifications, however, has he expressly adopted in the exposition of his system; he sets in general no value on them, he even openly declares his aversion to the method by divisions at all, and it is only from considerations of expediency that *we*, in expounding his philosophy, adopt the Platonic trichotomy.

3. Logic and Metaphysics.—(*a.*) *Notion and relation of both.*—The name Metaphysics is a creation of the Aristotelian commentators. Plato's word for it was Dialectics, and Aristotle uses instead of it the phrase 'first (fundamental) philosophy,' while physics in a like connexion are for him 'second philosophy.' The relation of this first philosophy to the other sciences is defined by Aristotle as follows. Every science, he says, selects for investigation a special sphere, a particular species of being, but none of them applies itself to the notion of being as such. There is a science necessary, therefore, which shall make an object of inquiry on its own account, of that which the other sciences accept from experience, and, as it were, hypothetically. This is the office of the first philosophy, which occupies itself, therefore, with being as being, whereas the other sciences have to do with special concrete being. Metaphysics constituting, then, as this science of being and its elementary grounds, a presupposition for the other disciplines, are, naturally, *first* philosophy. If there were, namely, says Aristotle, only physical beings, physics would be the first and only philosophy; but if there is an immaterial and unmoved essence, which is the ground of all being, there must be also



an earlier, and, as earlier, universal philosophy. This first ground now of all being is God, and for that reason Aristotle sometimes also calls his first philosophy theology.

It is difficult to define the relation between this first philosophy as the science of ultimate grounds, and that science which, usually named the logic of Aristotle, is found to receive its exposition in the writings included together under the title of *Organon*. Aristotle has not himself precisely determined the relations of these sciences, though, perhaps, it is the incomplete state of the *Metaphysics* that is partly to blame here. As, however, he includes both sciences under the name logic; as he expressly calls the investigation of the essence of things (vii. 17), and of the theory of ideas (xiii. 5), logical investigation; as he seeks to establish at full in the *Metaphysics* (iv.) the logical principle of contradiction as the absolute presupposition (condition) of all thinking, speaking, and philosophizing; as he appropriates the inquiry into the process of proof to the same science which has also to inquire into essence (iii. 2, iv. 3); as he discusses the categories (to which he had previously devoted a special book incorporated with the *Organon*) over again in the *Metaphysics* (v.),—this much at all events may be maintained with safety, that the inquiries of the *Organon* were not for him directly divided from those of the *Metaphysics*, and that the usual separation of formal logic and of metaphysics had not a place in his mind, although he has omitted any attempt to bring them closer.

(*b.*) *Logic.*—The business of logic, natural or scientific, as faculty or as art, is to be able to prove through syllogisms, to form syllogisms, and to pronounce on syllogisms; but syllogisms consist of propositions, and propositions of notions. It is in accordance, then, with these points of view, which belong naturally to the position, that Aristotle, in the various books of the *Organon*, discusses the details of logic and dialectics. The first essay in the *Organon* is 'The Categories,' an essay which, by treating the various notions proper, the universal predicates of being, constitutes the first attempt at an ontology. Aristotle enumerates ten of these—substance, quantity, quality, relation, where, when, position, possession, action, passion. The second essay treats of language as expression of thought ('*De Interpretatione*'), and discusses the various parts of discourse, as propositions and sentences. The third treatise consists of the 'Analytic Books,' which show how conclusions may

be referred to their principles, and arranged according to their premises. The first (prior) Analytics contain in two books the general theory of the syllogism. Syllogisms, again, are in matter and purpose either apodictic, possessed of certain and rigorously demonstrable truth, or dialectic, directed to what is probable and disputable, or, lastly sophistic, intended to deceive by a false show of correctness. Apodictic arguments, and consequently proof in general, are treated in the two books of the second (posterior, last) Analytics, dialectic in the eight books of the Topics, and sophistic in the essay on 'The Sophistical *Elenchi*.'

Further details of the Aristotelian logic are,—through the usual formal exposition of this science, for which Aristotle has furnished almost the entire material (hence Kant was able to say that logic, since Aristotle, had not made any step forwards nor any backwards),—known to everybody. Present formal logic is in advance of Aristotle only in two respects: first in adding to the categorical syllogism, which Aristotle alone contemplated, the hypothetical and disjunctive ones; and, second, in supplementing the three first figures by the fourth. But the defect of the Aristotelian logic, which was excusable in its founder,—its wholly empirical procedure, namely,—has not only been retained by the present formal logic, but has been even raised into a principle through the un-Aristotelian antithesis of the forms thinking, and the matter thought. Aristotle's object, properly, was only to collect the logical facts in reference to the formation of propositions and the process of syllogisms; and he has supplied in his logic only a natural history of finite thought. However much, then, this attaining to a consciousness of the logical operations of the understanding, this abstracting from the materiality of ordinary thought, is to be valued, the striking want in it of all scientific foundation and derivation must at the same time be recognised. The ten categories, for example, though discussed, as observed, in a special work, are simply enumerated without any assignment of a principle, whether of foundation or of classification. It is for him only a fact that there are so many categories, nay, they are even differently stated in different works. In the same way, the syllogistic figures are taken up only empirically; he regards them as only modes and relations of formal thought, and persists in this position within the logic of the understanding simply, though he declares



the syllogism to be the single form of science. Neither in his *Metaphysics* nor in his *Physics*, does he apply the formal syllogistic rules which he develops in the *Organon*: a clear proof that he has duly wrought into his system neither the theory of the categories, nor his analytic in general. In short, his logical inquiries enter not into the development of his philosophical thoughts, but have for the most part only the value of a preliminary linguistic investigation.

(c.) *Metaphysics.*—Of all the writings of Aristotle, the *Metaphysics* present the least the appearance of a connected whole, but rather that of a collection of sketches, which follow indeed a certain main idea, but fail in inner union and complete development. Seven chief groups may be distinguished here—(1.) A criticism of the previous philosophical systems from the point of view of the four Aristotelian principles (Book I.); (2.) A statement of the aporias or philosophical preliminary questions (III.); (3.) The principle of contradiction (IV.); (4.) The definitions (V.); (5.) A discussion of the notion of substance (οὐσία), and of logical essence (the τί ἦν εἶναι), or of the notions matter (ὕλη), form (εἶδος), and of the composite thing (σύνολον) that is formed of both (VII., VIII.); (6.) Potentiality and actuality (IX.); (7.) The divine spirit that, unmoved itself, moves all (XII.); (8.) To this there is added the polemic against the Platonic theory of ideas and numbers, which pervades the entire *Metaphysics*, but which is more particularly the business of Books XIII. and XIV.

(*aa.*) *The Aristotelian criticism of the Platonic Ideal Theory.*—It is in Aristotle's opposition to the Platonic ideal theory that the specific difference of the two systems is to be sought. Aristotle, indeed, returns, on every opportunity that presents itself (especially *Meta.* I. and XIII.), to this his antithesis to the Academics. Plato had conceived the idea (or ideas) of all that is real, but the idea, if true, had still no movement for him; it was not yet wrought into life and the process of nature. It was thus rather itself finite, had the phenomenal world, however much against Plato's own will, opposed to it in independent being, and possessed not in its own self the principle of this being. Aristotle means this when he objects to Plato that his ideas are only 'things of sense immortalized and eternalized,' and that they are incompetent to explain the being and becoming of nature. In

order to escape these consequences he himself attributes to mind an original connexion with the outward phenomena; he characterizes the relation of the two as that of the actual to the possible, of form to matter, he conceives thought as the absolute reality of matter; matter as thought *in itself* (potential). His objections to the Platonic theory, Aristotle reasons out in the following manner:—

Leaving out of view that Plato had led no competent proof of the objective reality of the ideas, in independence of the things of sense, and that his theory is unverified, this theory is, in the first place, completely sterile, as it offers no explanatory reason of existence. The ideas are devoid of any special independent matter of contents. We need only remember how they originate. In order to save the possibility of science, Plato had attempted to set up certain substances, independent of sense, uncoloured by its stream. But for this purpose, nothing else offered itself to him than the individual units beside him, the things of sense. He assumed these, therefore, but in a universalized form as ideas. And thus it happens that his ideas are so little different from the actual units of sense that participate in them. The ideal duality and the empirical duality have one and the same import. We may easily convince ourselves of this by challenging the adherents of the ideas to say definitely what their imperishable substances specially are *beside* the things of sense which participate in them. The entire distinction between them is limited to an *in itself* which attaches to the latter: instead of a man, a horse, we have a man *in himself*, a horse *in itself*. Only on this formal alteration does the ideal theory rest: the finite import (constitution of the object) remains, it is only *expressed* as an eternal one. This objection, that in the ideal theory the sensuous is in strictness only assumed as unsensuous and distinguished with the predicate of immutability, is, as already remarked, understood by Aristotle in this way, that he calls the ideas, 'eternalized things of sense,' not as if they were actually something sensuous, something in space, but because the sensuous individual is in them immediately enunciated as a universal. He compares them in this connexion to the gods of the anthropomorphistic popular religion. As these are nothing else than deified men, so those



are nothing else than potentiated things of nature, what is sensuous exalted into what is not sensuous. It is this 'synonymousness' of the ideas and the correspondent things of sense, which gives to the assumption of the ideas the appearance of a superfluous and cumbersome duplication of the objects that are to be explained. Why should we take the same thing twice? Why, besides the two and the three of sense, assume a two and three in the idea? Aristotle intimates, therefore, that the adherents of the ideal theory, in supposing an idea for every class of things in nature, and in bringing forward, by means of this theory, a double series of sensuous and unsensuous substances under one and the same name, appear to him like men who should be of opinion that it is not equally easy to count with few numbers and with many, and should accordingly increase their numbers before proceeding to calculations in hand. Or, to take it once again, the ideal theory is a tautology, and as an explanation of natural existence wholly fruitless. 'Towards knowledge of the individual things that participate in the idea, these ideas themselves give no assistance, since, indeed, they (ideas) are not immanent in them, but sundered from them.' Equally barren the ideas are seen to be when considered in relation to the origination and dissolution of the things of sense. They possess not any principle of the genesis of this movement. There is no causality in them either to produce change or to explain its actual existence. In themselves immobile and without process, they could bring about, did any influence at all belong to them, no result but a complete standstill. According to the *Phædo*, indeed, the ideas are causes of being as well as of becoming, but, despite the ideas, nothing *becomes* without a moving force, and, in their separation from the subject of the becoming, the ideas are none such. This indifference of the ideas to the process of actuality, their unyielding remoteness, is, under application of the categories potentiality and actuality, further described by Aristotle as the mere potentiality, possibility, virtuality which belongs to them in contrast to the actuality which fails them. The inner contradiction of the ideal theory is briefly this, that it enunciates an individual directly as a universal, and, conversely, the universal, the genus as what is at the same time numerically individual, or that it expresses the idea, on the one hand, as a separate specific individual,

and, on the other hand, as participant, and consequently as universal (generic). Although, then, the ideas are originally generic notions, universals, originating in the demonstration and fixation of the one in the many, of the permanent in the mutable, of the veritably beënt in the phenomenally existent, still, being at the same time, according to the Platonic assumption, separate substances, they are quite incapable of definition. That is, neither definition nor derivation is possible of anything that is absolutely singular, a wholly peculiar individual unit; and the reason is that words—and only through words is definition possible—are by very nature universal and applicable to a variety of objects, and, consequently, that all predicates by which I may attempt to assign the determination of any particular object, are, for this specific object, not specific, and cannot be specific. The supporters of the ideal theory, then, are not in a position logically to determine any idea; their ideas are indefinable. Plato has left in complete obscurity the relation in general of things to the ideas. He terms the ideas archetypes, and supposes things to participate in them; but such expressions are only hollow poetical metaphors. How are we to conceive this 'participation' in, this copying of, these patterns thus remote, absent in an alien region? It is in vain to seek in Plato any definite explanation here. It is wholly unintelligible how and why matter comes to participate in the ideas. To explain it at all, recourse must be had, in addition to the ideas, to another and a higher principle, which should hold in it the cause of this 'participation' of things, for without any principle of movement it is impossible to get to understand the 'participation.' In every case there must be assumed, in addition to the idea (of man, for example), and in addition to the sensuous manifestation (a certain individual man, say), and as common to both, a *tertium*, a *third*, in which both should be united; that is to say, as Aristotle usually couches this objection, the ideal theory involves the supposition of a 'third man.' The immanence of the universal in the singular, this is the result of the Aristotelian critique of the ideas. However sound it was in Socrates to insist on the discovery of the universal as the true soul of the individual, and on the consequent assignment of the logical definition (for without the universal no science is possible), the Platonic theory that would transform these



generic notions into real, individual substances, existing independently and by themselves, is quite unsound. A universal, a genus, a species, is not a thing that exists alongside of, or apart from, the singular, the individual. A thing and its notion cannot be separated from each other. With all these conclusions, Aristotle, nevertheless, is so little opposed to the principle of Plato (namely that the universal is alone the veritably beënt, the truth of individual things), that he has rather only relieved it of its accompanying abstraction, and more deeply reconciled it with the world of sense. Despite all apparent antagonism to his master, his main proposition is the same as Plato's, namely that the true nature of a thing (τὸ τί ἐστιν, τὸ τί ἦν εἶναι) is known and shown only in the notion. But still for him the universal, the notion, must be as little separated from the particular exemplification of it in sense, as form from matter; and essence or substance (οὐσία) in its strictest sense is for him only that which is not predicated of anything else, but of which all else is predicated—whatever, namely, is a *this* thing (τόδε τι), an individual thing, a special unit, not a universal.

(*bb.*) *The four Aristotelian principles or causes, and the relation of form and matter.*—From the critique of the Platonic ideas, there directly result the two main characteristics of the Aristotelian system, and which together constitute its cardinal point; they are form (εἶδος) and matter (ὕλη). Aristotle, for the most part, it is true, when he aims at completeness, enumerates four metaphysical principles or causes,—the formal, the material, the efficient, and the final. In the case of a house, for example, the building materials are the matter, the idea of it the form, the efficient cause the builder, and the actual house the end (final cause). These four principles of all being, however, will be found on closer inspection to reduce themselves to the single antithesis of matter and form. In the first place, the notion of the efficient cause coincides with that of the two other ideal principles (form and end). The efficient cause, namely, is what conducts the transition of potentiality into actuality (entelechie), or the realization of matter into form. In all movement, however, of an unactual into an actual, the latter is the logical (notional) *prius*, and the logical (or notional) motive of the movement itself. The efficient cause of matter is consequently the form. Thus man is the efficient cause of man; the form of the statue in

the understanding (artistic phantasy) of the sculptor is the cause of the movement through which the statue comes into being; health in the mind of the physician precedes the process of cure. In a certain way, therefore, health is the medical art, and the form of a house architectural art. But the efficient, or first cause, is equally identical with the final cause or end, for this (the end) is the motive of all becoming and of all movement. The builder is the efficient cause of the house, but the efficient cause of the builder is the end to be accomplished, the house. In these examples it is already evident that the principles of form and end also coincide, so far as both are conjoined in the notion of actuality (ἐνέργεια). For the end of everything is its completed being, its notion, or its form, the development into full actuality of whatever is potentially contained in it. The final cause of the hand is its notion; that of the seed the tree, which is the true nature of the seed. There remain to us, therefore, only the two principles, which pass not into each other, matter and form.

*Matter* is, for Aristotle, conceived in its abstraction from form, as what is without predicate, determination, distinction; what is permanent subject in all becoming, and assumes the most contradictory forms; what however in its own being is different from everything that is become, and has in itself no definite form whatever; what then is everything in possibility, but nothing in actuality. As the wood the bench, and the brass the statue, so there underlies every determinate a *materia prima*, a first matter. Aristotle takes credit to himself for having resolved with this notion of matter the much-vexed question of how anything can originate, inasmuch as what is can neither originate from what is, nor from what is not. For not from what directly is not, but only from what in actuality is not, that is to say, only from what potentially is, can anything originate. Possible (potential) being is as little non-being as it is actuality. Every existing thing of nature is therefore a possibility that has attained to actuality. Matter is to Aristotle, accordingly, a much more positive substrate than to Plato, who pronounced it the absolutely non-beëint. This explains how Aristotle could conceive matter, in contradistinction to form, as a positive negative, as a counterpart to form, and designate it as positive negation (στέρησις).



As matter with potentiality, so *form* coincides with actuality. It is that which converts undistinguished, indeterminate matter into a definite, a *this* (τόδε τι), an actual; it is the specific virtue, the completed activity, the soul of everything. What Aristotle calls form, then, is not to be confounded with what is to us perhaps *façon*. An amputated hand, for example, has still the external shape of a hand, but to Aristotle it is only a hand in matter, not in form; an actual hand, a hand in form, is only what can fulfil the special function of a hand. Pure form is what, without matter, in truth *is* (τὸ τί ἦν εἶναι), or the notion of true being, the pure notion. Such pure form exists not, however, in the kingdom of definite being: every given being, every individual substance (οὐσία), everything that is a *this*, is a compound rather of matter and form, a σύνολον. Matter, then, it is that prevents the existent from being pure form, pure notion; it is the ground of the becoming of plurality, multiplicity, and contingency; it is at the same time what prescribes to science its limit. For an individual thing cannot be known in proportion as it contains matter. From this it follows, however, that the antithesis between matter and form is a fluent one. What in one reference is matter, is in another form. Wood in relation to the finished house is matter, in relation to the growing tree, form; the soul in relation to the body is form, in relation to reason, which is the form of the form (εἶδος εἰδους), it is matter. In this way, the totality of existence must constitute a graduated scale, of which the lowest degree will be a first matter (πρώτη ὕλη) entirely without form, and the highest a last form entirely without matter (pure form—the absolute, divine spirit). What finds itself between these extremes will be in the one direction matter, in the other form, which amounts to a continual self-translation of the former into the latter. This (the foundation of the Aristotelian theory of nature) is the conception,—first come upon in the analytic method of observing nature,—that all nature is an eternal graduated conversion of matter into form, an eternal breaking out into life, on the part of this inexhaustible primeval substrate, in higher and higher ideal formations. That all matter should become form, all possibility actuality, all being knowing, this is, indeed, at once the impracticable postulate of reason and the aim of all becoming—impracticable, since Aristotle expressly maintains that matter, as privation of form, as στέρησις,

can never wholly attain to actuality, nor consequently to understanding. So, then, the Aristotelian system ends also in an insurmountable dualism of matter and form.

(*cc*). *Potentiality and Actuality* (δύναμις and ἐνέργεια).—The relation of matter to form has, logically taken, manifested itself as the relation of potentiality to actuality. Aristotle first invented these terms (in their philosophical sense), and they are what is most characteristic of his system. In the movement of potential being into actual being we have the explicit notion of becoming, as in the four principles generally an explication of this notion into its moments. The Aristotelian system, consequently, is one of becoming; and thus in him (as in Plato the principle of the Eleatics), there returns, but in richer and concreter form, the principle of Heraclitus. Aristotle, then, has made an important step here towards subjugation of the Platonic dualism. If, as possibility of form, matter is reason in process of becoming, then the antithesis between idea and world of sense is at least in principle or potentially surmounted, so far as it is one single being, but only on different stages, that exhibits itself in both, in matter as well as in form. The relation of the potential to the actual, Aristotle illustrates by the relation of the raw material to the finished article, of the proprietor to the builder, of the sleeper to the waker. The seed is the tree potentially, the tree the seed actually; a potential philosopher is the philosopher not philosophizing; the better general is potentially the conqueror even before the battle; space potentially is divisible *ad infinitum:* in general that is potential, whatever possesses a principle of movement, development, change; whatever, unhindered from without, will through its own self be. Actuality or entelechie, again, applies to the accomplished act, the attained goal, the consummated reality (the mature tree, *e.g.*, is the entelechie of the seed), that actuosity in which the action and its completion coincide, as to think, to see (he thinks and he has thought, he sees and he has seen, are identical); whereas in acts which involve a becoming, as to learn, to go, to get well, the two (the act and its completion) are divided. In this conception of the form (or idea) as actuality or entelechie,—in its connexion, that is, with the movement of becoming,—there lies the chief distinction between the system of Aristotle and the system of Plato. To Plato the idea is stable, self-subsistent being, the opposite of



motion and becoming; to Aristotle it is the eternal product of becoming, eternal energy, activity in completed actuality, the goal that is in every instant attained by the movement of the *in-itself* (potentiality) to the *for-itself* (actuality), not a fabricated and finished being, but such as is eternally being produced.

(*dd.*) *The absolute, divine spirit.*—Aristotle has attempted, from various points of view, but especially in connexion with the relation of potentiality and actuality, to determine the idea of the absolute spirit, or as he also names it, the first mover. (*a.*) *The cosmological form.*—The actual is always earlier than the potential, not only in its notion—for I can affirm power only in connexion with its activity—but also in time, for the potential becomes actual only through an actuating something (the uneducated becomes educated through the educated): this leads to the inference of a first mover, who is pure actuosity. Or, motion, becoming, a causal series, is only possible, if a principle of motion, a mover, pre-exists; this principle of motion, however, must be such that its very nature is actuality, since what only potentially exists may quite as well not pass into actuality, and not be, therefore, a principle of movement. All becoming postulates, consequently, an eternal, unbecome Being, who, himself unmoved, is principle of movement, the first mover. (*b.*) *Ontological form.*—Even from the very notion of potentiality it results that the eternal and necessarily existent Being cannot be merely potential. For what potentially is, may as well not be as be; but what possibly is not, is perishable. What, therefore, is absolutely imperishable is not potential, but actual. Or, were potentiality the first, there might possibly exist nothing at all, which contradicts the notion of the absolute, to be that which cannot not be. (*c.*) *Moral form.*—Potentiality is always the possibility of the opposite. Who has the power to be well has also the power to be ill: in actuality, again, no one is at once well and ill. Consequently actuality is better than potentiality, and the former alone accrues to the Eternal. (*d.*) So far as the relation of potentiality and actuality is identical with that of matter and form, these arguments for the existence of a Being who is pure actuality, may be put in this shape also:—The supposition of an absolutely formless matter (πρώτη ὕλη) postulates that of an absolutely matterless form (πρῶτον εἶδος) at the other extreme. And since the

notion of form divides into the three fundamental distinctions of the efficient, the notional, and the final cause, the eternal Being is also, similarly, absolute efficient principle (first-mover, *πρῶτον κινοῦν*), absolute notion (purely intelligible, pure *τί ἦν εἶναι*), and absolute end (primitive good).

All other predicates of the prime mover or supreme principle result from these premises with rigorous necessity. He is one, since the ground of the plurality, the multiplicity of being, lies in matter, and he is unparticipant of matter. He is immovable and immutable, as otherwise he were not possibly the absolute mover, the cause of all process. As actuose self-end, as entelechie, he is life. As absolutely immaterial, and free from nature, he is at once intelligence and intelligible. He is active, that is, he is thinking intelligence, because he is in his very nature pure actuality. He is intelligence that thinks its own self, because the divine thought cannot have its actuality out of itself, and because, if he were the thought of another than himself, he could reach actuality only by a necessary commencement from potentiality. Hence Aristotle's famous definition of the absolute, that it is the thought of thought (*νόησις νοήσεως*), the personal unity of thinking and thought, of knowing and known, the absolute subject-object. *Meta.* xii. 7 contains a rehearsal of these attributes of the divine spirit, and an almost hymnic description of the ever-blessed God, who, in eternal peace, in eternal self-fruition, knows himself as the absolute truth, and is in want neither of action nor of virtue.

As appears from this statement, Aristotle, although led to it through many consequences of his system, and in many movements preparing for it, has not completely deduced the idea of his absolute spirit, and still less satisfactorily reconciled it with the conditioning bases and presuppositions of his philosophy. It makes its appearance in the twelfth book of the *Metaphysics* quite assertorically, nay unexpectedly, without the aid of any further induction. It suffers, too, under important difficulties. Why the ultimate ground of movement, which properly is all that his absolute spirit is, must be also thought as a personal being, it is impossible to see. It is impossible to see also how there can be something that is a moving cause and yet itself unmoved; a cause of all becoming, that is, of all origination and decease, and yet



itself permanent, self-identical energy; a principle of movement, and yet itself without potentiality: for what moves must at least stand in a relation of action and reaction with what is moved. On the whole, Aristotle has not, as already appears from these contradictions, with completeness and consistency established the relation between God and the world. Since indeed he characterizes the absolute spirit one-sidedly only as contemplative theoretical reason, and excludes from him, as the perfected end, all action (which were to presuppose an unperfected end), any right motive of activity in regard to the world fails. In his only theoretical relation, he is not even truly the first mover; extra-mundane and unmoved, as in essential nature he is, he enters not at all with his activity into the life of the world; and as on its side matter is never quite resolved into form, there manifests itself here too the unreconciled dualism between the divine spirit and the incognisable *in-itself* (potentiality) of matter. The objections which Aristotle makes to the god of Anaxagoras apply in part to his own.

4. The Aristotelian Physics.—The physics of Aristotle, taking up the largest part of his writings, continue the consideration of the rise of matter into form, of the graduated series which nature, a living being, describes in order to become an individual soul. All process, namely, has an end in view; an end, however, is form, and the absolute form is the spirit. It is with due consequence, then, that Aristotle recognises the end and centre of terrestrial nature in *the realized form*, man, and man-male. Everything sublunary else is, as it were, only nature's failure to produce a male man, a surplusage due to the inability of nature always to master matter and mould it into form. Whatever attains not to the universal end of nature must be regarded as defective, and is in strictness an exception or an abortion. Thus it even appears a false birth to Aristotle when the child resembles not the father; and the birth of a female child is for him only a smaller degree of falsity, which arises from this that the procreating man, as formative principle, possessed not strength enough. In comparison with man, Aristotle regards woman generally as something maimed, and the other animals he finds in a greater degree deficient. Did nature act with full consciousness, these imperfect and incompetent formations of nature, these failures, were inexplicable; but she is an artist that

works only on unconscious instinct, and completes not her work with clear perception or rational reflection.

(*a.*) In his physical books, Aristotle considers the universal conditions of all natural existence—*motion*, *space*, *time*. These physical principles he reduces, also, to the metaphysical principles of potentiality and actuality. Motion is defined, accordingly, as the action of what potentially is, and consequently as mediatrix between potential being and entirely realized actuality. Space is defined as the possibility of motion, and possesses the quality, therefore, of being—potentially, not actually,—divisible *ad infinitum*. Time, as the measure of motion, equally divisible *ad infinitum*, and numerically expressible, is the numbering of motion in reference to an earlier and a later. All three are infinite, but the infinite that displays itself in them is only potentially, not actually, a whole: it contains not, but is contained, which is misunderstood by those who are accustomed to extol the infinite as if it embraced all and contained all, because it possesses a certain similarity to a whole.

(*b.*) Aristotle derives from the notion of motion his theory of the *entire universe* as set out in his books *De Cœlo*. As uninterrupted, uniform, and self-complete, the circular is the most perfect motion. The world, then, as a whole, is conditioned by this motion; it is globe-shaped and self-contained. For the same reason, however,—namely, that the motion which returns into itself is better than any other,—that sphere in this globe-shaped universe is the better which is participant of the more perfect movement, and placed consequently in the periphery, while that is the worse which is disposed around the centre. The former is the heaven, the latter the earth, and between both there is also the sphere of the planets. Heaven, as seat of spheral movement and of imperishable order, is nearest to the first moving cause, and stands directly under its influence; it consists not of perishable matter, but of higher element, the ether; and in it the ancients sought the godhead, guided by a true tradition of vanished wisdom. Its parts, the stars, are impassive, changeless, and eternal beings; who, occupied for ever in untroubled employment, have received the better part; and are, though not capable of being clearly understood, certainly much more divine than man. Under the sphere of the fixed stars, comes the lower sphere of the planets, among which Aristotle enumerates,



besides the five usually acknowledged by the ancients, the sun and the moon. This sphere is less near in position to what is perfect. Unlike that of the fixed stars, it is moved, not to the right, but in an opposite direction, and in oblique courses. It, too, possesses its divine movers, who also are spiritual and immortal beings. Lastly, in the middle of the world there is the earth; the farthest removed from the prime mover, and the least participant of divinity consequently; the sphere—under influence of the planets, and especially of the sun—of a constant interchange of origin and decease, but exhibiting even in this infinite process, a copy of the eternity of heaven. There are thus assumed as necessary for the explanation of nature three species of beings, representing, at the same time, three degrees of perfection: an immaterial being, that, itself unmoved, imparts movement, namely, the absolute spirit or God; secondly, a being that moves and is moved—though not without matter—eternally, imperishably, in a constantly uniform circle, the super-terrestrial region of heaven; and lastly, in the lowest sphere, the perishable beings of earth, to which belongs only the passive *rôle* of receiving movement.

(*c.*) *Nature in the stricter sense*, as scene of elemental action, exhibits to us a progressive transition of the elements into plants, and of plants into animals. The lowest step is occupied by the inanimate things of nature, pure products of the intermixing elements, and possessing their entelechie consequently only in the particular relations of the combination of these elements; whilst their energy, on the other hand, expresses itself only in their tendency towards a position in the universe adapted to them, which gained, they there rest. Such mere external entelechie is not the property of animate existences; in them the motion by which they attain to actuality dwells inwardly as organizing principle, and continues as conservative activity to act in them, even after complete organization; in short, they possess soul, for soul is the entelechie of an organic body. Soul we find operative in plants only as force of conservation and nutrition; the plant has no other function or vocation than to nourish itself and propagate its kind. In animals, which also exhibit a graduated series according to the mode of their propagation, the soul appears as sensitive. Animals have senses, and

are capable of locomotion. The human soul, finally, is nutritive, sensitive, and cognitive.

(*d.*) *Man*, as goal of universal nature, is the central and combining ganglion of the various grades in which the life of nature exhibits itself. The classifying principle of animate nature in general, therefore, will be necessarily that also of the faculties of the soul. If nutrition (vegetation) fell to plants, sensation to animals, and locomotion to the higher animals, all three belong to the human soul. Of these the one preceding is always condition of necessity and presupposition in time to the one succeeding, and the soul itself is properly nothing else than the unification of these various functions of organic life into a single common designful activity, the designing unity or entelechie of the organic body. The soul is related to the body as form to matter; it is animating principle. Simply for this reason the soul cannot be thought without the body; neither can it exist by itself, and with the body it ceases to be. It is different, however, with the fourth power, with thought or reason (*νοῦς*), which constitutes what is specific in man. This is essentially different from the soul, it is no product of the lower faculties, it is not related to them as mere higher developmental stage, as soul to body perhaps, as end to instrument, as actuality to possibility, as form to matter; but, as pure intellectual principle, it requires not the intervention of any bodily organ, it stands not in connexion with the bodily functions, it is absolutely simple, immaterial, self-subsistent, it is what is divine in man; it comes, as being no result of lower processes, from elsewhere into the body, and is equally again separable from it. There certainly exists a connexion between thought and sensation; for the sensations, at first externally separated according to the various organs of sense, meet inwardly in a centre, a common sense, where they are transformed into images and conceptions, and further again into thoughts. And it might seem from this as if thought were only a result of sensation, as if the intelligence were only passively determined, nay, Aristotle himself distinguishes between an active and a passive (receptive) reason, which latter is only gradually developed into thinking cognition. (In place here is the proposition erroneously ascribed to Aristotle, *Nihil est in intellectu, quod non fuerit in sensu*, as well as the widely known, but much misunderstood, comparison of the soul to a *tabula rasa*. This latter means only that as the *tabula rasa* is a book potentially but not actually, so human reason is at first not actually but potentially cognitive; or thought possesses the universal notions within itself in principle, so far as it is capable of forming them, but not in actuality, not definitely developed.) But this passivity presupposes rather an activity; for if thought in its actuality, as cognition, *becomes* all forms, and consequently all things, it must *make itself* all that it becomes, and the passive reason has therefore an active one as moving principle behind it, by means of which it becomes that which in itself it is. This active reason is reason in its purity, which as such is independent of and unaffected by matter, and consequently even on the death of the body is unconcerned, and, as universal reason, continues eternal and immortal. Thus here, too, the Aristotelian dualism breaks out. Obviously, this active intelligence is related to the soul as God to nature; the sides stand in no essential mutual relation. As the divine spirit becomes not truly part of the universal life, neither does the human spirit become truly part of the life of the senses; though defined as immaterial and insusceptible of outer influence, as soul it is still to be supposed connected with matter; though pure, self-cognising form, it is still to be supposed different from the divine spirit, which has been similarly characterized; the deficiency of conciliation as well on the one side as the other, the human as well as the divine, is in these circumstances not to be mistaken.



5. ARISTOTLE'S ETHICS.—(*a.*) *Relation of the ethics to the physics.*—Led here, too, by his tendency to nature, Aristotle has united ethics more closely with physics than his two predecessors Socrates and Plato did. If Plato found it impossible to discourse of the good in the affairs of man without being obliged to introduce the idea of the good in itself, Aristotle, on the contrary, held that the good in itself, the idea of the good, was of no assistance towards a knowledge of the good that was practicable in actual life, the good for us. Only the latter, morality in the life of man, not the good on the great scale as in relation to the universe, was for him the object of ethics. Hence Aristotle prefers to consider the good in its relation to the actual constitution of man, as the aim appointed by nature herself; he conceives the moral element as flower, as etherealization, spiritualization of

the physical, rather than as something purely intellectual; virtue as normal development of natural instinct rather than as dependent on knowledge. That man is a political animal *by nature*, this for him is the premiss and the fundamental presupposition for any theory of the state. This conjunction of the ethical with the physical element explains the polemic of Aristotle against the Socratic notion of virtue. Socrates, looking for the foundation of morals in the action of intelligence as in superiority to sense, had set virtue and knowledge as one. But this, in the opinion of Aristotle, were to destroy the pathological moment that is planted by nature herself in every moral action. It is not reason that is the first principle of virtue, but the natural sensations, inclinations, and appetites of the soul, without which action were not to be thought. The provision of nature, the impulse which in the beginning instinctively seeks natural good, and to which moral insight is only subsequently added, this is the first; only from natural virtue does that of morality arise. Aristotle, for the same reason, also disputes the teachableness of virtue. It is not through cultivation of knowledge, according to him, but through exercise—exercise directing natural inclination and impulse to the good, accustoming them to the good, weaning them from the bad—that virtue is realized. We become virtuous through the practice of virtue, as through the practice of music and architecture we become musicians and architects. Virtue is no mere knowledge of the good, but confirmation in it, conviction, principle. But principle is only the result of usage to the good, and that requires again persistent exercise and perpetual discipline. Judgment is certainly necessary for knowledge of the good, and its application in detail; but it cannot produce a virtuous will; nay, it is rather conditioned by the latter, for a vicious will corrupts and misleads judgment. Man, then, is good through three things: through nature, through habit, and through reason. Aristotle is, in these respects, directly opposed to Socrates. Whilst the latter, viewing morality and nature as opposed, made moral action the result of rational insight; the former, holding both to be steps of development, makes rational insight in moral things a result of moral action.

(*b.*) *The summum bonum.*—All action has an end in view; but every end cannot be only again means to another end; there must be a last and highest end, there must be something to be striven to for its own sake, something that is good absolutely, something that is best. We are at least agreed on the name of this, which name is Happiness. But about the notion of happiness there is still question. If it is asked, What constitutes happiness?—the answer can only be, That must depend on the peculiar nature of man, and consist in a course of action which, flowing from this peculiar nature, exalts it into such perfect actuality as brings with it the feeling of entire satisfaction. But sensuous feeling is not what is peculiar to man, for this he shares with the lower animals; it is intelligence. The pleasure derived from the gratification of sense may constitute the bliss of the brute, then; but it is certainly not that which is essential to man. What is specially human is the exercise of reason rather. Man, by nature and intelligence, is formed for action, for rational action, for rational application of his natural powers and faculties. That is his destination and his happiness; to the active, action, the unobstructed, successfully continued exercise of that activity to which nature calls, is always highest and best. Happiness, therefore, is such a well-being as is also well-doing, and such a well-doing as yields, in unobstructed energy and natural activity, the highest satisfaction. Action and pleasure are inseparably united then, by a natural bond, and constitute in their union, if carried out throughout an entire life, happiness. Hence the Aristotelian definition of happiness, that it is a perfect activity in a perfect life.

But if from this description, Aristotle appears to have considered action in accordance with nature sufficient for happiness and sufficient for itself, he does not, at the same time, conceal from himself the dependence of happiness on competent means and other advantages, the possession of which is not necessarily within our power. He declares, indeed, that moderate means suffice, and that only unusually great misfortunes are worth regarding, but he holds at the same time that riches, friends, children, noble birth, personal beauty, etc., are more or less necessary conditions of happiness, which, then, depends in part on contingencies. This moment of the Aristotelian theory has its foundation naturally in his empirical tendencies. Carefully pondering every consideration which universal experience appears to furnish, he pronounces

exclusively neither for virtue and rational action nor for external fortune, because fact testifies to the conditionedness of the one by the other; and he is in this free from the one-sidedness of later authorities, who deny to externality any application in happiness.

(*c.*) *Notion of virtue.*—As results from the Aristotelian polemic against Socrates, virtue is the product of frequently repeated moral action; it is a quality won through exercise, an acquired moral ability of the soul. The nature of this ability may be characterized as follows:—Every act accomplishes something as its work; but a work is imperfect if either in defect or excess. The act itself, therefore, will be similarly imperfect either by defect or excess; nor will an act be perfect unless it attain to a right proportion, to the due middle between too much and too little. Virtue in general, then, may be defined as observation of the due mean in action, not the arithmetical mean, the mean in itself, but the mean for us. What, namely, is enough for one man, is not so for another. The virtue of a man is one thing, but that of a wife, a child, a slave, quite another. In like manner there must be consideration of time, circumstances, and relations. To that extent, indeed, the determination of the due mean will always involve uncertainty. But in the absence of any exact and infallible prescript, it is practical judgment that must pronounce; and in effect that is the due mean which the man of understanding considers such.

That there must be as many virtues as there are relations of life, follows of itself from the very notion of virtue. As man, too, falls ever into new circumstances, in which it is often hard to determine the proper course of action, any exact enumeration of the various particular virtues is impossible (in contrast to Plato), and therefore not to be discussed. Only so far as there are certain constant relations in life will it be possible to assign also certain leading virtues. One constant human relation, for example, is that of pleasure and pain. The moral mean in this reference, then, or neither to fear pain, nor yet not to fear it, will be fortitude. The due mean in regard to pleasure, again, as between apathy and greed, will be temperance. In social life the mean between the doing of wrong and the suffering of wrong, between selfishness and weakness, is justice. In the same way many other virtues may be characterized;



and it can be demonstrated in all of them that they occupy the middle between two vices, which are opposed to each other, the one by defect, the other by excess. The details of the Aristotelian scheme here possess much psychological and practical value, but less philosophical. Aristotle derives the notions of his virtues from current speech rather than from the realization of any classifying principle; his specification of the virtues of practical life remains in particular destitute of any systematic deduction and arrangement. The most scientific perhaps is his classification of virtues into ethical and dianoetical, that is, into such as concern the affections and passions, and such as concern the intellect, theoretical or practical. The latter as the virtues of *νοῦς*, of what is highest in man, are superior in his estimation to the former; wisdom, *θεωρία*, is what is best and noblest; and life in it, philosophy, the supreme degree of felicity. But precisely in this class of virtues the criterion of a mean is found to be inapplicable; they stand quite unconnectedly beside each other, in the same dualistic manner in which reason stands to the other faculties of the soul.

(*d.*) *The State.*—Neither virtue nor happiness, according to Aristotle, can be attained by the individual himself. Moral development and moral activity, as well as the procuring of the necessary external means, are conditioned by a regulated life in common, within which the individual obtains education in the good, the protection of the law, the assistance of others, and opportunity for the practice of virtue. Even by nature man is born for a life in common; he is a political being; life for him is only possible with his fellows. The state, then, is higher than the individual, higher than the family; individuals are only accidental parts of the political whole. Aristotle at the same time is far from entertaining the abstract conception of this relation which belongs to Plato; the latter's politics, rather, he expressly opposes. With him also the business of the state is to rear its citizens into good men, to raise human life into its perfection; but without prejudice to the natural rights of the individual and the family, of the thine and the mine, of personal liberty. The state, he says, is not unity, but essentially plurality of individuals and smaller communities; this it has to recognise, and it has to effect also by law and constitution that virtue, humanity, shall become as universal as possible, as well as that political power

shall remain in the hands of the virtuous citizens. Of the various political forms, Aristotle gives the preference to constitutional monarchy and aristocracy, that is, to the state, in which not riches and not number of heads rule, but all such citizens as are possessed of competent property, as have been educated in all moral integrity, and as are capable of protecting and administering the whole. That state is the best in which the virtue, whether of one or of many, governs. For the rest, Aristotle will not support any political form as the only true one. The question, he thinks, is not of any political ideal, but of what is most advisable at the time, under the given natural, climatical, geographical, economical, intellectual, and moral relations. Thus here, too, he is true to the character of his entire philosophy—critically and reflectingly to advance, that is, only on the ground of experience, and, despairing of the attainment of any absolute good or true, to keep in view what are relatively such, namely, the probable and the practicable.

6. The Peripatetic School.—The school of Aristotle, named Peripatetic, can, in consequence of the relative want of independency in its philosophizing, which accordingly was not of great or universal influence, be only mentioned here. Theophrastus, Eudemus, Strato are the most celebrated leaders of it. In the usual manner of philosophical schools, it restricted itself almost entirely to the explication and exacter completion of the Aristotelian system. Any attempts to extend it concerned, in view of its tendency to the cultivation of material knowledge, naturally only the empirical spheres, that of physics especially, with neglect and disregard of the more speculative principles. Strato, the 'physicist,' went the farthest in this direction; he abandoned the dualism of Aristotle between the intelligent and the natural principle of things, and upheld nature as the one, sole, all-productive (even of thought), all-formative might of existence.

7. Transition to the Post-Aristotelian Philosophy.—The productive power of Grecian philosophy is, contemporaneously and in connexion with the general decline of Grecian life and intellect, exhausted with Aristotle. Instead of the great and universal systems of a Plato and an Aristotle, we have now one-sided subjective systems, correspondent to the general breach between the subject and the objective world, which characterizes, in political, religious, and social life, this last epoch of Greece, the



time after Alexander the Great. The principle of subjectivity, that first showed itself in the Sophists, stands now after long struggles triumphant over the ruins of Grecian politics and Grecian art. The individual has emancipated himself from society and the state. The simple trust of the subject in the given world is completely at an end; the question henceforward is of the realization and satisfaction of the individual subject, now autonomic and secluded to himself. This progressive course of the universal spirit is also seen in philosophy. It, too, is no longer handled in a purely scientific, any more than in a purely political, interest; it becomes rather means for the subject, and aims to procure him, what is no longer possible on the part of the sinking religion and morality of the state, a philosophical conviction in reference to the highest religious, moral, and philosophical problems, a fixed theory of the universe for life and action, acquired, too, only through free thought. All now, even logic and physics, is looked at from this practical point of view; the former shall extend to the subject a secure knowledge to raise him above all disquieting doubt; the latter shall supply the necessary explanations in regard to the ultimate grounds of existence, God, nature, humanity, in order that man may know how to relate himself to all things, what to fear or hope from the world, and in what to place his happiness in accordance with the nature of things. In one respect, consequently, the Post-Aristotelian systems denote a spiritual progress; they are in earnest with philosophy, which is to be in place now of religion and tradition, which is to afford truth for life itself, which is to be creed, dogma, conviction, by which the subject shall consistently determine his entire life and action, in which he shall find his peace, his happiness. And the result is that now above all things certainty is aimed at, definitive knowledge. The effort is towards a fixed foundation; the transcendentalism of the Platonic idealism, and the hypothetical philosophizing of Aristotle, are abandoned; position is taken on the realistic terrain of immediate outer and inner experience in order to reach thence a theory of things that shall be logically established, and that shall leave nothing undecided. The endeavour in particular is to abolish the dualism of the Platonico-Aristotelian philosophy, and finally solve the problem of the reduction of all the differences and contrarieties of existence, subject and object, spirit and

matter, to a single ultimate ground. Philosophy shall explain all; nowhere shall there be left any hiatus, any uncertainty, any halfness. On the other hand, again, there fails even so to the Post-Aristotelian philosophy, all simple scientific devotion to the object; it is a dogmatism that demands truth only for the subject, and is therefore one-sided. It no longer allows free scope to the interest itself, to cognition, but it accentuates the subjective consequence of thought; it seeks truth in the consequent realization of a single principle throughout the universal sphere of existence. Hence there presents itself opposite this dogmatism, and with equal decision, a scepticism that denies the possibility of all real knowledge, and in which the negative tendencies of the Sophistic and Megaric eristic are developed up to their extremest consequences.

The chief system of the Post-Aristotelian period is *Stoicism*. In it subjectivity appears as universal, thinking subjectivity (compare XI. 6). Precisely this overmastering grasp of the universality of subjectivity, of thought, and in superiority to all that is particular and individual, it adopts for principle both in theory and practice. Every particular existential detail is only product of the all-reason that lives and works throughout the system of the universe; reason, one and universal, is the essential principle of things. Thus, too, the vocation of man is no other than to be universal subjectivity exalted above every circumstance, and to seek his well-being only in a life according to nature and reason, not in external things, or individual enjoyment. The direct contrary of this is maintained by *Epicureanism*. In it the subject retires into the individuality of pleasure, into the bliss of philosophical repose, enjoying the present, free from care and inordinate desire, and interested in the objective world only so far as it extends means for the satisfaction of his individuality proper. *Scepticism* agrees with these two systems in aiming at the undisturbedness and unmovedness of the subject by anything external; but it would attain this in negative wise, through indifference to the objective world, through resignation of all definite knowledge and particular will.

The same character of subjectivity, finally, is exhibited by the last of the ancient philosophical systems, *Neo-Platonism*; for here, too, the exaltation of the subject to the absolute forms the cardinal point of the system. Even, indeed, when Neo-Platonism speculates objectively in regard to God and his relation to the finite, this, too, has its motive in the desire to demonstrate the graduated transition from the absolute object to the personality of man. Here, too, then, the dominant principle is the interest of subjectivity, and the greater wealth of objective specifications has its ground only in the enlargement of subjectivity into the absolute.



## XVII.—*Stoicism.*

THE founder of the Stoic School is *Zeno*, born in Citium, a town of Cyprus, about the year 340, not of pure Greek, but of Phœnician extraction. Deprived of his property by shipwreck, but impelled as well by inclination, he took refuge in philosophy. He was pupil first of Crates the Cynic, then of Stilpo the Megaric, and lastly of Polemo the Academic. After having passed twenty years in this manner, convinced at length of the necessity of a new philosophy, he opened, in an arcade at Athens, a school of his own. This arcade was named, from the paintings of Polygnotus with which it was decorated, the 'many-coloured portico' (Stoa Pœcilè); whence those who attended the new school were called 'philosophers of the Porch.' Zeno is said to have presided over the Stoa for fifty-eight years, and to have voluntarily ended his life at a great age. His abstemiousness and the severity of his morality were famous amongst the ancients; his self-denial became proverbial. The monument to his memory, erected by the Athenians at the instigation of the Macedonian king Antigonus, contained the fine encomium, 'His life corresponded to his precepts!' Zeno's successor in the school was *Cleanthes* of Assos, in Asia Minor, a faithful follower of the tenets of his master. Cleanthes was succeeded by *Chrysippus*, who was born at Soli in Cilicia, and died about the year 208; he was so pre-eminently the support of the Stoa, that it used to be said, 'If Chrysippus were not, the Stoa were not.' At all events, as, for all the later Stoics, he was an object of exalted veneration, and almost infallible authority, he must be regarded as the most eminent originator of their doctrine. He was so fertile a writer that, as it is said, he composed no fewer than 705 books, his habit, indeed, being to discuss the same proposition repeatedly,

and to support it by a vast number of extracts from other works, especially those of the poets, by way of testimonies and examples. But of all his works not any are left to us. Chrysippus closes the series of philosophers who founded the Stoa. Subsequent chiefs of the school, as *Panætius*, the friend of the younger Scipio (his celebrated book on duties was wrought by Cicero into his own work of the same name), and *Posidonius* (whom Cicero, Pompey, and others attended), proceeded more eclectically.

Among the Stoics, philosophy was in the closest union with practical life. Philosophy is for them wisdom in a practical interest; it is the exercise of virtue, the training-school of virtue, the science of those principles by which a virtuous life shall form itself. All science, art, instruction that is only for its own sake, is to them but a superfluous accessory; man has nothing to strive for but wisdom, wisdom in divine and human things, and adapt his life accordingly. Logic supplies the method for attaining to true knowledge; physics teach the nature and order of the universe; and ethics draw thence the inferences for practical life.

What is most remarkable in their *logic*, and most characteristic of the dogmatic nature of the Post-Aristotelian philosophy, is the quest of a subjective criterion of truth that may assure the determination of true and false ideas. All our knowledge, according to the Stoics, springs from actual impressions on us of the external things, from the objective experiences of sense, which are then combined into notions by the understanding. Knowledge, then, is not due to the subject, but to the object, and therefore is it true. As it is possible, however, that ideas of our subjective imagination may mingle with the true perceptions produced in us by things, the question comes, how are we able to separate the two sorts of consciousness—by what distinguish the true as true, the false as false? The criterion here is the irresistible evidence, the power of conviction, with which an idea forces itself on the soul. In regard to any idea which possesses evidence of this nature, which involuntarily compels the soul to the recognition of its truth, it is to be assumed that it is no mere imagination, but the product of a real object. Any other criterion than this 'striking evidence' is impossible, for we know things only through the medium of our impressions. This



Stoic theory of cognition, then, occupies a middle place between empiricism and idealism. Only experience of sense is certain; but whether there be something actually perceived, is only decided by the irresistible impression of truth which the experience brings with it for the subject.

In their *physics*, in which they essentially follow Heraclitus, the Stoics distinguish themselves from their predecessors, especially Plato and Aristotle, chiefly by their rigorously applied axiom that nothing incorporeal exists, that everything substantial—that all things are corporeal (as in logic they held that all knowledge is due to perception of sense). This sensualism or materialism of the Stoics looks strange beside their general idealistico-moral tendency. Nevertheless it is quite in keeping with their dogmatic stand-point: an ideal entity is not objective, not substantial enough for them; the relations and functions of things are ideal, but the things themselves must possess bodily reality. At the same time it appeared impossible to them that anything ideal could act on anything corporeal, anything spiritual on anything material, or conversely. What things mutually act must be of like substance; spirit, divinity, the soul consequently is a body, but only of another sort than matter and the outward body. The immediate consequence of this effort of the Stoics to abolish all dualism between the spiritual and the material is their pantheism. If Aristotle, before them, had divided the divine being from the world, as the pure eternal form from the eternal matter, the Stoics could not in consistency admit this separation, excluding as it did all real operation of God on the world. To separate God from matter appeared to them a false self-substantiation of the world, and so, like force and its manifestation, they made God and the world one. Matter is the passive foundation of things, the primal substrate of divine activity—God is the active and formative power of matter, immanent in it and essentially combined with it. The world is God's body, God the world's soul. Thus, then, the Stoics conceived God and matter as one substance identical with itself, called matter when considered on its passive and mutable side, God on the side of its active and ever self-identical power. The world has no independent existence, it is not self-subsistent finite being; it is produced, animated, ruled by God: it is a prodigious living thing (ζῶον), the rational soul of which is God.

All in it is equally divine, for the divine power equally pervades all. In it God is the eternal necessity which subjects all to unalterable law, the rational providence which duly forms and frames all, the perfect wisdom which upholds the order of the universe, commands and rewards the good, forbids and corrects the bad. Nothing in the world can isolate itself, nothing quit its nature and its limit; all is unconditionally bound to the order of the whole, of which the principle and the might are God. Thus, in the physics of the Stoics, we see mirrored the rigorously law-directed spirit of their philosophy; like Heraclitus, they are the sworn foes of all individual self-will. This principle of the unity of all being, brought them into connexion with Heraclitus in another respect; like him they conceived the being of God, already (as said) corporeal to them, as the fiery, heat-giving power, which, as such, is life in the world, but equally resumes all life into itself, in order to give it forth again, and so on *ad infinitum* (compare VII. 4). They called God, now the spiritual breath that permeates nature, now the art-subserving fire that forms or creates the universe, and now the æther, which, however, was not different to them from the principle of fire. In consequence of this identification of God and the world, in agreement with which the entire evolution of the universe was assumed, further, as but a development of the divine life, the remaining theory of existence acquired a very simple form. All in the world appears to them inspired by the divine life, coming into special existence out of the divine whole, and returning into it again, and thus bringing to pass a necessary cycle of constant origination and decease, in which, perpetually recreating itself, only the whole is permanent. On the other hand, again, within the whole no single unit is in vain, nothing is without an end, in every actual existence there is reason. Even evil (within certain limits) belongs to the perfection of the whole, as it is the *condition* of virtue (injustice, for example, of justice); the system of the universe could not possibly be better or fitter for its purpose than it is.

The *ethics* of the Stoics are very closely connected with their physics. In the latter, the rational, divinely instituted order of the universe has been demonstrated. Here now their ethics come in, referring the entire moral rectitude of life, and consequently the highest law of human action, to the rationality and order of universal



nature, and asserting the supreme good, or the supreme end of our endeavours, to be an adaptation of our life to the universal law, to the harmony of the world, to nature. 'Follow nature,' or 'live in agreement with nature,' this is the moral principle of the Stoics. More precisely: live in agreement with thy own rational nature, so far as it is not corrupted and distorted by art, but remains in its natural simplicity; be knowingly and willingly that which by nature thou art, a rational part of the rational whole, be reason and in reason, instead of following unreason and thy own particular self-will. Here is thy destination, here thy happiness, as on this path thou avoidest every contradiction to thy own nature and to the order of things without, and providest thyself a life that glides along undisturbed in a smooth and even stream.

From this moral principle, which involves at the same time the Stoic conception of virtue, all the peculiarities of the developed theory, follow with logical necessity. (*a.*) *The relation between virtue and pleasure.* Through the postulate of a life in accordance with nature, the unit is placed in subjection to the whole; every personal end is excluded, and consequently the most personal,—pleasure. Pleasure as a remission of that moral energy of the soul, which alone is happiness, could seem to the Stoics only as an interruption to life, as evil. It is not in accordance with nature, it is no end of nature, was the opinion of Cleanthes; and if other Stoics relaxed something of this severity, in allowing it to be regarded as in accordance with nature or even as a good, they still maintained that it possessed no moral worth, and was no end of nature, that it was something only accidentally connected with the due and proper operation of nature, that it was no active but only a passive condition of the soul. The whole austerity of the Stoic moral theory lies here: every personal consideration is rejected, every external end is to be looked on as alien to morality; wise action, that is the only end. There directly coheres with this (*b.*) the opinion of the Stoics in regard to *material goods.* Virtue, the sole end of man as a rational being, is also his sole happiness, his sole good: only the inner reason and strength of the soul, only will and action in conformity with nature, can render man happy, and supply him with a counterpoise to the contingencies and obstructions of external life. It follows,

in simple consequence from this, that external goods, health, wealth, etc., are, one and all of them, indifferent; they contribute nothing to reason, nothing to the greatness and strength of the soul; they may be used as well rationally as irrationally; they may issue in grief and they may issue in joy; they are not, therefore, anything really good; only virtue is profitable; to want or to lose external possessions affects not the happiness of the virtuous; even the so-called external evils are no evils, the only evil is vice, the unreason which is contrary to nature. The Stoics, differing in this respect from their predecessors the Cynics, grant that there are differences in these external things; that some of them, though certainly not morally good, have 'a certain value,' are 'preferable' to others; and that this preferableness, so far as it contributes to a life in accordance with nature, may be reckoned into the general moral account. Thus the wise man, when offered his choice, prefers health and riches to sickness and poverty; and in so preferring he follows a rational reason, for health and riches are more favourable to action, and consequently to virtuous action, than their contraries. But he regards them not as positive goods, for they are not that highest good to which all is to be sacrificed. They are inferior to the possession of virtue itself, in respect of which, indeed, they come not at all into account. It is seen from this distinction between the good and the preferable, how the Stoics were always bent on taking the good only in its highest sense, and on excluding from it everything relative. (*c.*) This abstract apprehension of the notion of virtue announces itself further in their *abrupt antithesis of virtue and vice.* Virtue is reasonableness, due action according to the nature of things; vice is contrariety to reason, that perversity which is in contradiction to nature and truth. The action of man is either, as they further argue, rational and free from contradiction, or it is not so. In the first case he is virtuous; in the second, however inconsiderable may be his contradiction to reason and nature, he is vicious. He only is good, who is perfectly good; vicious is every one who is irrational or wrong in any one point, who is subject, for example, to any appetite, affection, passion, fault, or who commits a fault. There is no transition from contradiction to freedom from contradiction, there is no middle term between them, any more than between truth and falsehood. It



was but the same doctrine when the Stoics affirmed that really faultless moral action is only possible through the possession of entire virtue, a perfect perception of the good, and a perfect power of its realization. Virtue is capable of being possessed only wholly, or else not at all, and consequently we are only then moral when we possess it wholly. Akin to this is the further Stoic paradox, that all good actions are equally right, and all bad ones equally wrong, that there are no degrees of good and bad, of virtue and vice, but that there is between both an absolute and essential contrast. The Stoics allowed here only, that *legal* acts,—such acts as substantially coincide with the law of virtue, without having directly risen from this law as source,—lie in the middle between virtue and vice, but are morally worthless. (*d.*) *The special theory of ethical action* was completely elaborated by the later Stoics, who were thus the founders of all deontological schemes. Virtue consists, according to them, in absolute judgment, absolute control of the soul over pain, absolute mastery of desire and lust, absolute justice that treats all only according to its worth in the system of things. Duties are respectively duties to self and duties to others. The former concern the preservation of self, with pursuit of all that agrees and avoidance of all that disagrees with nature and reason. The latter concern the relations of individuals socially, who have to guide themselves according to the principles of their social nature, and fulfil in one another's regard all the resultant duties of justice and humanity. The state is likewise an emanation from the social nature of man. The separation of men into a variety of hostile states, is a contradiction to the notion of the state; but the entire race ought to form a single community with the same principles and laws. Thus Stoicism originated the idea of cosmopolitism. (*e.*) The picture of *the wise man* forms the conclusion of the teaching of the Stoics. This, as pattern and model for action, is to be a representation of the ideal of virtue in its most rigorous form, and of the absolute felicity that is given with it. The wise man is he who actually possesses a true knowledge of divine and human things, as well as the absolute moral perception and strength that flow from it, and who by consequence unites in himself every conceivable perfection of humanity. Any more special realization of this ideal seems paradoxical, as such absolute perfection is quite

incapable of union with the idea of the individual. Precisely here, however, the Stoics laid most stress, inasmuch as the elevation of the subject to virtue, a virtue that is pure and entire, is the postulate that pervades their whole ethical system, and specifically distinguishes it from the Aristotelian requisition of merely individual and relative virtues. The wise man, they said, knows all that there is to know, and understands it better than any one else, because he possesses a true constitution of soul, and a true knowledge of the nature of things. He alone is the true statesman, lawgiver, orator, educator, critic, poet, physician; whilst the unwise man remains always raw and unformed, let him possess what acquirements he may. The wise man is without fault or failing, as he always uses reason, and thinks all in its rational connexion. On the same account, nothing surprises, nothing terrifies him; he falls not into weakness or passion. He alone is the true fellow-citizen, fellow-man, kinsman, and friend, because he alone perfectly knows and fulfils the duties which these relations involve. In the same way, the wise man, as he possesses the good as his own law within himself, is free from all restriction of external law and established observance: he is king, lord of his action, for from the same cause he is responsible only to himself. No less free is he, by his character and his virtue, in reference to business and vocation; he can move with ease in every sphere of life; he is rich, for he can procure himself all that he wants, and dispense with all that he is without; he is happy under all circumstances, for he has happiness in himself, in his virtue. The unwise, again, do not in truth possess all the internal and external goods which they seem and suppose themselves to possess, because they possess not the indispensable condition of true happiness, perfection of soul. In this thought, that inner moral integrity is the necessary basis of all qualification for action and of all true happiness, lies the truth of this Stoical doctrine. It equally displays the abstraction, however, in which the whole system is involved; this wisdom is an unreal ideal, as indeed the Stoics themselves admitted; it is a general notion of perfection which, inapplicable to life, proves that its supporters had only one-sidedly adopted for principle the universality of subjectivity. The subject, that is, if formerly only an accident of the state, is now to be absolute. But just so his reality disappears into the mist and vapour of an abstract ideal. The merit of the Stoic philosophy, nevertheless, is that, in an age of ruin, they held fast by the moral idea, and, through exclusion of the political element from morality, established the latter as an independent special science.



## XVIII.—*Epicureanism.*

NEARLY contemporaneously with the Stoa, or a little earlier, there arose the Epicurean school. Its founder, Epicurus, the son of an Athenian who had emigrated to Samos, was born 342 B.C., six years after the death of Plato. Of his youth and culture little that is trustworthy is known. In his thirty-sixth year, he opened at Athens a philosophical school, over which he presided till his death (in the year 270 B.C.) His disciples and adherents formed a private society, which was held together by a close tie of friendship (after Alexander, social life comes now in place of the falling political life). Epicurus himself compared his society to that of the Pythagoreans, though it placed not, like theirs, its means in a common fund, since, as Epicurus was accustomed to say, one true friend must trust another true friend. Epicurus's moral character has been frequently assailed; but his life, according to the most credible testimony, was in every respect blameless, and he himself alike amiable and estimable. Much of what is reported about the offensive sensuality of the Epicurean sty is in general to be considered calumny. Epicurus wrote a great many works, more even than Aristotle, less only than Chrysippus. He himself prepared the way for the disappearance of his greater works, by reducing the sum of his philosophy to short extracts, which he recommended his disciples to get by rote. These extracts have been for the most part preserved to us.

The tendency of Epicurus is very distinctly characterized in his definition of philosophy. He denominated it an activity which realizes a happy life through ideas and arguments. It has essentially for him, therefore, a practical object, and it results, as he desires, in ethics which are to teach us how to attain to a life of felicity. The Epicureans did, indeed, accept the usual division of philosophy into logic (called canonic by them), physics,

and ethics. But logic, limited to the investigation of the criteria of truth, was considered by them only as ancillary to physics. Physics, again, existed only for ethics, in order to secure men from those vain terrors of empty fables, and that superstitious fear which might obstruct their happiness. In Epicureanism, we have still, then, the three ancient parts of philosophy, but in reverse order, logic and physics being only in the service of ethics. To this last we shall limit the present exposition, the others being but of small scientific interest, and the physics especially, while very incomplete and incoherent in themselves, being nothing but a return to the atoms of Democritus.

With Aristotle and the other philosophers of his time, Epicurus, as said, sought the *summum bonum* in felicity of life. But happiness in his view consists in nothing but pleasure. Virtue, he declares, can have no value *in itself*, but only so far as it offers *us* something—an agreeable life. The question now, then, is the more exact definition of pleasure, and here Epicurus differs in essential points from his predecessors the Cyrenaics (compare XIII. 3). (*a.*) While Aristippus viewed the pleasure of the moment as the object of human effort, Epicurus holds this object to be the permanent tranquil satisfaction that is the enduring condition of an entire life. True pleasure, therefore, is a subject of calculation and reflection. Many a pleasure must be rejected, as preparing us only pain; many a pain must be accepted as preparing us only a greater pleasure. (*b.*) As the wise man seeks his supreme good not for the moment, but for the whole of life, spiritual joy and sorrow, which, as memory and hope, embrace the past and the future, evidently claim more of his consideration than the fleshly pleasure and pain which are only temporary. But the joy of spirit consists in the imperturbable tranquillity of the wise man, in the feeling of his inner worth, of his superiority to the blows of fate. Thus Epicurus could truly say that it is better to be sad with reason than without reason glad; and that the wise man may exist in happiness even amid tortures. Nay, it was allowable for him (in this a true follower of Aristotle) to place pleasure and happiness in the closest union with virtue, and maintain the one to be inseparable from the other, happiness impossible without virtue, and virtue impossible without happiness. For the same reason,



friendship was to him, though held by the Cyrenaics to be superfluous, a chief means of happiness; and this it is as an enduring, life-gladdening, life-embellishing union of congenial natures, and as conferring so a lasting satisfaction which the joys of sense can not procure. (*c.*) When other hedonists declared the positive feeling of pleasure, raised, too, to the highest pitch of intensity, to be the highest good, Epicurus, keeping before him the possibility of a well-being that should extend over the whole of life, could not agree with them. He demands not for a happy life the most exquisite pleasures; he recommends, on the contrary, sobriety and temperance, contentment with little, and a life generally in accord with nature. He protests against the false interpretation of his doctrine, that represents him to recommend as the greatest good the sensual enjoyments of the voluptuary and the debauchee; he boasts to be willing to vie with Jupiter himself in happiness, if allowed only plain bread and water; and he even abhors those gratifications which necessitate expense, not perhaps for their own sakes, but for the evils with which they are attended. Not, indeed, that the Epicurean sage will live like a Cynic: he will enjoy wherever he can harmlessly enjoy; he will also endeavour to procure himself the means of living with decency and comfort. Still the wise man *can* dispense with these finer enjoyments, even though not *obliged* to do so, for he possesses within himself the greatest of his satisfactions, he enjoys within himself the truest and the most stable joy,—tranquillity of soul, impassibility of mind. In opposition to the positive pleasure of some hedonists, the theory of Epicurus ends rather in the recommendation of negative pleasure, so far as he regards freedom from pain as already pleasure, and advises the efforts of the sage to be preferably directed to the avoidance of the disagreeable. Man, says Epicurus, is always plotting in his heart not to suffer or to fear pain; if he has accomplished this, nature is satisfied; positive delights cannot augment happiness, but only complicate it. Happiness to him, accordingly, is something simple, and easy to be attained, if man will but follow nature, and not destroy or imbitter for himself his own life by inordinate demands, or else by the foolish fear of evils in supposition. To the evils which we are not to dread, belongs, before all, death. It is no evil not to live. And so the wise man fears not death, before

which most men tremble: for if we are, it is not, if it is, we are not; when it is present we feel it not, for it is the end of all feeling, and what cannot harm us when present, that need not trouble us in the future. The teaching of Epicurus tends ever indeed to enjoin the pure subjective endeavour to secure for the individual peace and contentment in life; he knows nothing of a moral destiny in man; but he has ennobled the antique conception of pleasure to the full of its capacity.

Epicurus crowns his general view by his doctrine of the gods, to whom he applies his ideal of happiness. The gods lead, he thinks, in human form, but without human wants, and without permanent bodies, in the empty interspaces of the infinite worlds, an untroubled, unalterable life, whose bliss is insusceptible of increase. From this bliss of the gods he infers that they can have nothing to do with the superintendence of our affairs: for bliss is peace; they trouble neither themselves nor others; and therefore they are not to be regarded as objects of superstitious and disquieting terrors. These inert gods of Epicurus, these imperturbable and yet unstable forms, these bodies which are not bodies, do, indeed, fit in but poorly with the rest of the system; still it is the happiness of man that is consulted here also, the gods are disarmed of their terrors, and yet preserved in such modified shape as serves rather to confirm than refute the Epicurean creed.

## XIX.—*Scepticism and the Later Academy.*

THE conclusion of all these subjective tendencies is *scepticism*, manifesting itself in the complete destruction of the bridge between subject and object, in the denial of all objective knowledge, science, truth, in the complete retirement of the sage into himself and his subjective experience. But there is a distinction between the elder scepticism, the later Academy, and subsequent scepticism.

1. THE ELDER SCEPTICISM.—The head of the older sceptics is Pyrrho of Elis, a contemporary of Aristotle. Our chief informant in regard to Pyrrho's opinions, is,—he himself having left nothing in writing,—his disciple and adherent Timon of Phlius, the satirist or sillographist (author, that is, of a satirical poem on the whole of Greek philosophy up to that time). The tendency of these sceptical



philosophers was, like that of the Stoics and Epicureans, proximately a practical one: philosophy shall conduct us to happiness. But to live happy, we must know how things are, and how, consequently, we must relate ourselves to them. They answered the first question in this way: What things really are, lies beyond the sphere of our knowledge, since we perceive not things as they are, but only as they appear to us to be; our ideas of them are neither true nor false, anything definite of anything cannot be said. Neither our perceptions nor our ideas of things teach us anything true; the opposite of every proposition, of every enunciation, is still possible; and hence, in regard to one and the same thing, the contradictory views of men in general, and of professed philosophers in particular. In this impossibility of any objective knowledge, of science, the true relation of the philosopher to things is entire suspense of judgment, complete reserve of all positive opinion. In order to avoid all definite expressions, the sceptics on all occasions availed themselves, therefore, of doubtful phrases: it is possible, it may be, perhaps, as it seems to me, I know nothing for certain (to which they carefully added, nor do I know even this for certain that I know nothing for certain). In this suspense of judgment, they believed their practical end, happiness, attained: for, like a shadow, imperturbability of soul follows freedom from judgment, as if it were a gift of fortune. He who has adopted the sceptical mood of thought, lives ever in peace, without care and without desire, in a pure apathy that knows neither of good nor evil. Between health and disease, between life and death, difference there is none—in this sheer antithesis, Pyrrho is understood to have enunciated the axiom of sceptical apathy.

It lies in the nature of the case that the sceptics obtained the matter of their conclusions chiefly by means of a polemical discussion of the views and investigations of the dogmatists. But their supporting grounds were shallow, and appear to be partly dialectical blunders readily refuted, and partly empty subtleties. To the older sceptics is ascribed the employment of the following ten sceptical tropes (points or arguments), which, however, were probably collected and perfected, neither by Pyrrho nor Timon, but by Ænesidemus, who, as it appears, flourished shortly after Cicero. The sceptical reservation of opinion made appeal (1.) to the varieties of the feelings and sensations of living beings in general; (2.) to the bodily and

mental diversities of men, by reason of which things appear different to different persons; (3.) to the varying accounts of the senses themselves in regard to things, and to the uncertainty as to whether the organs of sense are competent or not; (4.) to the dependence of our perceptions of things on our different bodily and mental states; as well as (5.) on the various positions of things to us and to each other (distance, etc.); (6.) to the fact that we know nothing directly, but all only through some extraneous medium (air, etc.); (7.) to the varying impressions of the same thing by varying quantity, temperature, colour, motion, etc.; (8.) to the dependence of our impressions on custom, the new and strange affecting us differently from the common; (9.) to the relativity of all notions, predicates in general expressing only relations of things to each other or to our perceptions of them; (10.) to the diversity of the customs, manners, laws, religious conceptions, and dogmatical opinions of men.

2. THE LATER ACADEMY.—In consequence of its contest with the Stoics, in especial, Scepticism, when introduced into the Platonic school (first by *Arcesilaus*, 316-241), obtained greater importance than in the contributions of the Pyrrhonists. Here it sought its supports principally in the authority of the writings of Plato, and in the traditions of his oral teaching. Arcesilaus would never have been able to assume and maintain his chair in the Academy, had he not entertained himself and communicated to his disciples the conviction that his tenet of a suspense of judgment was essentially in agreement with those of Socrates and Plato, and that by banishment of dogmatism, he was only restoring the pristine and true dialectic signification of Platonism. His action was further influenced by the opposition entertained by him to the harsh dogmatism which, pretending to be in every respect an improvement on the Platonic teaching, was but just set up in the Stoa. Hence the remark of Cicero, that Arcesilaus directed all his sceptical and polemical attacks against Zeno, the founder of the Stoa. He particularly disputed the Stoic theory of cognition, alleging against it that even false perceptions may induce perfect conviction, that all perception, indeed, leads only to opinion, and not to knowledge as such. Accordingly, he denied the existence of any criterion by which truth might be accurately discriminated. Whatever truth our opinions might contain,



we could never, he thought, be certain of it. It was in this sense that he said, 'We can know nothing, not even this itself, that we know nothing.' In the moral sphere, however, in the love of the good and the hatred of the bad, he demanded that we should follow the course of probability, that course namely that showed for itself the most and the best reasons: so we should act rightly and be happy, for that was the course of action which accorded with reason and the nature of things. Of the subsequent leaders of the New Academy we can mention here only *Carneades* (214-129), whose whole philosophy, however, almost exclusively consisted in his polemic against the logic, theology, and physics of the Stoics. His positive contribution was an attempt to introduce a doctrine of method for probable thought, or a theory of philosophical probability which should determine the various grades of it; for to Carneades also probability was a necessity in practical life. Later still, the Academy tended more, in a retrograde direction, to an eclectico-dogmatic doctrine.

3. LATER SCEPTICISM.—Scepticism proper was once more revived at the time of the total decline of Greek philosophy. Of this period the most important sceptics, or at least promoters of scepticism, are *Ænesidemus*, *Agrippa* (later than Ænesidemus, and who principally insisted on the necessity of leaving nothing without proof, at the same time that the proof itself demanded again proof, and so on *usque ad infinitum*), and *Sextus Empiricus* (a Greek physician, that is, of the Empirical sect), who lived probably in the first half of the third century after Christ. The last is the most considerable, as we possess from him two writings of genuine historical value (the *Pyrrhonic Hypotyposes* in three books, and his work *Adversus Mathematicos* in eleven), in which he has expounded at full all that ancient scepticism could contrive to bring forward against certainty in knowledge.

## XX.—*The Romans.*

THE Romans have no share of their own in the development of philosophy. After an interest in Greek philosophy and literature began among them,—after the embassy to Rome, on the part of Athens, of the three distinguished representatives of Attic culture and eloquence, Carneades the Academic, Critolaus the Peripa-

tetic, and Diogenes the Stoic,—and after the closer connexion of the two States in consequence of the conversion (a few years later than the embassy) of Greece into a province of Rome, almost all the more important Greek systems of philosophy, especially the Epicurean (Lucretius) and the Stoic (Seneca), flourished and found adherents among the Romans, but without receiving from them any actual philosophical improvement. The universal character of the Roman philosophizing is eclecticism, which very strikingly exhibits itself in the case of the most important and influential of philosophical writers among the Romans, Cicero. Nevertheless, the popular philosophy of this and other thinkers of a similar bent is not, despite its want of originality, independency, and rigour, to be too lightly estimated; for it led to the introduction of philosophy as a constituent element in culture generally.

## XXI.—*Neo-Platonism.*

IN Neo-Platonism the spirit of antiquity made its last desperate attempt at a philosophical monism which should put an end to the dualism between subjectivity and objectivity. It makes this attempt on the one hand from the position of subjectivity, and stands in this respect on the same plane with the other Post-Aristotelian subjective philosophies (compare XVI. 7). On the other hand, again, it aims at the establishment of objective principles in regard to the highest notions of metaphysics, in regard to the absolute—it aims, indeed, at the establishment of a system of absolute philosophy, and in this respect is a counterpart of the Platonico-Aristotelian philosophy, with which it connects itself externally also in professing to be a revival of the pristine Platonism. On both aspects, then, it constitutes the close of ancient philosophy; it represents the final gathering-in, but not less the exhaustion of antique thought and the dissolution of ancient philosophy.

The first, and, at the same time, the most important representative of Neo-Platonism, is *Plotinus* of Lycopolis in Egypt. He was a disciple of Ammonius Saccas, who taught Platonic philosophy at Alexandria in the beginning of the third century, but left behind him nothing in writing. Plotinus (205-270 A.D.) taught philosophy at



Rome from the age of forty. He explained his views in a series of hastily written, ill-connected tractates, which, after his death, and in obedience to his directions, *Porphyry*, the most celebrated of his disciples (born 233, taught also at Rome philosophy and eloquence), arranged and edited in six Enneads (parts consisting of nine books each). From Rome and Alexandria, the Neo-Platonism of Plotinus passed, in the fourth century, to Athens, where it established itself in the Academy. Among the Neo-Platonists of the fourth century, Porphyry's disciple *Iamblichus*, among those of the fifth *Proclus* (412-485), possessed pre-eminently the respect of the school. With the disappearance of Paganism before the triumphant advance of Christianity, this last blossom of Greek philosophy, in the course of the sixth century, faded too. The common characteristic of the whole of the Neo-Platonic philosophers is the tendency to enthusiasm, to theosophy, and theurgy. The most of them addicted themselves to sorcery, and the more eminent professed to enjoy divine communications, to foresee the future, and to perform miracles. They bore themselves then as hierophants quite as much as philosophers; with the unmistakable endeavour to found—as Pagan antitype of Christianity—a philosophy which should be at the same time a universal religion. In the following exposition of Neo-Platonism we confine ourselves more particularly to Plotinus.

(*a.*) THE SUBJECTIVE CONDITION OF ECSTASY.—The result of the philosophical attempts that had preceded Neo-Platonism was scepticism, recognition of the inadequacy of the Stoic and the Epicurean wisdom in the practice of life, an absolutely negative relation to all positive theoretical acquisitions. But scepticism was in this way brought only to the contrary of what it aimed at. It had aimed at complete apathy on the part of the sage, but what it was brought to was the necessity of a perpetual opposition in refutation of all positive allegations, not the repose which was to follow scepticism, but an unappeasable unrest. This absolute dispeace of consciousness that strives to absolute peace could lead only to the longing to be freed from this dispeace itself, the longing for a conclusion that, secure from every sceptical objection, should absolutely satisfy. This longing for absolute truth found its historical expression in Neo-Platonism. The individual seeks to become master of the absolute,

to embrace it, to hold it immediately within himself, that is, to attain to it, not through objective knowledge, not through any dialectical process, but directly through his own inner mystical subjective exaltation, in the form of immediate vision, of ecstasy. Knowledge of the true, Plotinus maintains, is not won by proof, not by any intermediating process, not so that objects remain outside of him who knows, but so that all difference between the knowing and the known disappears; it is a vision of reason into its own self; it is not we who have vision of reason, but reason that has vision of its own self; in no other manner can fruition of it be reached. Nay, even this vision of reason, within which subject and object are still opposed to each other as different from each other, must itself be transcended. The supreme degree of cognition is vision of the supreme, the single principle of things; in which all separation between it and the soul ceases; in which this latter, in divine rapture, touches the absolute itself, feels itself filled by it, illuminated by it. He who has attained to this veritable union with God, despises henceforth even that pure thought which he formerly loved, because it was still after all only a movement, and presupposed a difference between the seer and the seen. This mystical absorption into divinity or the One, this trance or swooning into the absolute, is what gives so peculiar a character to Neo-Platonism as opposed to the Greek philosophical systems proper.

(*b*.) The Cosmical Principles.—In close connexion with this rapture-theory of the Neo-Platonics stands their doctrine of three cosmical principles. To the two already assumed cosmical principles of a (world-) soul and a (world-) reason, they added a third and higher principle, as ultimate unity of all differences and contrarieties, in which, consequently (simply to be this), difference must be resolved into the pure simplicity of essential being. Reason is not this simple principle, for in it the antithesis of thinking,—of thinker and thought, and of the movement from the first to the last,—still exists; reason has the nature of the many in it; but the one as principle must precede the many (unity precede variety); if then there is to be a unity of the totality of being, reason must be transcended for the absolute one. This primal being is now variously named by Plotinus; he calls it the first, the one, the good (see xiv. 4. *f*), what stands above the beënt (the beënt disappears for him into



an accessory notion of reason, and forms, united with reason, in the co-ordination of the highest notions, only the second step or grade), names truly through which Plotinus hopes not adequately to express the nature of that primitive one, but only figuratively shadow it out. Thought and will he allows it not, because it is in want of nothing, can require nothing; it is not energy but above energy; life is not a predicate of it; nothing beënt, no thing and no being, none of the most universal categories of being can be attributed to it; all other negative determinations are incompetent in its regard: in short, it is something unspeakable, unthinkable. Plotinus is wholly bent on thinking his first principle as absolute unity, excludent of all and every determinateness that would only render it finite, and therefore, as in itself, independent of all connexion with everything else. He is unable to maintain this pure abstraction, however, when he sets himself afterwards to show how from the first principle there become or emanate all the others, and primarily the two other cosmical ones. In order to obtain a beginning for his theory of emanation, he finds himself compelled to assume and to think his first principle, in its relation to the second, as a creative or generative one.

(*c*.) The Neo-Platonic Theory of Emanation.—Every such theory, and the Neo-Platonic as well, assumes the world to be an effluence or eradiation of God, in such manner that the remoter emanation possesses ever a lower degree of perfection than that which precedes it; and represents consequently the totality of existence as a descending series. Fire, says Plotinus, emits heat, snow cold, fragrant bodies exhale odours, and every organized being, so soon as it has reached maturity, generates what is like it. In the same manner, the all-perfect and eternal, in the exuberance of its perfection, permits to emanate from itself what is equally everlasting and next itself the best,—reason, which is the immediate reflexion, the ectype of the primeval one. Plotinus is rich in images to make it conceivable that, in this emission or production of reason, the one loses nothing and nowise weakens itself. After the one, reason possesses the greatest perfection. It contains within itself the world of ideas, the all of immutable, veritable being. Of its sublimity and glory we may gain some conception, if we attentively consider the world of sense, its vastness and magnificence,

the harmony of its everlasting motion, and then elevate our thoughts to its archetype, to the being of the intelligible world, contemplating intelligible things in their pure imperishable essence, and acknowledging intelligence as their creator and preserver. In it there is no past, no future, but only an eternal present, and no more any dividedness of space than any changeableness of time; it is the true eternity which time but copies. As reason from the one, so from reason again, and equally without change on its part, there emanates the eternal soul of the world. This soul is the ectype of reason: filled with reason, it realizes the latter in a world without: it represents the ideas in external sensible matter, which (matter), unqualified, indefinite, non-beënt, is, in the scale, the last and lowest of emanations. In this manner the universal soul is the fashioner of the visible world, forming it as material copy of its own self, penetrating and animating it, and moving it in circle. The series of emanations closes here, then, and we have reached, as was the intention of the theory, in an uninterrupted descent from highest to lowest, what is but a copy of true being, the world of sense.

The individual souls, like the soul of the world, are amphibia between the higher element of reason and the lower of sense, now involved in the latter, and the destinies of the latter, and now turning to their source, reason. From the world of reason, which is their true and proper home, they have descended, each at its appointed time, reluctantly obedient to an inner necessity, into the corporeal world, without, however, wholly breaking with the world of ideas: rather they are at once in both, even as a ray of light touches at once the sun and the earth. Our vocation, therefore—and here we reach again the point from which, in the exposition of the Neo-Platonic philosophy, we started—can only be a turning of our senses and our endeavours to our home in the world of the ideas, emancipation of our better self from the bondage of matter, through mortification of sense, through *ascesis*. Once in the ideal world, however, that reflexion of the primal beautiful and good, our soul reaches thence the ultimate end of every wish and longing, ecstatic vision of the one, union with God, unconscious absorption—disappearance—in God.

The Neo-Platonic philosophy, it will now be seen, is monism, and the completion, consequently, of ancient philosophy, so far as it would reduce the totality of being to a single ultimate ground. As able, however, to find its highest principle, from which all the rest are derived, not through self-consciousness and natural rational explanation, but only through ecstasy, mystic annihilation of self, ascesis, theurgy, it is a desperate overleaping of all—and, consequently, the self-destruction of ancient—philosophy.



## XXII.—*Christianity and Scholasticism.*

THE CHRISTIAN IDEA.—The character of Greek intellectual life at the time of its fairest bloom was the direct dependence of the subject on the object (nature, the state, etc.) The breach between them, between spirit and nature, had not yet begun; the subject had not yet reflected himself into himself, not yet comprehended himself in his absolute significance, in his infinitude. After Alexander the Great, with the decline of Greece, this breach appeared. Surrendering the objective world, self-consciousness drew back into itself, but only with the downfall of the bridge between them. Truth, all element of divinity, must now appear to consciousness, not yet duly *deepened*, as alien and remote; and a feeling of unhappiness, of unappeasable longing, take the place of that fair unity between spirit and nature which had been characteristic of the better periods of Grecian political and intellectual life. A last desperate attempt to reach the alienated divine life, to bring the two sides violently together, by means of transcendent speculation and ascetic mortification, by means of ecstasy and swoon, was made by Neo-Platonism; it failed, and ancient philosophy sank in complete exhaustion, ruined in the attempt to conquer dualism. Christianity took up the problem: nay it proclaimed for principle the very idea which ancient thought had been unable to realize, annulment of the alienation (farness) of God, the substantial unity of God and man. That God became man—is, speculatively, the fundamental idea of Christianity, an idea which is expressed practically, too (and Christianity from the first had a practically religious character), in the redemption (reconciliation) and the call for regeneration (that is, of a purification and religious transformation of sense in contrast to the merely negative action of *ascesis*). From this

it is that monism has remained the character and the fundamental tendency of the whole of modern philosophy. And in truth modern philosophy began at that precise point at which ancient philosophy ended: the withdrawal of thought, of self-consciousness into its own self, this, which was the stand-point of the post-Aristotelian philosophy, constitutes in Descartes the starting-point of modern philosophy, which advances thence to the logical resolution of that antithesis beyond which ancient philosophy had been unable to pass.

2. SCHOLASTICISM.—Christianity, in the Apologists of the second century and the Alexandrine Fathers, related itself very early to the philosophy of the time, especially Platonism. Then, later, in the ninth century, attempts were made, through *Scotus Erigena*, at a combination with Neo-Platonism. But it was only in the second half of the middle ages, or from the eleventh century downwards, that there developed itself—in the proper sense—a Christian philosophy, the so-called *Scholasticism*.

The character of Scholasticism is conciliation between dogma and thought, between faith and reason. When the dogma passes from the Church, where it took birth, into the school, and when theology becomes a science treated in universities, the interest of thought comes into play, and asserts its right of reducing into intelligibleness the dogma which has hitherto stood above consciousness as an external, unquestionable power. A series of attempts is now made to procure for the doctrines of the Church the form of a scientific system. Of such systems the first is that of *Petrus Lombardus* (d. 1164) in his four books of *Sentences*, a work which, on the part of later scholastics, gave rise to very numerous commentaries. All these systems assumed as infallible presupposition that the creed of the Church was absolutely true (no Scholastic system ever transgressed this presupposition); but they were all guided at the same time by a desire to comprehend this revealed, positive truth, to rationalize the dogma. "*Credo ut intelligam*," this *dictum* of *Anselm*, the beginner and founder of Scholasticism (born about 1035, Archbishop of Canterbury from 1093), was the watchword of the whole movement. In the resolution of its problem, Scholasticism applied, indeed, the most brilliant, though mostly only formal, syllogistic acuteness, and gave rise to mighty doctrinal structures, not unlike in complicated bulk to the huge domes of Gothic architecture. The universal study



of Aristotle, named *par excellence* 'the philosopher,' who had several of the most important Scholastics for commentators, and who was highly popular at the same time among the Arabians (*Avicenna* and *Averroes*), supplied a terminology and schematic points of view for method. The zenith of Scholasticism is constituted by these indisputably greatest masters of the art and method, *Thomas Aquinas* (d. 1274, a Dominican), and *Duns Scotus* (d. 1308, a Franciscan),—the founders of two schools, into which the entire movement was thenceforward divided; the one proclaiming the understanding (*intellectus*) as principle, the other will (*voluntas*); both through this antithesis of the theoretical and the practical principles, leading to two tendencies essentially different. Just here, however, the decline of Scholasticism began: its zenith was the turning-point to dissolution. The rationality of the dogma, the unity of reason and faith, this was the presupposition tacitly adopted; but this presupposition fell to the ground, and the whole foundation of Scholastic metaphysics was in principle abandoned, the moment Duns Scotus transferred the problem of theology to the practical sphere. With the separation of theory and practice, and still more with the separation in nominalism (see 3) of thought and thing, philosophy became divided from theology, reason from faith: reason took position above faith, above authority (Modern Philosophy), and the religious consciousness broke with the traditional dogma (the Reformation).

3. NOMINALISM AND REALISM.—Hand in hand with the development of Scholasticism in general, proceeded that of the antithesis between *nominalism* and *realism*, an antithesis the origin of which is to be found in the relation of Scholasticism to the philosophy of Plato and Aristotle. The nominalists were those who held universal notions (*universalia*) to be mere names, *flatus vocis*, empty conceptions without reality. With nominalism, there are no general notions, no *genera*, no *species*: all that is, exists only as a singular in its pure individuality; and there is no such thing as pure thought, but only natural conception and sensuous perception. The realists again, by example of Plato, held firm by the objective reality of the universals (*universalia ante res*). The antithesis of these opinions took form first as between *Roscelinus* and Anselm, the former as nominalist, the latter as realist; and it continues henceforth throughout the whole course of Scholasticism.

There began, however, as early as *Abelard* (b. 1079) an intermediate theory as well nominalistic as realistic, which after him, with unimportant modifications, remained, on the whole, the dominant one (*universalia in rebus*). In this view the universal is only conceived, only thought, but even so it is no mere product of consciousness; no, it possesses also objective reality in the things themselves, nor could it be abstracted from them, unless it were virtually contained in them. This identity of being and of thought is the presupposition and foundation on which the entire dialectic industry of the Scholastics rests. All their arguments found on the assumption that whatever is syllogistically proved has exactly the same constitution in actuality that it has in logical thought. If this presupposition fell, there fell with it the whole basis of Scholasticism; leaving nothing for thought—thus at fault as regards its own objectivity—but to withdraw into its own self. In effect this self-produced dissolution of Scholasticism made its appearance in *William Ockam* (d. 1347), the widely-influential reviver of nominalism, which, powerful in the very beginning of Scholasticism, and now more powerful as opposed to a form of thought that was no longer growing but exhausted, withdrew the foundations from the whole structure of scholastic dogmatism and plunged it hopelessly in ruin.

## XXIII.—*Transition to Modern Philosophy.*

THE struggle of the new philosophy with scholasticism, protracted throughout the entire fifteenth century in a series of intermediate events, reaches its termination negatively in the course of the sixteenth, and positively in the first half of the seventeenth century.

1. THE FALL OF SCHOLASTICISM.—The proximate cause of this altered spirit of the time we have just seen: it is the internal decline of scholasticism itself. As soon as the tacit presupposition, which underlay the theology and whole method of scholasticism,—the rationality of the dogma, namely, or the applicability of scientific demonstration to the matter of revelation,—was broken up, the entire structure, as already remarked, fell helplessly to the ground. The conception directly opposed to the principle of scholasticism, that it was possible for the same thing to be at once true to the dogma and false or



at least indemonstrable to reason,—a point of view applied by the Aristotelian *Pomponatius* (1462-1530) to the immortality of the soul, and later by *Vanini* (see below) to the great problems of philosophy,—became, however much it was resisted by the church, ever more and more universal, and brought with it a conviction of the impossibility of reconciling reason and revelation. The feeling that philosophy must be emancipated from its previous state of pupilage and servitude strengthened; a struggle towards greater independency of research awoke; and, though none durst turn as yet against the church itself, attempts were made to shake the authority of the main pillar of scholasticism, the philosophy of Aristotle, or what was then considered such. (Particularly distinguished here was *Petrus Ramus*, 1515-1572, massacred on the Eve of St. Bartholomew.) The authority of the church declined more and more in the opinion of the nations, and the great systems of scholasticism ceased to be continued.

2. RESULTS OF SCHOLASTICISM.—Notwithstanding all this, scholasticism was not without excellent results. Although completely in the service of the church, it originated in a scientific interest, and awoke consequently the spirit of free inquiry and a love of knowledge. It converted objects of faith into objects of thought; raised men from the sphere of unconditional belief into the sphere of doubt, of search, of understanding; and even when it sought to establish by argument the authority of faith, it was really establishing, contrary to its own knowledge and will, the authority of reason: it brought thus another principle into the world, different from that of the ancient church, the principle of intellect, the self-consciousness of reason; or at least it prepared the way for the triumph of this principle. The very defects of the scholastics, their many absurd questions, their thousandfold useless and arbitrary distinctions, their *curiosities* and *subtilities*, must be attributed to a rational principle, to the spirit of inquiry, the longing for light, which, oppressed by the authority of the church, was able to express itself only so, and not otherwise. Only when left behind by the advancing intelligence of the time, did scholasticism become untrue to its original import, and unite its interests with those of the church, exhibiting itself then, indeed, as the most violent opponent of the new and better spirit.

3. The Revival of Letters.—A chief instrument of that change in the spirit of the time, which marks the beginning of a new epoch for philosophy, was the revival of classical literature. The study of the ancients, especially of the Greeks, had, in the course of the middle ages, ceased to be cultivated. The philosophy of Plato and of Aristotle was, for the most part, known only through Latin translations or secondary sources. All sense for beauty of form or taste in expression had died out. Of the spirit of classical life there was not left even a dream. But this was altered now, chiefly by the arrival in Italy of certain learned Greeks, fugitives from Constantinople. Under their influence the study of the ancients in the original sources came again into vogue; the newly discovered printing-press multiplied copies of the classics; the Medici drew scholars to their court; in particular *Bessarion* (d. 1472) and *Ficinus* (d. 1499) were influential in bringing about a better acquaintance with ancient philosophy. And so gradually a band of men classically educated opposed itself to the stereotyped, uncritical, tasteless manner in which the sciences had been hitherto cultivated; new ideas came into circulation; and the free, universal, thinking spirit of antiquity was born afresh. Classical studies found a fruitful soil in Germany also. *Reuchlin* (b. 1455), *Melanchthon*, and *Erasmus* were their advocates; and the humanistic party, in its hostility to the scholastic aims, belonged to the most decided influences that were now in favour of the advancing cause of the Reformation.

4. The Reformation.—All the new elements—the struggle against scholasticism, the interests of letters, the striving for national independency, the endeavours of the state and the corporations to emancipate themselves from the church and the hierarchy, the direction of men's minds to nature and actuality, above all the longing on the part of consciousness for autonomy, for freedom from the fetters of authority—all these elements found their rallying-point and their focus in the German Reformation. Originating primarily in national interests and interests of religious practice, falling early too into an erroneous course, and issuing in a dogmatic ecclesiastical one-sidedness, the Reformation was still in its principle and genuine consequences a rupture of thought with authority, a protest against the shackles of the *positive*, a return of consciousness from its self-alienation into itself. Thought returned from the yonder to the here, from the extra-mundane to the intra-mundane: nature and the moral laws of nature, humanity as such, one's own heart, one's own conscience, subjective conviction, in short, the rights of the subject began at last to assume some value. Marriage, if considered hitherto not indeed immoral, but yet inferior to self-denial and celibacy, appeared now as something divine, as a law of nature imposed by God himself. Poverty, too, appeared no longer an object in itself; though previously considered superior to riches, and though the contemplative life of the monk had hitherto ranked higher than the worldly activity of the layman supported by the labour of his hands. Religious freedom assumed the place of obedience (the third vow of the church): monkhood and priesthood had come to an end. In the same way, with reference to knowledge, man returned to himself from the alien region of authority. He had become convinced that within himself must the entire work of salvation be accomplished; that reconciliation and grace were his own business, and independent of the interposition of priests; that he stood to God in a direct relation. In his belief, in his conviction, in the depths of his own soul, he found his only true being. As then Protestantism sprang from the same spirit as the new philosophy, it presupposes the closest connexion with this latter. Naturally, however, there will be a special distinction between the manner in which the new spirit realizes itself as religious principle, and that in which it realizes itself as scientific principle. But, as said, in both, in the Protestantism of religion as well as in the Protestantism of reason, this principle is one and the same; and in the progress of history both interests are found to advance hand in hand. For, the reduction of religion to its simple elements (a reduction which Protestantism had once for all begun, but which it had only carried forward to the Bible, and there left), must of necessity be continued farther, and closed only with the ultimate, original, supra-historical elements,—that is, with reason, reason that knows itself the source of all philosophy as of all religion.



5. The Growth of the Natural Sciences.—To all these movements, which are to be regarded not only as signs and symptoms, but as causes of the various revolutions of the epoch, there is yet another to be added, which very much facilitated and assisted the emancipa-

tion of philosophy from the fetters of the church, and that is, the coming into existence of natural science, and of the observation of nature by the method of experience. It is an epoch of the most penetrating and fruitful discoveries in the province of nature. The discovery of America and that of the maritime route to the Eastern Indies, had already widened the visible horizon; but still greater revolutions are associated with the names of *Copernicus* (d. 1543), and *Kepler* (d. 1631), and *Galileo* (d. 1642),—revolutions which could not possibly remain without influence on the prevalent idea of the universe, and the entire mode of thought of the time, and which more especially produced a mighty inroad on the authority of the church. Scholasticism, withdrawn from nature and the world of experience, blind to that which lay at its feet, had lived in a dreamlike intellectualism; but nature was restored to honour now, and became, in her majesty and her glory, in her fulness and her endlessness, again the immediate object of contemplation; while natural investigation demonstrated itself as an essential object of philosophy, and empirical science consequently as a universal human interest. From this epoch empirical science dates its historical importance; and only from this epoch does it possess a continuous history. The consequences of the new movement admit of an easy estimate. Scientific inquiry not only destroyed a variety of transmitted errors and prejudices, but, what was highly important, it turned the thoughts and attention of men to the mundane, to the actual; fostering and encouraging the habit of reflection, the feeling of self-dependence, the awakened spirit of scrutiny and doubt. The position of a science of observation and experiment presupposes an independent self-consciousness on the part of the individual, a wresting of himself loose from authority and the creed of authority,—in a word, it presupposes scepticism. Hence the originators of modern philosophy, *Bacon* and *Descartes*, began with scepticism; the former in requiring an abstraction from all prejudices and preconceived opinions as condition of the study of nature, and the latter in his postulate, to doubt at first all. No wonder that between natural science and ecclesiastical orthodoxy there presently broke out an envenomed struggle,—a struggle which was to cease only with the overthrow of the latter.

6. Bacon of Verulam.—The philosopher who, for



principle, consciously adopted experience, or an observing and experimenting investigation of nature, and that, too, in express contrast to scholasticism and the previous method of science, and who, on that account, is frequently placed at the head of modern philosophy, is (the just named) *Bacon*, Baron of Verulam (b. 1561, Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal, and Lord Chancellor under James I., subsequently disgraced, d. 1626—a man not without weaknesses of character).

The sciences, says Bacon, have hitherto found themselves in a most deplorable condition. Philosophy, lost in barren and fruitless logomachies, has, during so many centuries, produced not a single work or experiment capable of bringing any actual advantage to the life of the race. Logic hitherto has subserved rather the confirmation of error than the investigation of truth. How is this? From what does this poverty of the sciences in the past proceed? From this, that they have been separated from their root in nature and experience. Several causes are responsible for this: first, the old and inveterate prejudice that man would derogate from his own dignity, did he occupy himself much or long with experiments and the things of matter; secondly, superstition, and the blind fanaticism of religion, which in every age has proved itself the irreconcilable foe to natural science; thirdly, the exclusive attention of the Romans to morals and politics, and of the better heads among Christians to these and to theology; fourthly, the veneration of antiquity and the overwhelming authority of certain philosophers; lastly, a certain despondency and despair of being able to overcome the many and great difficulties which oppose themselves to the investigation of nature. To all these causes the depression of the sciences is to be traced. What is wanted now, then, is a thorough renewal, regeneration, and reformation of the sciences from their lowest foundations upwards: we must find at all costs, a new basis of knowledge, new principles of science. This reformation and radical cure of the sciences is dependent on two conditions: objectively, on the reduction of science to experience and the study of nature; subjectively, on the purification of the mind and intellect from all abstract theories and transmitted prejudices. These conditions united yield the true method of natural science, which is no other than the method of induction. On correct induction depends the salvation of science.

Bacon's philosophy is comprised in these propositions. His historical import, then, is in general this, that he directed anew the observation and reflection of his contemporaries to actual fact, proximately to nature; that he raised experience, which hitherto had been only matter of chance, into a separate and independent object of thought; and that he awoke a general consciousness of its indispensable necessity. To have established the principle of empirical science, of a thinking exploration of nature, this is his merit. But still only in the proposing of this *principle* does his import lie: of any *contained matter* of the Baconian philosophy, we can, in rigour, not speak; although he has attempted (in his work *De Augmentis Scientiarum*), a systematic encyclopædia of the sciences on a new principle of classification, and has scattered through his writings a profusion of fine and fertile observations (which are still in vogue for mottoes).

7. The Italian Philosophers of the Transition Period.—With Bacon there must be mentioned some others who prepared the way for the introduction of the new philosophy. First of all a series of Italian philosophers who belonged to the second half of the sixteenth and first half of the seventeenth century. With the tendencies of the period already described, these philosophers cohere in two ways: firstly, in their enthusiasm for nature, an enthusiasm which, with all of them, has more or less of a pantheistic character (Vanini, for example, entitled one of his writings, 'Of the wonderful Secrets of the Queen and Goddess of Mortals, Nature'), and secondly, in their devotion to the ancient systems of philosophy. The best known of them are these: *Cardan* (1501-1575), *Campanella* (1568-1639), *Giordano Bruno* (-1600), *Vanini* (1586-1619). They were all men of passionate, enthusiastic, impetuous nature; wild, unsettled character; roving and adventurous life: men animated by an intense thirst for knowledge, but who gave way withal to extravagant wildness of imagination, and to a mania for secret astrological and geomantic arts; on which account they passed away without leaving any fruitful or enduring result. They were all persecuted by the hierarchy; two of them (Bruno and Vanini) perished at the stake. In their entire historical appearance they are, like the eruptions of a volcano, rather precursors and prophets, than originators and founders of a new era of philosophy.



The most important of them is *Giordano Bruno*. He revived the old (Stoic) idea, that the world is a living being, and that a single soul pervades the universe. The burthen of all his thoughts is the deepest enthusiasm for nature, and for the reason which lives and works in nature. This reason, according to him, is the artificer within, who fashions matter, and reveals himself in the shapes of the world. Out from the interior of the root, or of the seed-grain, he causes the stems to spring, from these the branches, from the branches boughs, and so on to buds and leaves and flowers. All is inwardly planned, prepared, and perfected. In the same way does this universal reason, from its place within, recall the sap from the fruits and the blossoms, to the branches, etc., again. The world is thus an infinite animal in which all lives and moves in the most varied manner. Bruno characterizes the relation of reason to matter quite in the Aristotelian way: they are to each other as form and matter, as actuality and potentiality; neither is without the other; form is the internal impelling power of matter, matter as infinite possibility, as infinitely formable, is the mother of all forms. The other side of Bruno's philosophizing, his theory of the forms of knowledge (Topic), which takes up the greater part of his writings, as of smaller philosophical value, shall be here omitted.

8. Jacob Böhm.—Like Bacon in England, and Bruno in Italy, Böhm bespeaks in Germany the same movement of transition that is now before us. Each of the three in a manner that is characteristic of his nationality: Bacon as champion of empiricism, Bruno as representative of a poetic pantheism, Böhm as father of theosophical mysticism. In depth of principle, Böhm belongs to a much later period; but in imperfection of form he retrocedes to the time of the middle-age mystics; while, in an historico-genetic point of view, again, he is connected with the German Reformation and the various Protestant elements at that time in ferment. We shall best place him among the precursors and prophets of the new era.

Jacob Böhm was born in 1575, at Altseidenburg, not far from Görlitz, in Upper Lusatia. His parents were poor country-people. When a boy he herded the cattle; when older, and after he had learned in the village-school to read and barely write, he was apprenticed to a shoemaker in Görlitz; and finally, having accomplished his travels as journeyman, he settled down, in 1594, at Gör-

litz, as master of his trade. He had experienced revelations or mysterious visions even in his youth, but still more at a later period, when the longing for truth took possession of him, and his soul, already disquieted by the religious conflicts of the time, found itself in a state of highly-wrought excitement. Besides the Bible, Böhm had read only a few mystic books of theosophic and alchemistic import, for example, those of Paracelsus. Now, then, that he set himself to the writing down of his thoughts, or, as he called them, his visions (illuminations), the want of all previous culture at once disclosed itself. Hence the painful struggling of the thought with the expression, which not unfrequently, nevertheless, attains to dialectic point and poetic beauty. In consequence of his first work *Aurora*, composed in the year 1612, Böhm fell into trouble with the rector at Görlitz, Gregorius Richter, who publicly denounced the book from the pulpit, and even reviled the person of its author. He was prohibited by the magistrates from the writing of books, an interdict which he observed for years, till at length the edict of the spirit became all too strong in him, and he resumed composition. Böhm was a plain, quiet, gentle, and modest man. He died in 1624.

It is exceedingly difficult to give in a few words any statement of the theosophy of Böhm, inasmuch as Böhm has been able to give birth to his thoughts, not in the form of thoughts, but in that of sensuous figures, of obscure images of nature, and for the expression of them has frequently availed himself of the strangest and most arbitrary expedients. There reigns in his writings a twilight, so to speak, as in a Gothic dome,[1] into which the light falls through windows variously stained. Hence the magical effect which he produces on many minds. The main thought of Böhm's philosophizing is this: that self-distinction, inner diremption, is the essential character of spirit, and consequently of God, so far as God is to be conceived as spirit. To Böhm God is a living spirit only if, and so far as, he comprehends within himself difference from himself, and through this other, this difference within himself, is manifest, is an object, is a cognising consciousness. The difference of God in God is alone the source of his and of all actuosity and spontaneity, the spring and jet of self-actuating life, that out of its own self creates and produces consciousness. Böhm is exhaustless in metaphors to render intelligible this negativity in God, this self-differentiation and self-externalization of God into a world. Vast width without end, he says, stands in need of a straitness and confiningness in which it may manifest itself; for in width without confinement manifestation were impossible: there must, therefore, be a drawing-in and a closing-in through which a manifestation may be realized. See, he elsewhere exclaims, were will only of one sort, then mind had only one quality, and were a moveless thing, that lay ever still, and did nothing further than always one and the same thing; there were no joy in it, neither any art nor science of severals, and there were no wisdom; all were a nothing, and there were properly no mind nor will to anything, for all were only the sole and single. It cannot be said, then, that the entire God is in a single will and a single being: there is a difference. Nothing without contrariety can become manifest to itself; for were there nothing to resist it, it would proceed perpetually of itself outwards, and would not return again into itself; but if it enter not again into itself, as into that out of which it originally went, nothing is known to it of its primal being. Böhm expresses the above thought quite perfectly, when, in his answer to theosophical questions, he says: the reader is to understand that in Yes and No consist all things, be they divine, diabolic, terrestrial, or however they may be named. The One, as the Yes, is pure power and love, and it is the truth of God, and God himself. He were incognisable in Himself, and in Him there were no joy or upliftingness, nor yet feeling, without the No. The No is a counter-stroke of the Yes, or of the truth, in order that the truth may be manifest and a something, wherein there may be a *contrarium*, wherein there may be the eternal love, moving, feeling, and willing. For a one has nothing in itself that it can will, unless it double itself that it may be two; neither can it feel itself in oneness, but in twoness it feels itself. In short, without difference, without antithesis, without duality, there is, according to Böhm, no knowledge, no consciousness possible; only in its other, in its opposite (that is yet identical with its own being), does something become clear and conscious to itself. It lay at hand to connect this fundamental idea, the thought of a one that in itself differentiated itself, with the doctrine of the Trinity; and the trinitarian schema accordingly, in many an application and illustration, underlies Böhm's

[1] See Preface, p. xi.

conception of the divine life and differentiating process. Schelling afterwards took up anew these ideas of Böhm's, and philosophically reconstructed them.

Were we to assign to the theosophy of Böhm a place in the history of the development of later philosophy correspondent to the inner worth of its principle, we should most appropriately set it as a complement over against the system of Spinoza. If Spinoza teaches the reflux of everything finite into the eternal One, Böhm demonstrates the efflux, the issue, of the finite out of the eternal One, and the inner necessity of this efflux and issue, inasmuch as, without self-diremption, the being of this One were rather a non-being. Compared with Descartes, Böhm has certainly more profoundly seized the notion of self-consciousness and the relation of the finite to God. His historical position, however, is in other respects much too isolated and exceptional, his form of statement much too troubled, to allow us to incorporate him without any hesitation in a series of systematic evolutions otherwise continuous and genetically coherent.

## XXIV.—*Descartes.*

THE originator and father of modern philosophy is *Descartes*. Whilst, on the one hand, like the thinkers of the transition-period, he has completely broken with previous philosophy, and once again considered all from the very beginning; he has, on the other hand, again, not merely, like Bacon, proposed a principle that is only methodological; or, like Böhm and the contemporary Italians, given expression to philosophical glances without methodic foundation; but he has, from the stand-point of entire freedom from presupposition, introduced a new, *positive*, materially full, philosophical principle, and then endeavoured to develop from it, by method of continuous proof, the leading propositions of a system. The want of presupposition and the newness of his principle constitute him the originator, its inner fruitfulness the founder of modern philosophy.

René Descartes (Renatus Cartesius), was born in 1596 at La Haye in Touraine. Already in his early years, dissatisfied with the prevalent philosophy, or rather altogether sceptical in its regard, he resolved, on completion of his studies, to bid adieu to all school learning, and



henceforward to gain knowledge only from himself and the great book of the world, from nature and the observation of man. When twenty years of age, he exchanged the life of science for the life of the camp, serving as a volunteer first under Maurice of Orange, and afterwards under Tilly. The inclination to philosophical and mathematical inquiries was too powerful in him, however, to allow him permanently to quit these. In 1621, the design of a reformation of science on a firmer foundation, being now, after long internal struggles, ripe within him, he left the army; passed some time in various pretty extensive travels; made a considerable stay in Paris; abandoned finally his native country in 1629; and betook himself to Holland, in order to live there unknown and undisturbed wholly for philosophy and the prosecution of his scientific projects. In Holland, though not without many vexatious interferences on the part of fanatical theologians, he lived twenty years, till in 1649, in consequence of an invitation on the part of Queen Christina of Sweden, he left it for Stockholm, where, however, he died the very next year, 1650.

The subject-matter of the philosophy of Descartes, and the course it took in his own mind, may be concisely stated in the following summary:—

(*a.*) If we are ever to establish any fixed and permanent article of knowledge, we must begin with the foundation, we must root out and destroy every presupposition and assumption to which from our childhood we may have been accustomed,—in a word, we must doubt all things that appear even in the least degree uncertain. We must not only doubt, therefore, of the existence of the things of sense, since the senses often deceive, but even of the truths of mathematics and geometry: for however certain the proposition may appear, that the sum of two and three is five, or that a square has four sides, we cannot know whether any truth of knowledge is at all intended for us finite beings, whether God has not created us rather for mere opinion and error. It is advisable, therefore, to doubt all, nay, even to deny all, to assume all as false. (*b.*) In thus assuming everything as false, in regard to which any doubt can be at all entertained, there is one thing, nevertheless, that we cannot deny: this truth, namely, that we ourselves, we who so think, exist. Precisely from this rather, that I assume all things as false, that I doubt all things, there evidently follows

my own existence, the existence even in doubting, of the subject that doubts. The proposition, consequently, I think, therefore I am (*Cogito, ergo sum*), is the first, most certain proposition that meets every one who attempts to philosophize. On this most certain of all propositions depends the certainty of all other articles of knowledge. The objection of *Gassendi*, that existence may be equally well inferred from every other human function, as from that of thought,—that it may be equally well said, I walk, therefore I am, —does not apply, for of none of my actions am I absolutely certain, unless of my thought. (*c.*) From the proposition, I think, therefore I am, there follows further now the whole constitution of the nature of spirit. In investigating, namely, who then are we, who thus hold all things for false that are different from us, we see clearly that, without destroying our personality, we can think away from ourselves everything that belongs to us, except our thought alone. Thought persists, even when it denies all else. There cannot belong any extension, therefore, any figure, or anything else that the body may possess, to our true nature: to that there can belong thought only. I am, then, essentially a thinking being, or thinking being simply, that is to say, spirit, soul, intelligence, reason. To think is my substance. The mind, then, can be perfectly and clearly known in itself, in its own independency, without any of the attributes that attach to the body; in its notion there is nothing that belongs to the notion of body. It is impossible, consequently, to apprehend it by means of any sensuous conception, or to form to one's-self a picture of it: it is apprehended wholly and solely through pure intelligence. (*d.*) From the proposition, I think, therefore I am, there follows still further the universal rule of all certainty. I am certain that, because I think, I exist. What is it that gives me the certainty of this proposition? Evidently nothing else than the clear perception that it is impossible for any one to think and not be. From this, then, there follows of itself, and for all other knowledge, the criterion of certainty: that is certain, whatever I recognise as clearly and evidently true, whatever my reason recognises as true with the same irresistible distinctness as the above *cogito ergo sum*. (*e.*) This rule, however, is only a *principle of certainty*, it does not supply me yet with a *knowledge of the body of truth*. We



review, therefore, under application of the rule, all our thoughts or ideas, in order to discover something that shall be objectively true. But our ideas are partly innate, partly contributed from without, partly formed by ourselves. Amongst them all we find that of God eminent and first. The question occurs, Whence do we get this idea? Evidently not from ourselves: this idea can only be implanted in us by a being that possesses in his own nature the complete fulness of every perfection; that is, it can be implanted in us only by an actually existent God. On the question, how is it that I am capable of thinking a nature more perfect than my own? I find myself always driven to this answer, that I must have received it from some being, whose nature *actually is* more perfect. All the attributes of God, the more I contemplate them, demonstrate that the ideas of them could not be produced by me alone. For although I may possess the idea of a substance, as I am a substance, the same reason would dispossess me of the idea of infinite substance, as I am only finite substance. Such an idea as infinite substance can be produced in me only by an actually infinite substance. And let it not be thought that the notion of the infinite is acquired by means of abstraction and negation, as darkness, it may be, is negation of light; for I see rather that the infinite has more reality than the finite, and that therefore the notion of the infinite must, in a certain sort, be earlier in me than that of the finite. But if this clear and distinct idea, which I have of infinite substance, possesses more objective reality than any other, neither is there any other of which I can possibly have less reason to doubt. It remains, then, knowing, as I now do, that it is from God that the idea of God has come to me, only to investigate in what manner it *has* come. It cannot possibly have been acquired through the senses, whether consciously or unconsciously; for ideas of sense originate in external affections of the organs of sense, and it is self-evident that no such origin can be predicated of it. Neither can I have invented it, for I can as little add to, as subtract from it. But as we have seen, if it is not contributed from without, and if it is not formed by myself, it must be innate—just as the idea of my own self is innate. The first proof that can be led for the existence of God, then, is, that I find the idea of God existing in me, and that of this existence there must be a cause. Further, I infer

the existence of God from my own imperfection, and, in particular, from my knowledge of it. For as I am acquainted with certain perfections which belong not to myself, there must evidently exist a being more perfect than I am, on whom I, for my part, depend, and from whom I have received whatever I possess. The best and most evident proof for the existence of God, finally, is the proof that follows from the very notion of him. My mind, in observing amongst its various ideas one that is the most eminent of all, that namely of the most perfect being, perceives also that this idea not only possesses, like all the rest, the possibility of existence, that is, contingent existence, but that it likewise involves necessary existence. Just as I infer for every possible triangle that equality of its three angles to two right angles which lies in the idea of the triangle in general, so from the necessary existence that belongs to the idea of the most perfect being, do I infer his actual existence. No other idea that I possess involves necessary existence, but from this idea of the Supreme Being, necessary existence is, without contradiction, inseparable. It is only our prejudices that prevent us from seeing this. Because we are accustomed, namely, in the case of all other things, to separate the notion of them from the existence of them, and because also we often form ideas in our own fancy, it is easy for us, in regard to the Supreme Being, to fall into doubt as to whether this idea too be not one of the fancied ones, or at least such as does not in its notion involve existence. This proof is essentially different from that of Anselm of Canterbury, as disputed by Thomas, the reasoning of which is this :—'Consideration demonstrates the word God to mean that which must be thought as what is greatest; but to be in actuality as well as in thought, is greater than to be in thought alone; therefore, God exists not only in thought, but in fact.' But this conclusion is manifestly vicious, and we ought to infer instead, Therefore God must be *thought* as existing in fact; from which proposition plainly the reality of his existence is no necessary result. My proof, on the other hand, is this : whatever we clearly and distinctly perceive to belong to the true and unalterable nature of anything, to its essence, its form, that may be predicated of it. Now we found, on investigating God, that existence belongs to his true and unalterable nature, and, therefore, we may legitimately predicate existence of God. In the idea of the



most perfect being necessary existence is involved, not because of any fiction of our understanding, but because existence belongs to his eternal and unalterable nature. (*f.*) This result, the existence of God, is of the greatest consequence. At first it was obligatory on us to renounce all certainty, and to doubt of everything, because we knew not whether error belonged not to the nature of man, whether God had not created us to err. But now we know, by reference to the innate idea and the necessary attributes of God, that he possesses veracity, and that it were a contradiction did he deceive us or cause in us error. For even if the ability to deceive were regarded as a proof of superiority, the will to deceive would be certainly a proof of wickedness. Our reason consequently can never apprehend an object that were possibly untrue, so far, that is, as it *is* apprehended, or so far as it is clearly and distinctly known. For God were justly to be named a deceiver, had he given us so perverted a judgment that it took falsehood for truth. And thus the absolute doubt with which we began is now removed. All certainty flows for us from the being of God. Assured of the existence of an undeceiving God, it is enough, for the certainty of any knowledge, that we clearly and distinctly know its object. (*g.*) From the true idea of God there result the principles of natural philosophy, or the theory of the duality of substance. *That* is substance which requires for its existence the existence of nothing else. In this (highest) sense only God is substance. God as infinite substance has the ground of his existence in himself, is the cause of himself. The two created substances, on the contrary, thinking substance and bodily substance, mind and matter, are substances only in the less restricted sense of the term; they may be placed under the common definition, that they are things requiring for their existence only the co-operation of God. Each of these two substances has an attribute constitutive of its nature and being, and to which all its other characteristics may be collectively reduced. Extension is the attribute and being of matter; thought is the being of spirit. For everything else that may be predicated of body presupposes extension, and is but a mode of extension, while, similarly, everything that we find in spirit is only a modification of thought. A substance to which thought directly appertains is called spirit, a substance which is the immediate sub-

strate of extension is called body. Thought and extension are not only different from each other, but it is the very nature of these substances to negate each other; for spirit is not only cognizable without the attributes of body, but it is in itself the negation of the attributes of body. Spirit and body are essentially diverse, and possess nothing in common. (*h.*) In an anthropological reference (to omit the physics of Descartes, as only of subordinate interest philosophically), there results from this antagonistic relation between spirit and matter, a similar antagonistic relation between soul and body. Matter being essentially extension, spirit essentially thought, and neither having anything in common, the union of soul and body can only be conceived as a mechanical one. The body, for its part, is to be regarded as an automaton artificially constructed by God, as it were a statue or a machine formed by God of earth. In this body there dwells the soul, closely, but not inwardly, connected with it. The union of the two is but a forcible collocation, since both, as self-subsistent factors, are not only different from each other, but essentially opposed to each other. The self-dependent body is a completed machine, in which the accession of the soul alters nothing; the latter, indeed, may produce certain additional movements in the former, but the wheel-work of this machine remains as it was. The indwelling thought alone distinguishes this machine from others; and the lower animals, consequently, as unpossessed of self-consciousness and thought, are necessarily assigned only the same rank as other machines. It is here, now, that the question of the seat of the soul becomes of interest. If body and soul are mutually independent, essentially opposed substances, it will be impossible for them to interpenetrate and pervade each other; contact of any kind, indeed, will be impossible between them unless by force, and in a single point. This point in which the soul has its seat is not to Descartes the whole brain, but only the inmost part of it, a small gland in the midst of its substance, which is named the *pineal gland*. The proof of this assumption depends on the circumstance that all the other parts of the brain are double, and consequently disqualified from acting as organ of the soul, which, so provided, would necessarily perceive things in a twofold manner. There is no other spot in the body capable of uniting impressions equally with the pineal gland, and this gland, therefore, is the



capital seat of the soul, and the *locus* of formation for all our thoughts.

Having thus developed the leading ideas of the Cartesian system, we shall now concisely recapitulate the characteristics of its historical and philosophical position. Descartes is the founder of a new epoch in philosophy, because, *firstly*, he enunciated the postulate of an entire removal of any presupposition. This absolute protest maintained by Descartes against the acceptance of anything for true, because it is so given to us, or so found by us, and not something determined and established by thought, became thenceforward the fundamental principle of the moderns. Descartes first proposed, *secondly*, the principle of self-consciousness, of the pure, self-subsistent ego, or the conception of mind, thinking substance, as individual self, as a singular ego—a new principle, a conception unknown to antiquity. Descartes, *thirdly*, gave complete distinctness to the antithesis of being and thought, existence and consciousness; and announced the conciliation of this antithesis as a philosophical problem —the problem, for the future, of all modern philosophy. But these great ideas, distinctive of an epoch in the history of philosophy, are suggestive, at the same time, of the philosophical defects of the Cartesian system. *Firstly*, Descartes empirically assumed the constituents of his system, particularly his three substances. It appears, indeed, from the protest with which the system begins, that nothing ready-given or ready-found is to be assumed, but that all is to be deduced from thought. But this protest is not so serious in the event; what has been apparently set aside is taken up again unchanged, once the principle of certainty has been made good. And hence it is that Descartes *finds ready to hand*, directly given, as well the idea of God as the two substances. In order to deduce them, he appears, indeed, to abstract from much that is empirically present, but when he has abstracted from everything else, the two substances remain behind in the end simply as residue. That is, then, they are empirically assumed. It is a *second* defect that Descartes isolates the two sides of the antithesis, thought and being, in their mutual relation. He makes both, 'substances;' elements, that is, which mutually exclude and negate each other. The being of matter he places *only* in extension, or in pure self-excludedness; that of spirit *only* in thought, or intension.

pure self-includedness. They stand opposed to each other like centrifugal and centripetal forces. But with such a conception of spirit and matter any internal assimilation of them becomes impossible; where the two sides meet and unite, as in man, this they are enabled to do only by a forcible act of creation, only by the divine assistance. Descartes, nevertheless, demands and endeavours to find a conciliation of the two sides. But precisely the inability really to overcome the dualism of his position is the *third* and capital defect of his system. It is true that in the statement, 'I think, therefore I am,' or 'I am thinking,' the two sides, being and thinking, are conjoined together, but then they are so conjoined only to be established as mutually independent. To the question, How does the ego relate itself to what is extended? it can only be answered, As thinking, that is, as negative, as excludent. And thus for the conciliation of the two sides there remains only the idea of God. Both substances are created by God, both are held together by the will of God, and through the idea of God is it that the ego obtains the certainty of the existence of what is extended. God is thus, in a measure, a *deus ex machina*, in order to bring about the unity of the ego with the matter of extension. The externality of any such process is obvious.

It is this defect in the system of Descartes that acts as conditioning motive to the systems that follow.

## XXV.—*Geulinx and Malebranche.*

DESCARTES had placed mind and matter, consciousness and the world, in complete separation from each other. Both are for him substances, independent powers, mutually exclusive contraries. Spirit (that is to say, in his conception, the simple self, the ego) is essentially what distinguishes itself from, what excludes, matter,—what abstracts from sense. Matter, on the other hand, is essentially what is opposed to thought. But the relation of the two principles being thus determined, the question involuntarily occurs, How then is it possible for any connexion to have place between them? Both being absolutely different, nay, mutually opposed, how is it possible for the affections of the body, on the one hand, to act on the soul, and how, on the other hand, is it possible for the volitions of the soul to act on the body? It was at this point that the Cartesian *Arnold Geulinx* (born 1625 at Antwerp, died 1669 as Professor of Philosophy at Leyden), took up the system of Descartes in order to procure for it a more consistent form. For his part, Geulinx is of opinion that neither the soul acts directly on the body, nor the body directly on the soul. Not the former: since I can at discretion manifoldly determine or influence my body, but I am not the cause of this, for I know not how it happens, I know not in what manner influence is propagated from my brain to my limbs, and I cannot possibly suppose myself to do that in regard to which I am unable to understand how it is done. But if I am unable to produce movement within my body, still less must I be able to produce movement without my body. I am only a spectator of this world, then; the only action that is mine, that remains for me, is contemplation. But this very contemplation can only take place mysteriously. For how do we obtain our perception of an external world? The external world cannot possibly act directly on us. For, even if the external objects cause, in the act of vision say, an image in my eye, or an impression in my brain, as if in so much wax, this impression, or this image, is still something corporeal or material merely; it cannot enter into my spirit, therefore, which is essentially disparate from matter. There is nothing left us, then, but to seek in God the means of uniting the two sides. It is God alone who can conform outer to inner, inner to outer; who, converting external objects into internal ideas,—ideas of the soul,—can render visible to the latter the world of sense, and realize the determinations of the will within into facts without. Every operation, then, that combines outer and inner, the soul and the world, is neither an effect of the spirit nor of the world, but simply an immediate act of God. When I exercise volition, consequently, it is not from my will, but from the will of God that the proposed bodily motions follow. On *occasion* of my will, God moves my body; on *occasion* of an affection of my body, God excites an idea in my mind: the one is but the occasional cause of the other (and hence the name, *Occasionalism*, of this theory). My will, nevertheless, moves not the mover to move my limbs; but he who imparted motion to matter, and assigned it its laws, even he created my will also, and he has so united together

these most diverse things, material motion and mental volition, that, when my will wills, such a movement follows as it wills, and when the movement follows, my will wills it, not that either, however, acts or exerts physical influence on the other. On the contrary, just as the agreement of two watches which go so perfectly together, that both strike exactly the same hour at once, results not from any mutual influence on their part, but simply from the fact that they were both set together; so the agreement of the bodily motion and the mental volition depends only on that sublime artificer who has produced in them this inexplicable community. Geulinx, then, it is obvious, has only brought the fundamental dualism of Descartes to its ultimate point. If Descartes called the union of soul and body a violent collocation, Geulinx calls it, in so many words, a miracle. The strict consequence of such a conception, then, is, that there is possible not any immanent, but only a transcendent principle of union.

2. Analogous to the theory of Geulinx, and equally at the same time only a consequence and further extension of the philosophizing of Descartes, is the philosophical position of *Nicholas Malebranche* (born at Paris 1638; entered, at the age of twenty-two, the *congrégation de l'oratoire*, determined to the prosecution of philosophy by the writings of Descartes; died, after many troubles with theological opponents, 1715).

Malebranche takes his point of departure from the Cartesian view of the relation between soul and body. These are rigorously distinguished from each other, and in their essence mutually opposed. How does the soul (the ego) attain, then, to a knowledge of the external world, to ideas of corporeal things? For only in the spiritual form of ideas is it possible for external, and, in particular, material things, to be present in spirit; or the soul cannot have the thing itself, but only an idea of it, the thing itself remaining without the soul. The soul can derive these ideas neither from itself, nor from things. Not from itself: for any power of generating the ideas of things purely from its own self, cannot be ascribed to the soul as a limited being; what is merely an idea of the soul does not on that account actually exist, and what actually exists depends not for its existence and apprehension on the goodwill of the soul; the ideas of things are given to us, they are no product of our own thought. But just as little does the soul derive these ideas from the things themselves. It is impossible to think that impressions of material things take place on the soul, which is immaterial, not to mention that these infinitely numerous and complex impressions would, in impinging on one another, reciprocally derange and destroy one another. The soul, then,—there is no other resource,—must see things in a third something that is above the antithesis, that is, in God. God, the absolute substance, contains all things in himself, he sees all things in himself according to their true nature and being. For the same reason in him, too, are the ideas of all things; he is the entire world as an intellectual or ideal world. It is God, then, who is the means of mediating between the ego and the world. In him we see the ideas, inasmuch as we ourselves are so completely contained in him, so accurately united to him, that we may call him the place of spirits. Our volition and our sensation in reference to things proceed from him; it is he who retains together the objective and the subjective worlds, which, in themselves, are separate and apart.



The philosophy of Malebranche, then, in its single leading thought that we see and know all things in God, demonstrates itself to be, like the occasionalism of Geulinx, a special attempt to overcome the dualism of the Cartesian philosophy on its own principles and under its own presuppositions.

3. Two defects or inner contradictions of the philosophy of Descartes are now apparent. Descartes conceives mind and matter as substances, as mutually exclusive contraries, and sets himself forthwith to find their union. But any union in the case of such presuppositions can only be one-sided and external. Thought and existence being each a substance, must only negate and mutually exclude each other. Unnatural theories, like the above, become, then, unavoidable consequences. The simplest remedy is this, to abandon the presupposition, to remove its independency from either contrary, to conceive both not as substances, but as forms of the manifestation of a substance. This remedy is particularly indicated and suggested by another circumstance. According to Descartes, God is the infinite substance,—in the special sense of the word, the only substance. Mind and matter are also, indeed, substances, but only in relation to each other; while in relation to God, again,

they are dependent and not substances. This, properly speaking, is a contradiction. It were more consistent to say, that neither the thinking individuals nor the material things, are anything self-subsistent, but only the one substance,—God. God only has real being; whatever being attaches to finite things is unsubstantial, and they themselves are but accidents of the one true substance. Malebranche approaches this conclusion; the corporeal world is at least for him ideally sublated into God, in whom are the eternal archetypes of all things. It is Spinoza, however, who, logically consequent, directly enunciates this conclusion of the accidentality of the finite and the exclusive substantiality of God. His system, then, is the truth and completion of that of Descartes.

## XXVI.—*Spinoza.*

BARUCH SPINOZA was born in Amsterdam on the 24th of November 1632. His parents, Jews of Portuguese extraction, were well-to-do tradespeople, and gave him the education of a scholar. He studied with diligence the Bible and the Talmud. He soon exchanged, however, the study of theology for that of physics and the works of Descartes. About the same time, having long broken inwardly with Judaism, he broke with it outwardly also, without, however, formally embracing Christianity. In order to escape the persecutions of the Jews, who had excommunicated him, and with whom his life was in danger, he left Amsterdam and betook himself to Rhynsburg, near Leyden, but settled finally at the Hague, where, wholly absorbed in scientific pursuits, he lived in the greatest seclusion. He earned his living by the polishing of optical glasses, which his friends disposed of. The Elector of the Palatinate, Carl Ludwig, made him an offer of a philosophical chair at Heidelberg, with the promise of complete liberty of opinion; but Spinoza declined it. Delicate by nature, suffering from ill-health for years, Spinoza died of consumption on the 21st of February 1677, at the early age of forty-four. The cloudless purity and sublime tranquillity of a perfectly wise man were mirrored in his life. Abstemious, satisfied with little, master of his passions, never immoderately sad or glad, gentle and benevolent, of a character admirably pure, he faithfully followed the



doctrines of his philosophy, even in his daily life. His chief work, the *Ethic*, was published the year he died. He would have liked probably to have published it in his lifetime, but the hateful name of Atheist must have deterred him. His most intimate friend, Ludwig Mayer, a physician, in accordance with his will, superintended the publication after his death.

The system of Spinoza is supported on three fundamental notions, from which all the others follow with mathematical necessity. These notions are those of substance, attribute, and mode.

(*a.*) Spinoza starts from the Cartesian definition of substance: substance is that which, for its existence, stands in need of nothing else. This notion of substance being assumed, there can exist, according to Spinoza, only a single substance. What is through its own self alone is necessarily infinite, unconditioned and unlimited by anything else. Spontaneous existence is the absolute power to exist, which cannot depend on anything else, or find in anything else a limit, a negation of itself; only unlimited being is self-subsistent, substantial being. A plurality of infinites, however, is impossible; for one were indistinguishable from the other. A plurality of substances, as assumed by Descartes, is necessarily, therefore, a contradiction. It is possible for only one substance, and that an absolutely infinite substance, to exist. The given, finite reality necessarily presupposes such single, self-existent substance. It were a contradiction, that only the finite, not the infinite, should have existence; that there should be only what is conditioned and caused by something else, and not also what is self-existent and self-subsistent. The absolute substance is rather the real cause of all and every existence; it alone is actual, unconditioned being; it is the sole virtue of existence, and through this virtue everything finite is: without it there is nothing, with it there is all; all reality is comprehended in it, as, beside it, self-dependent being there is none; it is not only cause of all being, but it is itself all being; every special existence is only a modification (individualization), of the universal substance itself, which, by force of inner necessity, expands its own infinite reality into an immeasurable quantity of being, and comprises within itself every possible form of existence. This one substance is named by Spinoza God. As is self-evident, then, we must leave out of view here

the Christian idea of God, the conception of an individual, spiritual personality. Spinoza expressly declares that he entertains quite a different idea of God from Christians; he distinctly maintains that all existence, material existence included, springs directly from God as the single substance; and he laughs at those who see in the world aught but an accident of the divine substance itself. He recognises in the views of these a dualism which would annul the necessary unity of all things—a self-substantiation of the world, which would destroy the sole causality of God. The world is for him no product of the divine will that stands *beside* God, free: it is an emanation of the creative being of God, which being is, by its very nature, infinite. God, to Spinoza, is only the substance of things, and not anything else. The propositions, that there is only one God, and that the substance of all things is only one, are to him identical.

What properly is substance now? What is its positive nature? We have here a question that from the position of Spinoza is very hard to answer. Partly for this reason, that a definition, according to Spinoza, must include the proximate cause (be genetic) of what is to be defined, whilst substance, as increate, can have no cause external to itself. Partly, again, and chiefly for this reason, that to Spinoza, all determination is negation (*omnis determinatio est negatio*, though only an incidental expression, is the fundamental idea of the entire system), for determination implies a defect of existence, a relative non-being. Special, positive designations, then, would only reduce substance to something finite. Declarations in its regard, consequently, must be only negative and provisory, as, for example, it has no external cause, is not a many, cannot possibly be divided, etc. Spinoza is reluctant to say even that it is one, because this predicate may be easily taken as numerical, and then it might appear as if another, the many, were opposed to it. Thus there are left only such positive expressions as enunciate its absolute relation to its own self. It is in this sense that Spinoza says of it, it is the cause of itself, or its nature implies existence. And it is only another expression for the same thought when he calls substance eternal, for by eternity he understands existence itself, so far as it is conceived as following from the definition of the object, in the same sense in which geometricians speak of the eternal qualities of figures. Spinoza applies



to substance the predicate infinite also, so far as the notion of infinitude is identical to him with the notion of true being, with the absolute affirmation of existence. In the same manner the allegation, that God is free, expresses only what the others express, to wit, negatively, that all external force is excluded, and positively, that God is in agreement with himself, that his being corresponds to the laws of his nature.

In sum, there is only one infinite substance, excludent of all determination and negation from itself, the one being in every being,—God.

(*b.*) Besides infinite substance or God, Descartes had assumed two derivative and created substances, the one spirit or thought, the other matter or extension. These also re-appear here as the two ground-forms under which Spinoza subsumes all reality,—the two 'attributes' in which the single substance reveals itself to us, so far as it is the cause of all that is. How now,—this is the perplexing question, the Achilles' heel of the Spinozistic system,—are these attributes related to the infinite substance? Substance cannot wholly disappear in them; else it were determinate, limited, and in contradiction, therefore, to its own notion. If then these attributes do not exhaust the objective being of substance, it follows that they are determinations in which substance takes form for the subjective apprehension of understanding; or for behoof of understanding all is once for all divided into thought and extension. And this is the conception of Spinoza. An attribute is for him what understanding perceives in substance as constitutive of its nature. The two attributes are therefore determinations, which express the nature of substance in these precise forms, only for perception. Substance itself being unexhausted by any such specialties of form, the attributes must be conceived as but expressions of its nature for an understanding that is placed apart from it. That such understanding should perceive substance only under these precise two forms is indifferent to substance itself, which *impliciter* possesses an infinitude of attributes. That is to say, all possible attributes, not limitations, may be assumed for substance. It is only the human understanding that invests substance with the two specially mentioned, and exclusively with these two, for of all the notions of the understanding, they are the only ones actually positive or expressive of reality. To the understanding, sub-

stance is thought, then, considered under the attribute of thought, and extension, considered under the attribute of extension. In a word, the two attributes are but empirically derived determinations, that are incommensurate besides with the nature of substance. Substance stands behind them as the absolute infinite which cannot be comprehended in any such special notions. The attributes explain not what substance really is; and in its regard consequently appear contingent. Spinoza fails to supply any principle of union between the notion of absolute substance and the particular manner in which it manifests itself in the two attributes.

In their own natural relation, the attributes, as with Descartes, are to be directly opposed to each other. They are attributes of one and the same substance, it is true, but each is independent in itself, as independent, indeed, as the very substance which it is supposed *realiter* to represent. Between thought and extension, then, spirit and matter, there can be no mutual influence; what is material can only have material causes, what is spiritual only spiritual ones, as ideas, volition, etc. Neither spirit, consequently, can act on matter, nor matter on spirit. Thus far, then, Spinoza adheres to the Cartesian severance of spirit and matter. But, as referred to the notion of the single substance, both worlds are equally again one and the same; there is a perfect agreement between them, a thorough parallelism. One and the same substance is thought as present in both attributes—one and the same substance in the various forms of existence under either. 'The idea of the circle and the actual circle are the same thing, now under the attribute of thought and again under that of extension.' From the one substance there proceeds, in effect, only a single infinite series of things, but a series of things in a variety of forms, even after subjection primarily to one or other of the forms of the attributes. The various things exist, like substance itself, as well under the ideal form of thought, as under the real form of extension. For every spiritual form there is a correspondent corporeal one, as for every corporeal form a correspondent spiritual one. Nature and spirit are different, indeed, but they are not isolatedly apart: they are everywhere together, like type and antitype, like things and the ideas of things, like object and subject, in which last the object mirrors itself, or what *realiter* is, *idealiter* reflects



itself. The world were not the product of a single substance, if these two elements, thought and extension, were not, at every point in inseparable identity, united in it. Spinoza subjects, in particular, the relation between body and soul to the idea of this inseparable unity of spirit and matter, a unity which, according to him, pervades the whole of nature, but in various grades of perfection. And here we have his simple resolution of the problem, which, from the point of view of Descartes, was so difficult, and even inexplicable. In man, as everywhere else, extension and thought (the latter, in his case, not only as feeling and perception, but as self-conscious reason) are together and inseparable. The soul is the consciousness that has for its objects the associated body, and through the intervention of the body, the remaining corporeal world, so far as it affects the body; the body is the real organism whose states and affections consciously reflect themselves in the soul. But any influence of the one on the other does not for this very reason exist; soul and body are the same thing, but expressed in the one case only as conscious thought, in the other as material extension. They differ only in form, so far as the nature and life of the body, so far, that is, as the various corporeal impressions, movements, functions, which obey wholly and solely the laws of the material organism, spontaneously coalesce in the soul to the unity of consciousness, conception, thought.

(*c.*) The special individual forms which are ideas or material things, according as they are considered under the attribute of thought or under the attribute of extension, receive their explanation at the hands of Spinoza by reference to the notion of accident, or, as he names it, *modus*. By *modi* we are to understand, then, the various individual finite forms, in which infinite substance particularizes itself. The *modi* are to substance what the waves are to the sea—shapes that perpetually die away, that never are. Nothing finite is possessed of a self-subsistent individuality. The finite individual exists, indeed, because the unlimited productive power of substance must give birth to an infinite variety of particular finite forms; but it has no proper reality,—it exists only in substance. Finite things are only the last, the most subordinate, the most external terms of existence, in which the universal life gives itself specific forms, and they bear the stamp of finitude in that they are sub-

jected, without will, without resistance, to the causal chain that pervades this world. The divine substance is free only in the inner essence of its own nature, but individual things are not free, they are a prey to all the others with which they are connected. This is their finitude, indeed, that they are conditioned and determined, not by themselves, but by what is alien to them. They constitute the domain of pure necessity, within which each is free and independent only so far as power has been given it by nature to assert itself against the rest, and maintain intact its own existence and its proper and peculiar interests.

These are the fundamental notions, the fundamental features of the system of Spinoza. As for his *practical philosophy*, it may be characterized in a few words. Its main propositions follow of necessity from the metaphysical principles which we have just seen. And for first example we have the inadmissibleness of what is called free-will. For, man being only modus, what is applicable to the others is applicable to him; he is involved in the infinite series of conditional causes; and free-will, therefore, cannot be predicated of him. His will, like every other bodily function, must be determined by *something*, whether an impression from without or an impulse from within. Men believe themselves free, simply because they are conscious of their own acts, but not of the motives of them. In the same way, the notions, which we usually connect with the words good and bad, rest on an error, as follows at once from the simple notion of the absolute divine cause. Good and bad are not anything actual in things themselves, but only express relative notions suggested to us by our own comparison of things one with another. We form for ourselves, namely, from the observation of particular things, a certain general conception, and this conception we continue to regard as if it were a necessary rule for all other particular things. Should now some single individual clash with our general conception, that individual would be regarded as imperfect, and as in disagreement with its own nature. Sin, then, the bad, is only relative, and not positive, for nothing happens contrary to the will of God. It is a mere negation or privation, and appears something positive only to our finite minds. There is no bad to God. What, then, are good and bad? That is good which is useful to us, that bad which prevents us from attaining to the



good. That, again, is useful which procures us greater reality, which preserves and promotes our being. Our true being, however, is reason; reason is the inner nature of our soul; it is reason that makes us free; for it is from reason that we possess the motive and the power to resist the molestations of things from without, to determine our own action according to the law of the due preservation and promotion of our existence, and to place ourselves as regards all things in a relation adequate to our nature. What, consequently, contributes to our knowledge, that alone is useful. But the highest knowledge is the knowledge of God. The highest virtue of the soul is to know and love God. From knowledge of God there arises for us the supreme happiness and joy, the bliss of the soul: it gives us peace in the thought of the eternal necessity of all things; it delivers us from all discord and discontent, from all fruitless struggling against the finitude of our own being; it raises us from life in sense to that life in intellect, which, freed from all the troubles and the trials of the perishable, is occupied only with itself and with the eternal. Felicity, then, is not the reward of virtue,—it is virtue itself.

What is true and great in the philosophy of Spinoza is, that everything individual, as finite, is merged by it in the gulf of substance. With regard immovably directed to the Eternal One, to God, it loses sight of all that to the common mind passes for real. But its defect is, that it fails truly to convert this negative gulf of substance into the *terra firma* of positive existence and actual life. It is with justice, then, that the substance of Spinoza has been compared to the den of the lion, where there are many steps to, but few from.* The existence of the phenomenal world, the reality of the finite, if perishable, if null, is still not explained by Spinoza. We cannot see what this finite world of null appearance is here for; any living connexion to God fails. The substance of Spinoza is exclusively a principle of identity; it is not a principle of difference. Reflection, in its reference, proceeds from the finite to the absolute, but not also from the latter to the former; it clasps together the many into a selfless unity in God; it sacrifices all individual existence to the negative thought of unity, instead of enabling this unity, by a living evolution into concrete variety, to negate its own barren negativity. The system of Spinoza is the most abstract monotheism that can

* Schwegler says "none," not "few." "Few" stultifies Spinoza's den; but "none," the lion's.

possibly be conceived. It is not by accident, then, that Spinoza, a Jew, has, in explanation of the universe, once more revived the idea of its absolute unity: such idea is, in some sort, a consequence of his nationality, an echo of the East.

## XXVII.—*Idealism and Realism.*

WE stand now by a knot-point, a ganglion, a commissure, in the onward course of philosophy. Descartes had demonstrated the antithesis of thought and existence, of mind and matter, and had postulated a principle of resolution for it. This resolution succeeded ill with him, however, for he had placed the two sides of the antithesis in their greatest possible mutual isolation, he had assumed both as substances, as independent, mutually negating powers. The successors of Descartes sought a more satisfactory solution; but the theories to which they found themselves compelled, only showed the more plainly the untenableness of the entire presupposition. Spinoza, finally, abandoned the false presupposition, and stripped each of the opposing sides of its independent substantiality. In the infinite substance, spirit and matter, thought and extension, are now one. But they are not one in themselves; and only as one in themselves were there a true unity of both. That they are in substance one avails them little, for to substance itself they are indifferent, that is, they are not immanent differences of substance. With Spinoza, too, then, they are absolutely separated from one another. The reason of this isolation is simply that Spinoza has not sufficiently disembarrassed himself of the presuppositions and dualism of Descartes,—he, too, looks on thought as *only* thought, on extension as *only* extension, and this conception of them necessarily excludes the one from the other. If an inner principle of union is to be found for them, this abstraction of each must be broken up and removed. In the opposed sides themselves must the reconciliation be accomplished. There are, consequently, two ways possible, either from the position of the material side, to explain the ideal, or from that of the ideal side to explain the material. And in effect both ways were almost simultaneously attempted. From this point begins each of the two series of views which have



divided the intellectual world since, that, namely, of *Idealism* one-sidedly on the one hand, and that of *Realism* (empiricism, sensualism, materialism), equally one-sidedly on the other.

## XXVIII.—*Locke.*

THE originator of the realistic series, the father of modern materialism and empiricism, was the English *John Locke*. He possessed a precursor, indeed, in his countryman, *Thomas Hobbes* (1588-1679); whom, however, we merely mention in this place, as his influence concerned rather the history of political science.

John Locke was born at Wrington in 1632. His early studies were directed to philosophy, and, in particular, to medicine. His delicate health, however, precluded the practice of the latter; and, little interrupted by any claims of business, he lived a life of merely literary activity. Not without considerable influence on his life and circumstances was his connexion with the celebrated statesman Lord Ashley, afterwards Earl of Shaftesbury, in whose house he was always welcome, and where he enjoyed intercourse with the most distinguished men in England. In the year 1670, at the instigation of some of his friends, he sketched the first plan of his celebrated *Essay concerning Human Understanding*. The complete work, however, was published only in 1690. Locke died in 1704, at the age of seventy-two. Precision and clearness, perspicuity and distinctness, are the characteristics of his writings. Acute rather than deep in his thinking, he is true to the character of his nationality. The fundamental thoughts and chief results of his system are now elements of *popular* or *general information* everywhere, especially in England; but we are not to forget on that account that he was the first to give scientific position to that standard of intelligence, and that he occupies, therefore, however much his principle may fail in any internal capability of development, a legitimate place in the history of philosophy.

Locke's philosophy (that is, his theory of knowledge, for that is the scope of his entire inquiry) rests on two thoughts, the subjects of constant repetition: first (negatively), that there are no innate ideas; and second (positively), that all our knowledge springs from experience.

Many are of opinion, says Locke, that there are innate

ideas, received into the soul at birth, and brought with it into the world. In proof of these ideas, they appeal to the universal existence of them in every human being, without exception. But, even granting this to be the fact, it would prove nothing, if the universality of the agreement could be explained otherwise. But the alleged fact is not fact. Principles, universally admitted, there are none such,—whether in the theoretical or in the practical world. Not in the practical world,—for the spectacle of the various nations, and at the various periods of their history, teaches us that there is no moral rule observable by all. Not in the theoretical world,—for even the propositions which have the greatest pretensions to universal validity, as 'What is, is,' or, 'It is impossible for the same thing to be and not to be,' are not by any means universally admitted. Children and idiots have no conception of these principles, and neither do the uneducated know anything about such abstract propositions; how, then, can they be implanted in them by nature? Were ideas innate, we should all, of necessity, be aware of them even from our earliest childhood. For 'to be in the mind' is the same thing as 'to be known.' The reply that these ideas are implanted in the mind, only it is unconscious of them, is therefore a manifest contradiction. As little is gained by the plea, that, *so soon as* men make use of their reason, they become conscious of these principles. This allegation is simply false, because said axioms come much later into consciousness than many other particulars of knowledge, and children, for example, give numerous proofs of their exercise of reason before they know that a thing cannot possibly be, and not be. It is certainly correct to say that nobody attains to a consciousness of the principles in question without reason; but it is untrue that, with the first act of reason, they become present to consciousness. The first facts of knowledge, rather, are not general principles, but particular instances (impressions). The child knows that sweet is not bitter, long before it understands the logical proposition of contradiction. Whoever attentively reflects, will hardly maintain that the particular propositions, 'sweet is not bitter,' for instance,—flow from the general ones. Were these latter innate, they ought to constitute for the child, the first elements of consciousness, for what nature has implanted in the soul must plainly be earlier present to consciousness, than



what she has not implanted. The existence of innate ideas, consequently, whether theoretical or practical, is an assumption as much to be rejected as that of an innate existence of arts and sciences. The understanding (or the soul) is in itself a *tabula rasa*, a void surface, a blank page on which nothing has been written.

How, then, does the mind acquire its ideas? They are due to experience, on which all knowledge is founded,—on which, indeed, as its principle, all knowledge depends. Experience, however, is in itself twofold: it is either the perception of the external objects through the special senses, in which case it is named *sensation*; or it is the perception of the internal operations of the soul, in which case it is named the internal sense, or, better, *reflection*. Sensation and reflection furnish the understanding with all its ideas. These faculties are to be regarded as the single window by which the light of the ideas falls into the *camera obscura* of the mind. The external objects supply the ideas of sensible qualities; the internal object again, the life of the soul, supplies the ideas of its own operations. The problem of the philosophy of Locke, then, is to derive and explain the ideas generally, by a reference to these two sources. They are divided, in the first place, into the *simple* and the *complex*. Simple ideas are such as the mind receives from elsewhere, in the same manner as a mirror receives the images of the objects presented to it. They are *partly* such as reach the mind through a single sense, as ideas of colour through sight, of sound through hearing, and of solidity, or impenetrability, through touch; *partly* such as are contributed by several senses, as the ideas, for instance, of extension and motion, which are due to the senses of touch and sight combined; *partly* such as are derived from reflection, as the ideas of thought, and of will; *partly* such, finally, as spring from sensation and reflection together, as the ideas, for example, of power, unity, succession, etc. These simple ideas constitute the materials, as it were the letters, of all our knowledge. As language now, by means of various combinations of the single letters, forms syllables and words, so the mind, by means of various combinations of the simple ideas, forms the compound or *complex ideas*. These may be reduced to three classes, to ideas, namely, of *modes*, of *substances*, and of *relations*. The ideas of the first class consist of the modifications of space (distance, linear measure, immensity, surface, figure,

etc.), of time (duration, eternity), of thought (perception, memory, abstraction), of number, and so on. In particular, Locke subjects to a strict examination the *notion of substance*. He explains its origin in this way: we learn as well from sensation as reflection, that a certain number of simple ideas frequently present themselves together. Being unable to think, now, these simple ideas as self-supported, we accustom ourselves to conceive a self-subsistent substrate as their basis, and to this substrate we give the name of substance. Substance is the unknown something which is thought as the vehicle of such qualities as produce in us the simple ideas. It follows not, however, that substance, though product of our own subjective thought, does not at the same time exist without us. It is rather distinguished from all the other complex ideas, by the fact that it does possess an objectively real archetype without us; while these, spontaneously formed by the mind, are devoid of any correspondent reality. What the archetype of substance is, we know not; we only know the attributes of substances. From the notion of substance Locke passes, in the last place, to that of *relation*. A relation takes place whenever the mind so unites two things that on observation of the one it immediately reverts to the other. All things are capable of being placed in relation by the understanding, or, what is the same thing, of being converted into relatives. It is thus impossible completely to enumerate relations. Locke considers, therefore, only a few of the more important relations, that of identity and difference among others, but above all, cause and effect. The idea of this relation arises on our perception of how something, whether a substance or a quality, begins to exist in consequence of the action of another something. Thus far the ideas; to the combinations of which, further, we owe the conception of knowledge in general. Knowledge, indeed, is related to the simple and complex ideas as a proposition to its component letters, syllables, and words. It follows from this that our knowledge extends not beyond the range of our ideas, and, consequently, of experience.

These are the principal thoughts of Locke's philosophy; and its empiricism is obvious in them. The mind to it is in itself void, a mere mirror of the external world, a dark room into which the images of the things without fall, without any contribution or action on its part; its entire contents are due to the impressions made on it by



material things. *Nihil est in intellectu, quod non fuerit in sensu*, is the watchword of the position. And if Locke undoubtedly pronounces in these propositions the precedence of matter to mind, he makes the same opinion still more manifest when he thinks it possible, nay, probable, that the soul is a material substance. The converse possibility, that material are subordinate to spiritual things as but a species of the latter, is not entertained by Locke. The soul to him, then, is but secondary to matter, and he takes his place on that position of realism which has been already characterized (XXVII.). Locke, it is true, has, in the prosecution of his views, not always remained consistent to his principles. Empiricism in his hands is not, in several respects, a perfect structure. We can see already, however, that the subsequent course of this mode of thinking will incline towards a complete denial of the ideal factor.

The empiricism of Locke, so well adapted as it is to the character of his nation, soon became, in England, the dominant philosophy. As occupying the general position, we may name *Isaac Newton*, the great mathematician (1642-1727), *Samuel Clarke*, a disciple of Newton's, principally interested in moral philosophy (1675-1729); further, the English moralists of this period, *William Wollaston* (1659-1724), the Earl of *Shaftesbury* (1671-1713), *Francis Hutcheson* (1694-1747); and even opponents of Locke, as *Peter Brown* (d. 1735).

## XXIX.—*Hume.*

LOCKE, as just remarked, was neither consistent nor successful in the completion and realization of empiricism. Although assigning material things a decided superiority to the thinking subject, he made thought, in one respect (in the notion of substance), the prescribing power of the objective world. Of all the complex ideas constructed by subjective thought, one alone, substantiality, possesses for Locke an exceptional character of objective reality; whilst the others, purely subjective, are devoid of any correspondent objectivity. Subjective thought does not only introduce a notion of its own formation, substance, into the objective world, but it asserts, as correspondent to this notion, an objective relation, an objective connexion of things themselves, an existent

rationality. In this reference, subjective reason stands, in a certain sort, as dominant over the objective world; for the relation of substantiality is not immediately derived from the world of sense,—it is no product of sensation and perception. On a position purely empirical —and such is the position Locke himself assumes—it was an inconsistency to allow substantiality an objective validity. If the mind is in itself a dark empty room, a blank sheet of paper; if its entire provision of objective knowledge consists merely of the impressions made on it by material things; then the notion of substantiality must be also declared a merely subjective conception, an arbitrary conjunction of ideas; and the subject must be completely emptied and deprived of the last support on which to found any claim of superiority to the world of matter. This step in the direction of a self-consistent empiricism was, in his critique of Causality, taken by Hume.

*David Hume* was born at Edinburgh in 1711. Engaged in his youth in the study of law, and then in mercantile pursuits, he devoted himself, at a later period, exclusively to history and philosophy. His first literary attempt attracted scarcely any attention. His *Essays*,—of which there eventually appeared, from 1742 to 1757, five volumes,—experienced a more favourable reception. Hume has discussed in these a variety of philosophical subjects; in the manner of a thoughtful, cultivated, and polished man of the world; to the consequent neglect of any rigorous systematic connexion. After his appointment as librarian, at Edinburgh, in the year 1752, he commenced his celebrated History of England. He was afterwards Secretary of Legation at Paris, where he made the acquaintance of Rousseau; and in 1767 he became Under-Secretary of State, an office, however, which he held only for a short time. His latter years were spent at Edinburgh, in the enjoyment of a tranquil and contented retirement. He died in 1776.

The middle-point of the philosophizing of Hume is his critique of the notion of causality. Locke had already expressed the thought that we owe the notion of substance to the *custom* of always seeing certain modes together. This thought was taken up seriously by Hume. How do we know, he asks, that two things stand to each other in the relation of causality? We know it neither *a priori*, nor from experience: for knowledge *a priori* extending only to what is identical, and the effect being different



from the cause, the former cannot be discovered in the latter; and experience, again, exhibits to us only a sequence of two events in time. All our reasonings from experience, therefore, are founded solely on custom. Because we are accustomed to see that one thing follows another in time, we conceive the idea that it *must* follow, and *from* it; of a relation of succession we make a relation of causality. Connexion in time is naturally something different, however, from connexion in causality. In this notion we exceed experience, then, and proceed to the creation of ideas for which in strictness we have no authority. What holds good of causality holds good also of all the other relations of necessity. We find we do possess other such notions, as, for example, that of power and its realization. Let us ask how we obtain this idea, or the idea of necessary connexion in general. Not possibly through sensation, for external objects may show us indeed simultaneous co-existence, but not necessary connexion. Perhaps, then, through reflection? It certainly seems, as if we might get the idea of power from observing that the organs of the body obey the volitions of the mind. But since neither the means by which the mind acts on the body are known to us, nor all the organs of the body yield obedience to the mind, it follows that, even as regards a knowledge of these operations, it is to experience that we are driven; and as experience again is, for its part, able to exhibit only frequent co-existence, but no real connexion, it results that we obtain the notion of power, as that of all necessary connexion in general, only from being *accustomed* to certain transitions on the part of our ideas. All notions expressive of a relation of necessity, all supposed cognitions of an objective connexion in things, rest at last, consequently, only on the association of ideas. From the denial of the notion of substantiality there followed for Hume the denial of that also of the ego itself. Self, or the ego, did it really exist, would be substantial, a persistent vehicle of inherent qualities. But as our notion of substance is something merely subjective, without any objective reality, it results that there is no correspondent reality for our notion of the ego either. The self or ego is nothing else, in fact, than a complex of numerous swiftly succeeding ideas, under which complex we then suppose placed an imaginary substrate, named by us soul, self, or ego. The self or ego, therefore, rests wholly on an illusion. In the case of such pre-

suppositions, there cannot be any talk naturally of the immortality of the soul. The soul being only a complex of our ideas, necessarily ceases with these, and consequently, therefore, with the movements of the body.

After these propositions, which represent the principal thoughts of Hume, there is no call for any further argumentation to prove that Hume's scepticism was but a more consistent following out of Locke's empiricism. If we owe all our knowledge to perception of sense, then all determinations of universality and necessity must, in logical result, disappear; for they are not contained in sensation.

## XXX.—*Condillac.*

TO carry out the empiricism of Locke into its ultimate consequence, into sensualism and materialism,—this is the task which has been assumed by the French. Though grown on a soil of English principles, and very soon universally prevalent there, empiricism could not possibly be developed amongst the English into the extreme form which presently declared itself among the French,—that is, into the complete destruction of all the foundations of the moral and religious life. This last consequence was not congenial to the national character of the English. On the contrary, as early as the second half of the eighteenth century, there appeared, in opposition not only to the scepticism of Hume, but even to the empiricism of Locke, that reaction which is named *Scottish Philosophy* (*Reid*, 1704-1796, *Beattie*, *Oswald*, *Dugald Stewart*, 1753-1828). The aim of this philosophy was to establish, in contradistinction to the Lockian *tabula rasa* and the Humian despair of any necessity of reason, certain principles of truth innate or immanent in the subject; and this (in a genuinely English manner), as facts of experience, as facts of the moral instinct and healthy human understanding (common sense); as an element empirically so given, and discoverable by means of observation of ourselves, and reflection on our ordinary consciousness. In France, on the other hand, political and social circumstances had so shaped themselves in the course of the eighteenth century, that we can recognise writings which drew relentlessly the ultimate practical consequences of the position,—systems, namely, of a materialistic theory



of the world and of a deliberately reasoned egoistic morality,—only as natural results of the universal corruption. The declaration of a great lady in regard to the system of Helvetius, that it only spoke out the secret of everybody, is, in this connexion, familiarly known.

The sensualism of the Abbé de *Condillac* stands closest to the empiricism of Locke. Condillac was born at Grenoble in 1715. In his earliest writings an adherent of the theory of Locke, he subsequently went further, and endeavoured to make good a philosophical position of his own. Made member of the French Academy in 1768, he died in 1780. His collected writings, which bespeak moral earnestness and religious feeling, compose twenty-three volumes.

Condillac, in agreement with Locke, began from the proposition, that all our knowledge springs from experience. Whilst Locke, however, assumed two sources of this empirical knowledge, sensation and reflection, or external and internal sense, Condillac contended for the reduction of both to one, of reflection to sensation. Reflection is for him equally sensation; all mental processes, even will and the combination of the ideas, are in his eyes only modified sensations. The realization of this conception, the derivation of the various mental faculties from external sense,—this constitutes the main interest and the main matter of Condillac's philosophy. He endeavours to demonstrate his leading idea by reference to an imaginary statue, in which,—organized internally indeed like a human being, but destitute at first of any ideas,—one sense after another is conceived gradually to awake and to fill the soul with the various impressions. Man as indebted for all his knowledge and for all his motives to external sensation, appears, in this mode of viewing him, quite on the footing of one of the lower animals. In consistency, therefore, Condillac calls men perfect animals, and the other animals imperfect men. He still shrinks, however, from denial of the existence of God, and equally from assertion of the materiality of the soul. These, the ultimate consequences of sensualism, were taken by others after him; and they lie sufficiently on the surface. For if sensualism maintains, that truth, or what really is, can only be perceived by the senses, we need but take this proposition objectively to have the thesis of materialism: only what is sensuous is, there is no being but material being.

## XXXI.—*Helvetius.*

THE moral consequences of the sensualistic position were drawn by *Helvetius*. Let theoretic sensualism declare, that all our knowledge is determined by external sensation, then practical sensualism adds the analogous proposition, that all our volition as well is determined by external sensation, by the requirements of sense. The satisfaction of our sensuous desires was set up by Helvetius accordingly as the principle of morals.

Helvetius was born at Paris in 1715. Appointed in his twenty-third year to the post of a Farmer-General, he found himself, at an early period of life, in possession of an opulent income. Nevertheless, after a few years, he resigned his place in consequence of the many unpleasant complications in which it involved him. The study of the writings of Locke decided his philosophical creed. Helvetius wrote his famous book *De l'Esprit* in the rural retirement that followed the resignation of his post. It appeared in 1758, and excited, both at home and abroad, great, and often favourable attention, but brought him also much bitter persecution, especially from the priests. Helvetius must have thought it fortunate, however, that they were satisfied with attempting to crush the book. The rural tranquillity in which he passed the later years of his life was only interrupted twice: once by a journey to Germany, and again by a voyage to England. He died in 1771. His personal character was estimable, full of good-nature and love to his fellows. In his post of Farmer-General, he was benevolent to the poor, and sternly opposed to the exactions of his subordinates. His works are written with perspicuity and elegance.

Self-love, interest, says Helvetius, is the lever of all our actions. Even our purely intellectual activities, our desire of knowledge, our traffic in ideas, spring from the love of self. But all self-love tends in the end only to bodily enjoyment. All our actions, therefore, mental and other, have no source or spur but the gratification of sense. And in this there is already indicated where the principle of morality is to be sought. It is absurd to expect men to do the good for the sake of the good. This is as little in their power as to will the bad for the sake of the bad. If, then, morality is not to remain completely fruitless, it must return to its empirical source,



and dare to proclaim as *its* principle the true principle of all action, animal feeling, pleasure and pain, self-interest. As therefore true legislation procures obedience to the laws by the stimulus of punishment and reward, by self-interest; so that only is the true moral principle which, regarding the duties of mankind as results of self-love, demonstrates the general nature of what is forbidden us to be the producing of disgust, etc., in short, of pain. If morality bring not men's interest into play,—if it resist them,—then plainly it will be necessarily fruitless.

## XXXII.—*French Illumination and Materialism.*

IT has been already remarked (xxx.), that the pushing of empiricism to an extreme, as realized in France, has a very close connexion with the general social and political condition of the French people at the time that precedes the Revolution. The struggle characteristic of the middle ages, the external, dualistic relation to the church, was continued in Catholic France to the confusion and corruption of all the interests of life. Men's minds were demoralized everywhere, especially under the influence of a dissolute court; the state was become an unrestrained despotism; the church had sunk into an equally hypocritical and tyrannical hierarchy. All substance and worth, then, having disappeared from the spiritual world, there was left nothing but nature; in the form, too, of an unspiritualized mass, of matter; and an object for man only as it was subservient to his sensuous greeds and needs. It is, however, not specially the extreme of materialism that constitutes the characteristic of the French illumination. The common character of the so-called *Philosophes* of the eighteenth century in France, is rather their tendency to oppose all the tyranny and corruption that were then prevalent in morals, religion, and the state. They directed their polished and sparkling, rather than strictly scientific critical polemic, against the entire world of received opinions, of the traditional, the given, the positive. They endeavoured to demonstrate the contradiction in which all that was established in church and state stood to the irrefutable demands of reason. What was received and unquestioned, this—if unable to justify its existence in the sight of reason—they strove to shake in the belief of the world

at the same time that they vindicated for man, rational man, the full consciousness of his native freedom. Truly to appreciate the immeasurable merit of these men, we must realize to ourselves the condition of things against which their attacks were directed: the licentiousness of a miserable court that demanded slavish obedience; the tyranny and hypocrisy of a priesthood rotten to the core, that insisted on blind submission; the degradation of a disintegrated church that exacted veneration—in short, an administration of the state, a dispensation of justice, a condition of society that must revolt to the utmost every intellectual principle, and every moral feeling of man. To have exposed to hatred and contempt the baseness and worthlessness of existing interests, summoned the minds of men to indifference for the idols of the world, and awakened them to a consciousness of their autonomy—this, of these men, is the imperishable glory.

2. The most brilliant and influential spokesman of this period is *Voltaire* (1694-1778). Not a professed philosopher, but an infinitely versatile writer, and an unsurpassed master of expression, he acted more powerfully than any of the philosophers of the time on the whole mode of thought of his age and nation. Voltaire was not an atheist. On the contrary, he considered belief in a Supreme Being so absolutely essential that he said, if there were no God, it would be necessary to invent one. As little did he deny the immortality of the soul, though he frequently expressed doubts of it. The atheistic materialism of a La Mettrie he looked upon as mere stupidity. In these respects, then, he is far from occupying the position of his philosophical successors. On the other hand his heart's hatred is to the *positive* of religion,—the simply *dictated*. He regarded the destruction of hierarchical intolerance as his special mission, and he left no stone unturned in order to accomplish this passionately cherished end. His indefatigable struggle against all positive religion, by advancing information generally, however, essentially prepared the way for the later opponents of spiritualism.

3. Markedly more sceptical is the relation of the *Encyclopædists* to the principles and presuppositions of spiritualism. The philosophical Encyclopædia originated by *Diderot* (1713-1784), and edited by him in conjunction with D'Alembert, is a remarkable monument of the spirit which prevailed in France in the generation before



the Revolution. It was the pride of France at that time, because it spoke out, in a brilliant, universally accessible form, its own inmost convictions. With the keenest wit, it reasoned out of the state law, out of morality free-will, out of nature God, and all this only in interrupted, and for the most part half-apprehensive hints. In the other writings of Diderot we find considerable philosophical talent combined with a certain depth of earnestness. Still his philosophical views cannot be easily assigned or accurately determined; for both they themselves were of very gradual growth, and Diderot trusted himself to express them not without accommodation and reserve. On the whole, however, his mode of thought approached, in the course of its development, nearer and nearer to the extreme of the prevailing philosophical tendency. A deist in his earlier writings, the drift of those subsequently produced amounts to the belief that all is God. At first a defender of the immateriality and immortality of the soul, he peremptorily declares at last, that only the genus endures, that individuals pass, and that immortality is nothing but life in the remembrance of posterity. The consequent extreme of materialism, Diderot, however, refused to accept: from that he was rescued by his moral earnestness.

4. The last word of materialism, nevertheless, was, with unhesitating hardihood, spoken out by Diderot's contemporary, the physician *La Mettrie* (1709-1751). Anything spiritual, namely, is now a delusion, and physical enjoyment is the chief end of man. As for belief in a God in the first place, La Mettrie pronounces it equally groundless and profitless. The world will never be happy till Atheism is universal. Only then shall we have no more religious wars; only then will those fearfulest of fighting men, the theologians, disappear, and leave the world they have poisoned to return to itself. As for the soul, there can be no philosophy but materialism. All the observations and experiments of the greatest physicians and philosophers pronounce for this. Soul is nothing but an empty name, which gets sense only when understood as that part of the body that thinks. This is the brain, which has its fibres of cogitation, as the legs have their muscles of motion. That man has the advantage of the lower animals, is owing, firstly, to the organization of his brain, and, secondly, to the education it receives. Man, otherwise, is an animal like the rest,—in many respects inferior to them. Immortality is an absurdity. The

soul, as a part of the body, goes with the body. At death all is 'up,' *la farce est jouée!* Moral: let us enjoy while we can, and never throw a chance away.

5. What La Mettrie threw out with levity and a grin, the *Système de la Nature*, as the representative book of philosophical materialism, endeavoured to establish with the seriousness and precision of science,—the doctrine, namely, that nothing exists but matter, and mind is either naught, or only a finer matter.

The *Système de la Nature* appeared pseudonymously in London, in the year 1770, under the name of the deceased Mirabaud, secretary of the Academy. Without doubt it originated in the circle of *beaux esprits* who frequented the table of Baron Holbach, and took its tone from Diderot, Grimm, and others. Whether it was Holbach himself, or his domestic tutor Lagrange, or several together, who wrote the work, it is impossible now to decide. The book is not a French book: the writing is tame and tedious.

There is nowhere anything, says the *Système de la Nature*, but matter and motion. Both are inseparably combined. When matter is at rest, it is at rest only as prevented from moving; it is not itself a dead mass. There are two sorts of motion, attraction and repulsion. From these two we have the various other motions, and from these, again, the various combinations, and so, consequently, the entire multiplicity, of things. The laws according to which these actions take place are eternal and immutable. The most important results are these:—(*a.*) The materiality of man: man is no *equivoque*, as is erroneously supposed, of mind and matter. If we ask, for instance, what then is this thing that is called mind, the usual answer is, that the most accurate philosophical investigations demonstrate the motive principle in man to be a substance which, in its essence, is incomprehensible indeed, but which is known, for all that, to be indivisible, unextended, invisible, etc. But how are we to find anything definite or conceivable in a being that is but a negation of all that constitutes knowledge—a being, the very idea of which is but the absence of all idea whatever? Moreover, how is it explicable, on the supposition in view, that a being, not material, itself, can act on, and give movement to, beings which are material, although plainly there can exist no point of contact between them? The truth is, that those who distinguish their soul from



their body, only distinguish their brain from their body. Thought is only a modification of the brain, as will is but another modification of the same corporeal organ. (*b.*) On a par with this duplication of himself into soul and body, there is in man another chimera—belief in the existence of a God. This belief has its origin, like the assumption of a soul, in a false distinction of mind from matter, in an unwarrantable doubling of nature. Man referred the evils he experienced, and of which he was unable to detect the natural causes, to a God, a God which he had fabled for himself. Fear, suffering, ignorance,—these, then, are the sources of our first ideas of a God. We tremble, because our forefathers, thousands of years ago, trembled before us. This is not a circumstance to create any favourable pre-judgment. But it is not only the cruder conception of God that is worthless, the more elaborate theological theory is equally so, for it explains not one single phenomenon of nature. It is full, too, of absurdities, for in ascribing moral attributes to God, it humanizes him, and yet, by means of a mass of negative attributes, it would, at the very same moment, distinguish him, and in the most absolute manner, from all other beings. The true system, the system of nature, is consequently Atheism. Such a creed requires, on the one side, education, and, on the other, courage; for it is not the possession as yet of all, nor even of many. If by atheist there is understood a man who believes only in *dead* matter, or if by God, the *moving power* in nature, then, certainly, a single Atheist cannot possibly exist, unless he were a fool. But if by Atheist is understood one that denies the existence of an immaterial being, of a being whose imaginary qualities can only disturb mankind, then, in that sense, there are Atheists, and there would be still more of them, were a sound understanding general, and did a true idea of nature more commonly obtain. But Atheism being truth, it must be spread. There are many, it is true, who having rescued themselves from the yoke of religion, still believe in its necessity for the herd, in order to keep it in bounds. But this is nothing else than to poison a man to prevent him from abusing his gifts. Any deism is necessarily but a direct step to superstition, for pure deism is a position not possibly tenable. (*c.*) With such presuppositions there can be no talk of the immortality and free-will of man. Man is not different from the other things

of nature. Like them, he is a link in the indissoluble chain, a blind tool in the hands of necessity. Did anything possess the ability to move itself, that is, to produce a motion not referable to any other cause, it would have power to bring to a stop the motion of the universe; but that is impossible, for the universe is an infinite series of necessary motions, which continue and propagate themselves to all eternity. The assumption of individual immortality is a nonsensical hypothesis. For to maintain that the soul endures after the destruction of the body, is to maintain that a function may remain when its organ has disappeared. Other immortality there is none than that of fame in the future. (*d.*) The results, practically, of the theory, afford a powerful support to the system of nature; and the utility of a theory is always the best criterion of its truth. Whilst the ideas of theologians can only disquiet and torment man, the system of nature relieves him from all such anxieties, teaches him to enjoy the present, and furnishes him with that apathy for the compliant bearing of his lot, which everybody must esteem a happiness. Morality, to be practical, must be founded on self-love, on interest; it must be able to show the individual in what his well-understood advantage lies. That man who follows his own interest so that other men for their interest must contribute to his, is a good man. A system of self-interest, then, promotes the union of mankind mutually, and consequently also true morality.

This consistent dogmatic materialism of the *Système de la Nature* is the utmost extreme of the empirical tendency, and closes, consequently, the systems of abstract realism that began with Locke. The derivation and explanation of the ideal from and by the material world, initiated by Locke, have terminated in materialism, in the reduction of the spiritual to the material principle, in the denial of spirit generally. We have now, before going further to consider, as already intimated (XXVII.), the other or idealistic series which runs parallel with the realistic one. And at its head is *Leibnitz*.

## XXXIII.—*Leibnitz.*

IF empiricism was animated by a desire to subordinate mind to matter, to materialize mind, idealism will seek, on the contrary, to spiritualize matter, or so to con-



strue the idea of spirit, that matter shall be subsumed under it. If to the former, spirit was nothing but a finer matter, matter to the latter will prove itself, conversely, only crassified spirit (or, as Leibnitz expresses it, only 'confused ideation'). The one, indeed, was, in logical consistency, driven to the proposition, There are only material things; the other, again (in Leibnitz and Berkeley), will take stand by the opposed result, There are only spirits (souls), and the thoughts of spirits (ideas). For the one-sided realistic stand-point, material things were the veritable substantial element; while, contrariwise, for the correspondent idealistic stand-point, this element will be only spiritual beings, egos. Spirit was to one-sided realism in itself empty, a *tabula rasa*, dependent on the external world for its entire provision. One-sided idealism, on the contrary, will strive to the proposition, That nothing can come into the soul, that is not at least preformed within it, That all its knowledge must be derivative from itself. To the former mode of view, knowledge was a passive relation; to the latter, it will appear an active one. Lastly, if abstract realism prefer to explain the becoming and eventuality of nature by real grounds, or mechanically (*L'Homme Machine* is the title of a work by La Mettrie), abstract idealism will seek its explanation, *ex contrario*, in ideal grounds, or teleologically. Or if the former asked, by predilection, for efficient causes, and often even ridiculed the demand for final causes, it will be to these that the latter will direct its principal aim. The notion of design, in short, the teleological harmony of all things (pre-established harmony), will now be looked to for the means of union between spirit and matter, between thinking and being. In this way the stand-point of the philosophy of Leibnitz may be briefly characterized.

*Gottfried Wilhelm Leibnitz* was born in 1646 at Leipsic, where his father held a professor's chair. Having chosen Law for his profession, he entered the university in 1661; he defended, in 1663, for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy, his dissertation *De Principio Individui* (a characteristic thesis when we regard his subsequent philosophizing); thereafter he went to Jena, later to Altdorf, where he took the degree of Doctor of Laws. A chair of jurisprudence offered him in Altdorf he declined. His further career is an erratic, busy life of movement, chiefly at courts, where, as an accomplished courtier, he was em-

ployed in the most multiform affairs, diplomatic and other. In the year 1672 he went to Paris, charged in effect with a commission to persuade Louis XIV. to attempt the conquest of Egypt, and so divert that monarch's dangerous military inclinations from Germany. From Paris he passed to London; thence, in the capacity of councillor and librarian of the learned Catholic duke, John Frederic, to Hanover, where he spent the most of his remaining life, not without the interruption, however, of numerous journeys to Vienna, Berlin, etc. He stood on terms of intimacy with the Prussian Queen, Sophia Charlotte, a talented lady who gathered around her a circle of the most eminent *savants* of the period, and for whom Leibnitz, at her own instigation, had undertaken the composition of his *Théodicée*. His proposal for the institution of an academy in Berlin obtained effect in 1700, and he became its first president. Similar proposals in regard to Dresden and Vienna were without result. By the Emperor Charles VI., he was made a member of the imperial aulic council in 1711, and raised to the rank of Baron. Soon afterwards he made a considerable stay at Vienna, where, at the suggestion of Prince Eugene, he composed his *Monadologie*. He died in 1716. Leibnitz, after Aristotle, is the polymath of the greatest genius that ever lived. He united the greatest, the most penetrating power of intellect with the richest and most extensive erudition. Germany has a special call to be proud of him, for, after Jacob Böhm, he is the first important philosopher whom we Germans can claim. Through him philosophy was naturalized among us. Unfortunately, partly the multiplicity of his engagements and literary undertakings, partly his wandering way of life, prevented him from accomplishing any connected exposition of his philosophy as a whole. His views are chiefly set out only in short occasional papers, or in letters, and generally in French. For this reason an inwardly coherent summary of his philosophy is by no means easy, although none of his opinions can be said to be isolated from the rest, but all of them stand in sufficiently exact connexion with each other. The following are the main points of view:—

1. The System of Monads.—The fundamental characteristic of the teaching of Leibnitz is its difference from that of Spinoza. Spinoza had made the one universal substance the single *positive* element in existence. Leibnitz, too, takes the notion of substance for the foundation of his philosophy, but he defines it differently; conceiving substance as eminently the living activity, the working force, and adducing as example of this force a bent bow, which asserts its power so soon as all external obstacles are withdrawn. That active force constitutes the quality of substance, is a proposition to which Leibnitz always returns, and with which the other elements of his philosophy most intimately cohere. This is applicable at once to the two further determinations of substance (also quite opposed to the theory of Spinoza), firstly, that substance is individual, a monad, and, secondly, that there is a plurality of monads. Substance, in exercising an activity similar to that of an elastic body, is essentially an excludent power, repulsion: but what excludes others from itself is a personality, an individuality or *individuum*, a monad. But this involves the second consideration, that of the plurality of the monads. It is impossible for one monad to exist, unless others exist. The notion of an *individuum* postulates *individua*, which, as excluded from it, stand over against it. In antithesis to the philosophy of Spinoza, therefore, the fundamental thesis of that of Leibnitz is this: there is a plurality of monads which constitutes the element of all reality, the fundamental being of the whole physical and spiritual universe.



2. The Exacter Specification of the Monads is the next consideration. The monads of Leibnitz are, in general, similar to the Greek atoms. Like the latter, they are punctual unities, insusceptible of influence from without, and indestructible by any external power. If similar, they are also, however, dissimilar, and in important characteristics. Firstly, the atoms are not distinguished from one another; they are qualitatively alike: the monads, on the other hand, are qualitatively different; each is a special world apart; none is like the other. To Leibnitz, no two things in the world are quite alike. Secondly, the atoms, as extended, are divisible; the monads, on the contrary, are actual (indivisible) points, metaphysical points. In order not to be repelled by this proposition (for it is natural to object that no aggregate of inextended things, like the monads, can ever account for extended things), it is necessary for us to recollect that Leibnitz regards space, not as real, but only as confused subjective conception. Thirdly, the monad is a

living spiritual being, a soul. In the atomists there is nothing whatever of this idea; but with Leibnitz it plays a very important part. Everywhere in the world, there is to Leibnitz life, living individuality, and living connexion of individualities. The monads are not dead, as mere extended matter is; they are self-subsistent, self-identical, and indeterminable from without. Considered (*a.*) in themselves, however, they are to be thought as centres of living activity, living mutation. As the human soul, a monad of elevated rank, is never, even when unconscious, free from the action of at least obscure thought and will, so every other monad continually undergoes a variety of modifications or conditions of being, correspondent to its own proper quality. Everywhere there is movement, nowhere is there dead rest. And (*b.*) as it is with the human soul, which sympathizes with all the varying states of nature, which mirrors the universe, so it is with the monads universally. Each—and they are infinitely numerous—is also a mirror, a centre of the universe, a microcosm: everything that is or happens is reflected in each, but by its own spontaneous power, through which it holds ideally in itself, as if in germ, the totality of things. By him, then, who shall look near enough, all that in the whole huge universe happens, has happened, or will happen, may, in each individual monad, be, as it were, read. This livingness of the monads themselves, and of their relation to the rest of the world, is more particularly characterized by Leibnitz in this way, that he represents the life of the monads to consist in a continuous sequence of perceptions, that is, of dimmer or clearer ideas of their own states, and of those of all the rest; the monads proceed from perception to perception; all, consequently, are souls; and that constitutes the perfection of the world.

3. The pre-established Harmony.—The universe, then, is but sum of the monads. Everything, or everything that is composite, is an aggregate of monads. Every body is an organism, not a single substance but a complex of substances, a plurality of monads, just as a machine, even in its minutest parts, consists of machines. Leibnitz compares bodies to a fish-pond, the component parts of which live, though it cannot be said that the pond itself lives. The usual conception of things is thus completely turned upside down; from the point of view of the monadology, it is not the body, the aggregate,



that is the substantial element, but its constituent parts. There is no such thing as matter in the vulgar sense of insensible extension. How then are we to think the inner connexion of the universe? In the following manner. Every monad is a percipient being, but each is different from each. This difference, plainly, must be essentially a difference of perception; there must be as many various degrees of perception as there are monads, and these degrees may be arranged in stages. A main distinguishing difference is that of the more confused and the more distinct cognition. A monad of the lowest rank (*une monade toute nue*), is one that just conceives and no more, that has its place, that is, on the stage of the most confused cognition. Leibnitz compares this state to a swoon, or to our condition in a dreamless sleep, in which we are not indeed without ideas (else we should have none on awaking), but in which the ideas neutralize themselves by their own number, and never attain to consciousness. This is the stage of inorganic nature, on which the life of the monads expresses itself only in the form of motion. Those are higher monads in which thought is formative vitality, but still without consciousness. This is the stage of plants. It is a further advance in the life of the monads when they attain to sensation and memory, which is the case in the animal world. Whilst the inferior monads only sleep, the animal monads dream. When the soul rises to reason and reflection it is named spirit. The distinction of the monads, then, is that, though each mirrors the whole universe and the same universe, each at the same time mirrors it differently, the one less, and the other more perfectly. Each contains the entire universe, entire infinitude within itself. Each, then, resembles God in this, or is a *parvus in suo genere deus*. The difference is this only, that God knows all with perfect distinctness, while the monads perceive with less or more confusion. The limitation of any one monad, then, consists not in its possessing less than any other, or even than God, but in its possessing the common fund in a more imperfect manner, inasmuch as it attains not to a distinct knowledge of all. So conceived, the universe affords us a spectacle, as well of the greatest possible unity, as of the greatest possible variety; for if each monad mirrors the same universe, each also mirrors it differently. But this is a spectacle of the greatest possible perfection, or of *absolute harmony*. For variety in unity is harmony. In another

respect also the universe is a system of harmony. Since the monads act not on one another, and each follows the laws of its own being, there is a risk of the inner agreement of the universe being disturbed. In what manner is this risk precluded? In this way, that each monad stands in living relation to the whole universe and the same universe, or that the universe and the life of the universe are completely reflected in each. In consequence of this reciprocal correspondency of their perceptions, the alterations of all the monads are mutually parallel; and precisely in this (as pre-established by God) consists the harmony of the all.

4. What is the relation of GOD now to the monads? What part does the *notion of God* play in the system of Leibnitz? One certainly, without much to do. In strict consistency, Leibnitz ought not to have entertained any question of Theism; for in his system the harmony of the whole must be regarded as having taken the place of God. He usually designates God as the sufficient reason (*la raison suffisante*) of all the monads. But he commonly regards the final cause of a thing as its sufficient reason. Leibnitz, then, on this question, is not far from identifying God with the absolute final cause. At other times he designates God as the primitive simple substance, or as the single primitive unity, or again as pure immaterial actuality, *actus purus* (the actuality of the monads, on the other hand, is matter, an actuality—a *nisus, appetitio* —not in pure freedom, but limited, obstructed, by a principle of passive resistance to the movement of spontaneity), or even again as monad (this however in evident contradiction to his other specifications). It was a hard matter for Leibnitz to bring—without abandoning the presuppositions of both,—his monadology and his Theism into unison. If he assume the substantiality of the monads, he runs the risk of losing their dependence on God, and in the opposite case, he relapses into Spinozism.

5. THE RELATION OF SOUL AND BODY admits of a particular explanation with reference to the pre-established harmony. On the presuppositions of the *Monadologie*, this relation might easily appear enigmatic. If one monad cannot act on another, how is it possible for the soul to act on the body, to put it in motion, to guide it in motion? The pre-established harmony solves this problem. Soul and body certainly do follow, each in



independence of the other, the laws of its own being,—the body, laws that are mechanical; the soul, laws that are ends. But God has instituted so harmonious an agreement of the two factors, so complete a parallelism of both functions, that, in point of fact, there is a perfect unity of soul and body. There are, says Leibnitz, three views of the relation between soul and body. The first, the usual one, assumes a mutual action of both. This view is untenable; for between spirit and matter there can be no reciprocity. The second, that of occasionalism (XXV. 1), attributes this reciprocity to the continual assistance of God; but that is as much as to make God a *Deus ex machina*. There remains, then, for the solution of the problem only the assumption of a pre-established harmony. Leibnitz illustrates these three views by the following example. Let us suppose two watches, the hands of which always indicate exactly the same time. This agreement may be explained, firstly, by the assumption of an actual union between the hands of both watches, in such a manner that the hands of the one draw those of the other along with them (the usual view); secondly, by assuming that a watchmaker always sets the one watch by the other (the occasionalistic view); and finally, by a third assumption, that both watches possess so complete a mechanism, that each, though in perfect independence, goes also in perfect agreement with the other (the pre-established harmony). That the soul is immortal (indestructible), follows of itself from the nature of the theory. Properly there is no such thing as death. What is called death consists only in the loss to the soul of a part of the monads which constituted the machine of its body, at the same time that the living principle returns to a condition similar to that which it possessed before it appeared on the theatre of the world.

6. ON THE THEORY OF KNOWLEDGE the consequences of the *Monadologie* have a very important bearing. As, with reference to ontology, the philosophy of Leibnitz is conditioned by its opposition to Spinozism, so with reference to the theory of cognition, it is conditioned by its opposition to the empiricism of Locke. Locke's inquiry into the human understanding interested Leibnitz without satisfying him; and, in his *Nouveaux Essais*, he set on foot, therefore, a counter inquiry, in which he was led to defend *innate ideas*. But Leibnitz freed this

hypothesis from the imperfect conception of it which had justified the objections of Locke. Innate ideas are not to be supposed *expliciter* and consciously, but only *impliciter* and potentially, contained in the soul. The soul has power to bring them into existence out of its own self. All thoughts are properly innate: they come not into the soul from without, but are produced by it from its own self. An external influence on the soul is incapable of being thought; even for the sensations of sense, it is not in want of any outer things. If Locke compares the soul to a blank sheet of paper, Leibnitz, for his part, compares it to a block of marble in which the veins prefigure the shape of the statue. The usual contrast between rational and empirical knowledge shrinks for Leibnitz, therefore, into the graduated difference of less or more distinctness. Amongst the innate theoretical ideas, two, as principles of all cognition and of all reasoning, occupy for Leibnitz the first rank,—the proposition of contradiction (*principium contradictionis*), and the proposition of the sufficient reason (*principium rationis sufficientis*). To these, as a proposition of the second rank, he adds the *principium indiscernibilium*, or the proposition that there are not in nature two things perfectly alike.

7. The theological opinions of Leibnitz are expressed at fullest in his *Théodicée*. This, however, is his weakest book, and stands only in a very loose connexion with his remaining philosophy. Originating in the request of a lady, it belies this origin neither in its form nor in its matter. Not in its form, for in its striving to popularity of statement it becomes diffuse and unscientific. Not in its matter, for it carries further its accommodation to the positive dogma and the presuppositions of theology than the scientific principles of the system permit. Leibnitz discusses in this work the relation of God to the world, in order to demonstrate design in this relation, and vindicate God from the imputation of having, in his works, done anything without purpose, or against reason. Why has the world precisely *this* form? God surely might have made it quite different from what it is. Without doubt, Leibnitz replies, God saw the possibility of infinite worlds; but out of them all he chose this. This is the famous doctrine of a best of all possible worlds, according to which any more perfect world than the existent world is impossible. But



how, then? Does not the existence of evil contradict this? In answer to this objection, Leibnitz distinguishes evil into three sorts,—into metaphysical evil, physical evil, and moral evil. Metaphysical evil, or the imperfection and finitude of things, is as inseparable from finite existence, and therefore unconditionally willed by God, necessary. Physical evil (pain, etc.), is certainly not unconditionally willed by God, but only conditionally, as in the form of punishment, or of corrective. Moral evil, or the bad, can, on the contrary, not be willed by God. To explain its existence, then, and remove its apparent contradiction to the notion of God, Leibnitz tries several shifts. He says, at one time, that the bad is only permitted by God as a *conditio sine qua non*, for without the bad there were no free will, and without free will there were no virtue. At another time he reduces moral to metaphysical evil. The bad, he says, is not anything real; it is only absence of perfection, negation, limitation: it plays the same part as shading in a painting, or dissonance in music, neither of which lessens the perfection present, but enhances it by contrast. At another time, again, he distinguishes between what is material and what formal in an act that is bad: the material element of sin, or the power to act, comes from God; but the formal element, or what is bad in the act, belongs to man, is the result of his limitation: or, as Leibnitz sometimes expresses it, of his eternal self-predestination. In no case is the harmony of the universe disturbed by the bad.

These are the fundamental ideas of the philosophy of Leibnitz. The preceding exposition will have substantiated the general summary which heads the section.

## XXXIV.—*Berkeley.*

IDEALISM in Leibnitz has not yet reached its ultimate extreme. On the one hand, indeed, space, motion, material things, were to him phenomena that existed only in confused perception; but, on the other hand, the existence of the material world was not directly denied by him; rather, on the contrary, its essential reality was acknowledged in the very conception of the world of monads. The world of sense is supposed to possess in the monads its fixed and substantial foundation. And thus, then, Leibnitz, idealist though he be, has not yet

quite broken with realism. To have declared corporeal existences *mere* phenomena, mere subjective perceptions or conceptions without foundation of objective reality, or, in other words, entirely to have denied the reality of an objective world of sense,—this would have been the ultimate consequence of a perfectly pure idealism. This consequence—the idealistic counterpart of the realistic extreme, materialism—was taken by *George Berkeley* (b. in Ireland 1685, made bishop 1734, d. 1753). We must therefore rank him—as completer of idealism—in the same series as Leibnitz, although he stands in no external connexion with the latter, but is related rather to the empiricism of Locke.

Our sensations, says Berkeley, are altogether subjective. When we believe ourselves to feel or perceive independent external objects, that is an error: what we so feel and perceive are only our sensations and perceptions themselves. It is evident, for example, that neither the distance, nor the size and form of objects are, properly, through the sensations of sense *seen:* these qualities we *infer* rather in consequence of having experienced that a certain sensation of sight is attended by certain sensations of touch. What we *see* are only colours, light, dark, etc., and it is therefore altogether untrue to say that we see and feel *one and the same thing.* In the case, then, of the very sensations to which we attach the most specially objective character, we are still within ourselves. The proper objects of our mind are only our own affections, and all objective ideas, therefore, are but our own sensations. An idea can just as little as a sensation exist apart from the subject of it. What are called things consequently exist only in our percipient mind: their *esse* is a mere *percipi.* Almost all philosophers are misled by the fundamental error of conceiving material things to exist apart from the mind that perceives them, and of failing to see that things are only something mental. How could material things possibly produce anything so utterly different from themselves as sensations and perceptions? There exists not, then, any *material* external world: *only spirits exist,* thinking beings whose nature consists of conception and volition. But whence then do we receive our sensations, which come to us without our help, which are not products of our own will, like the forms of phantasy? We receive them from a spirit superior to our own (for only a spirit were able to produce ideas in us), we receive them from God. God, then, gives us the ideas; but it were a contradiction for a being to communicate ideas and yet have none: the ideas consequently, which we receive from God, exist *in God.* In God they may be called archetypes, in us ectypes. This theory, according to Berkeley, nevertheless, does not deny to objects a reality independent of us; it denies only the possibility of their existing anywhere but in a mind. Instead, therefore, of speaking of a connected nature in which the sun (say) were the cause of heat, etc., we ought to express ourselves with accuracy thus: through the visual sensation, God announces to us that we shall soon experience a tactual one of heat. By nature we must understand, therefore, only the succession or co-existence of ideas; by laws of nature, again, the constant order in which they accompany or follow one another, that is, the laws of their associations. This consistent pure idealism is, in its complete denial of matter in the strict sense, the surest way, according to Berkeley, of destroying scepticism and atheism.



## XXXV.—*Wolff.*

THE idealism of Berkeley remained naturally without any further development. The philosophy of Leibnitz, on the other hand, found continuation and rearrangement at the hands of *Christian Wolff* (b. 1679 at Breslau; removed, by a cabinet-order of Nov. 8, 1723, from his chair of philosophy at Halle, after a long course of disagreement with the theological professors there, because the doctrines he taught were opposed to the revealed truth of the Word of God, and required, under penalty of the halter, to quit the Prussian territory within forty-eight hours; then Professor in Marburg, recalled by Frederic II. immediately on his accession to the throne; subsequently raised to the rank of Baron of the Empire; d. 1754). In his main thoughts (with omission, it is true, of the bolder ideas of his predecessor) he adhered to the philosophy of Leibnitz,—an adhesion which he himself admits, though he resists the identification of his philosophy with that of Leibnitz, and rejects the name *Philosophia Leibnitio-Wolfiana,* originated by his disciple Bilfinger. Wolff's historical merit is threefold. He was the first, in especial, to claim again, in the name of philo-

sophy, the entire field of knowledge—the first who attempted to construct again a systematic whole of doctrine, an encyclopædia of philosophy in the highest sense of the word. If he has not indeed contributed much new material to the work, he has at least skilfully availed himself of that already provided to his hand, and arranged it with a certain architectonic spirit. Secondly, he again made philosophical method as such an object of attention. His own method, indeed, as the mathematical (mathematico-syllogistic) method recommended by Leibnitz, is a method quite external to the matter; but even this platitudinizing formalism (for example, the eighth theorem in Wolff's *Elements of Architecture* runs thus: 'A window must be wide enough to allow two persons to place themselves conveniently at it,' a theorem which is then proved thus: 'It is a common custom to place one's-self at a window, and look from it in company with another person. As now it is the duty of the architect to consult in all respects the intentions of the builder (Sect. 1), he will necessarily make the window wide enough to allow two persons to place themselves conveniently at it—*q. e. d.*'), even this formalism possesses the advantage of rendering philosophical matter more readily intelligible. Wolff, finally, first taught philosophy to speak German, an accomplishment which it has never since unlearned. To him (after Leibnitz, to whom the first impulse is due) belongs the merit of having for ever raised the German language into the organ of philosophy.

As regards the matter and scientific classification of the Wolfian philosophy, the following remarks may suffice. Wolff defines philosophy to be the science of the possible, as such. Possible is what involves no contradiction. Wolff defends this definition from the reproach of assumption. He does not pretend by it, he says, that he or any philosopher knows all that is possible. He means by it only to claim for philosophy the whole field of human knowledge; and he thinks it always better, in defining philosophy, to have in view the highest perfection of which it is capable, however much it may, in actuality, fall short of it. Of what does this science of the possible consist? Wolff, relying on the empirical fact, that there are in us two faculties, one of cognition and another of volition, divides philosophy into two great branches, into theoretical philosophy (an expression, however,



which is first employed by his disciples) or metaphysics, and into practical philosophy. Logic precedes both as propædeutical of the study of philosophy in general. Metaphysics, again, are subdivided into (*a.*) Ontology, (*b.*) Cosmology, (*c.*) Psychology, (*d.*) Natural Theology; while the subdivisions of practical philosophy are (*a.*) Ethics (the object of which is man as man), (*b.*) Economics (the object of which is man as member of the family), and (*c*) Politics (the object of which is man as member of the state).

*Ontology*, then, is the first part of metaphysics. It treats of what are now called categories, of those radical notions of thought which as applicable to all objects, must be first investigated. Aristotle was the first to propose a table of such principles, but he had got at his categories only empirically. Nor does it succeed much better with the ontology of Wolff, which looks like a philosophical vocabulary. At the top of it Wolff places the proposition of contradiction: the same thing cannot at once be and not be. The notion of possibility comes next. Possible is what involves no contradiction. That is necessary, the contrary of which is a contradiction; that contingent, the contrary of which is equally possible. All that is possible, though only imaginary, is something; while whatever neither is, nor is possible, is nothing. When one thing is made up of many things, the former is a whole, the latter are parts. The magnitude of anything lies in the number of its parts. If one thing A implies something that renders it intelligible why another thing B is, then that in A that renders B intelligible is the ground of B. The whole A that contains the ground is a cause. What contains the ground of its other qualities is the principle (nature) of the thing. Space is the order of things that are together; place the special manner in which one thing exists simultaneously with all others. Motion is change of place. Time is the order of what is successive, etc. (*b.*) *Cosmology.*—Wolff defines the world to be a series of mutable things which exist beside and follow after one another, but as a whole are so connected with one another that the one always contains the ground of the other. Things are connected together either in space or time. The world, by reason of this universal connexion, is one, a compound. The mode of composition constitutes the nature of the world. This mode is incapable of change. Ingredients can

neither be added to it, nor taken from it. All alterations in the world must arise from its own nature. In this reference the world is a machine. Events in the world are only hypothetically necessary, so far, that is, as those that preceded them have been so and so; they are contingent, so far as the world might have been constituted differently. As regards the question whether the world has a beginning in time, Wolff vacillates. As God is independent of time, the world again eternally *in* time, the latter cannot be eternal in the same manner as God. Neither space nor time is to Wolff anything substantial. A body is what is composed of matter, and possesses moving force. The forces of a body are named collectively its nature, and the sum of all beings is nature in general. What has its ground in the nature of the world, is natural; what not, is supernatural, or a miracle. Wolff treats, lastly, of the perfection and imperfection of the world. The perfection of the world lies in this, that all things, whether simultaneous or successive, mutually agree. But as everything has its own special rules, each individual must dispense with as much perfection as is necessary to the symmetry of the whole. (*c.*) *Rational psychology.*—What in us is conscious of its own self, that is soul. The soul is conscious of other things also. Consciousness is distinct or indistinct. Distinct consciousness is thought. The soul is a simple, incorporeal substance. It possesses the power of perceiving the world. In this sense a soul may be conceded to the lower animals; but a soul possessed of understanding and will, is spirit, and spirit is the possession of man alone. A spirit which is in union with a body is properly a soul, and this is the distinction between man and the superior beings. The movements of the soul and those of the body mutually agree by reason of the pre-established harmony. The freedom of the human will consists in the power to choose which of two possible things appears the better. But the will does not decide without motives; it always chooses that only which it esteems preferable. The will would appear thus to be compelled to act by its ideas; but the understanding is not compelled to accept something as good or as bad; and neither is the will, therefore, under compulsion, but free. Our souls, as simple, are indivisible, and therefore imperishable; the lower animals, however, being devoid of understanding, are incapable after death of reflecting on their bypast life. Only the human soul is capable of this, and only the human soul, therefore, is immortal. (*d.*) *Natural Theology.*—Wolff here proves the existence of God by the cosmological argument. God might have created many worlds, but *this* world he created as the best. This world is called into existence by the will of God. His intention in creating it was the expression of his perfection. The evil in the world springs not from the will of God, but from the limited nature of human things. God permits it only as means to the good.



This brief aphoristic exposition of Wolff's metaphysics will show how closely it is related to that of Leibnitz. The latter loses, however, in speculative depth, in consequence of the exclusively popular form (form of *understanding* proper) which it receives at the hands of Wolff. What with Wolff recedes most into the background is the specific peculiarity of the monadology: *his* simple beings are not concipient like the monads, but return more to the nature of the atoms: hence in his case numerous inconsistencies and contradictions. His special metaphysical value lies in the ontology, to which he has given a much more accurate development than his predecessors. A multitude of technical terms owe to him their formation and introduction into the language of philosophy.

The philosophy of Wolff, clear and readily intelligible as it was, more accessible, moreover, than that of Leibnitz, in consequence of being composed in German, soon became popular philosophy, and acquired an extensive influence. Among those who have made themselves meritorious by its scientific extension, are particularly to be mentioned *Thümming* (1687-1728), *Bilfinger* (1693-1750), *Baumeister* (1708-1785), *Baumgarten* (of æsthetic renown, 1714-1762), and *Meier* (1718-1777), the disciple of Baumgarten.

## XXXVI.—*The German Illumination.*

UNDER the influence of the Leibnitz Wolfian philosophy, but without any scientific connexion with it, there arose in Germany, during the second half of the eighteenth century, a popular philosophy of an eclectic nature, the many forms of which have been comprehended under the general name of *the German illumination*. The importance of this movement consists less in

its relation to the history of philosophy than in its relation to the history of general culture: for it is at *formation* and *information*, the intellectual production of people of liberal minds (*Basedow*), that it aims; and thus enlightened reflection, intelligent moralization (in soliloquies, letters, morning meditations, etc.), is the form in which it philosophizes. It is the *German* counterpart of the *French* illumination. As the latter closes the *realistic* series with its own extreme, materialism or objectivity devoid of mind, so the former brings the *idealistic* series to an end in its tendency to an extreme of subjectivity from which all objectivity has been banished. To people of this way of thinking, the empirical individual ego, as such, ranks as the absolute, as exclusive authority; for it they forget all else, or rather all else has value for them only in proportion as it relates to the subject, subserves the subject, contributes to the advancement and internal satisfaction of the subject. It is thus that the question of the immortality of the soul is now the chief philosophical problem (in which reference *Mendelssohn*, 1729-1786, is particularly to be named as the most important individual in the movement); the eternal duration of the soul is the chief object of interest; the more objective ideas or articles of faith, as the personality of God, for instance, are not by any means questioned, but in general, little interest can be felt in them, for that nothing can be known of God is now a fixed conviction. Both being of subjective interest, scientific attention is bestowed in the second place on moral philosophy (*Garve*, 1742-1798, *Engel*, 1741-1802, *Abbt*, 1738-1766) and æsthetics (particularly *Sulzer*, 1720-1779). In general the consideration of what is profitable, of the particular end, is what occupies the foreground; utility is the special criterion of truth; what serves not the subject, advances not the interests of the subject, is thrown aside. In harmony with this intellectual tendency is that towards a predominatingly teleological mode of viewing nature (*Reimarus*, 1694-1765), as well as the eudæmonistic character of the ethical principles in vogue. The happiness of the individual is regarded as the highest principle, as the supreme end (*Basedow*, 1723-1790). Reimarus wrote a work on the 'advantages' of religion, and endeavoured to prove in it that the tendency of religion is not to injure earthly enjoyments, but rather to add to them. In the same way *Steinbart* (1738-1809) laboured in several



works to establish the thesis, that all wisdom consists in the attainment of happiness, that is of enduring pleasure, and that the Christian religion, far from forbidding this, is itself a system of eudæmonism. For the rest, there was entertained towards Christianity only a moderate respect; any claim, on its part, to an authority that might seem disagreeable to the subject (as in the dogma of a Hell) was resisted; the desire, on the whole, was to replace the positive dogma, so far as possible, by natural religion; Reimarus, for example, the most zealous defender of theism and natural theology, is the author also of the *Wolffenbüttel Fragments*. The new-won consciousness of his own rights was exercised by the subject in criticising the positive and traditional element (the evangelical history), and in rationalizing the supernatural. Finally, the subjective character of the period reveals itself in the prevalent literary mannerism of autobiographies, confessions, etc.; the isolated ego is an object to itself of admiring study (Rousseau, 1712-1778, and his Confessions); it holds the mirror up to its own particular states, its own sentiments, its own excellent intentions—a coquetting with its own self that often rises to morbid sentimentality. From what has been said, then, it will now appear that the extreme of subjectivity constitutes the character of the illumination in Germany. This illumination, therefore, forms the completion and the close of the previous idealistic tendency.

## XXXVII.—*Transition to Kant.*

IDEALISM and realism, the objects of our attention for some time now, have both ended in one-sided extremes. Instead of reconciling from within, as it were, the contradiction of thought and existence, they have both issued in a denial of the one or the other factor. To realism matter was one-sidedly the absolute, to idealism the empirical ego, extremes both which threatened to convert philosophy into unphilosophy. In Germany, as in France, indeed, it had sunk to the flattest popular philosophy. But now *Kant* appeared, and again united in a common bed the two branches that, isolated from each other, seemed on the point of being lost in the sands. Kant is the great restorer of philosophy, again conjoining into unity and totality the one-sided philosophical endeavours of those who preceded him. Polemi-

cally or irenically he is related to all of them, to Locke as much as to Hume, to the Scottish philosophers not less than to the earlier English and French moralists, to the Leibnitz-Wolfian philosophy as well as to the materialism of the French, and the eudæmonism of the German illumination. As regards his relation, in particular, to the one-sided realistic and idealistic tendencies, it was constituted as follows. While, on the one hand, empiricism assigned to the ego, in subordination to the world of sense, a *rôle* of pure passivity, and while idealism, on the other hand, assigned to it, in superiority to the world of sense and in its sufficiency for its own self, a *rôle* of pure activity, Kant, for his part, endeavoured to harmonize the pretensions of both. He proclaimed the ego, as practical ego, free and autonomous, the unconditioned arbiter of itself, if as theoretical ego, receptive certainly, and conditioned by the world of sense. Further, he proclaimed the existence of both sides in the theoretical ego itself; for if it is true with empiricism, that experience is the only field of knowledge, that to experience we owe all the *matter* of knowledge, it is equally true with idealism that there exists in our knowledge, notwithstanding, an *a priori* factor, that we use notions *in* experience, inderivative *from* experience, but provided *for* experience *a priori* in the mind.

In order still further to facilitate a general view of the vast and complicated structures which compose the philosophy of Kant, we proceed to add a preliminary explanation of its fundamental notions, together with a concise exposition of its chief propositions and chief results. As object of his critical inquiry, Kant took the function of cognition in man, or, more simply, the origin of our experience. It is as exercising this scrutiny of cognition, that his philosophy is critical, is criticism. Again, it is in consequence of Kant having called his consideration of the relation of cognition to the objects of cognition a *transcendental reflection* that his philosophy has received the further name of transcendental; and *that* to Kant is a transcendental (this word is to be distinguished from transcendent), cognition, 'which has to do not so much with the objects, as with our *knowing* of the objects, so far as there is any possibility of an *a priori* knowing of them.' The mentioned scrutiny now occurs in the *Kritik of Pure Reason*, and yields the following results. All cognition is the product of two factors,—



the cognising subject and the cognised objects. The one factor, the external object, contributes the material, the empirical material, of knowledge; the other factor, the subject, contributes the form,—those notions, namely, by virtue of which alone any connected knowledge, any synthesis of individual perceptions into a whole of experience, is possible. Were there no external world, there were no perceptions; and were there no *a priori* notions, these perceptions were an indefinite plurality and *maniness*, without mutual combination, and without connexion in the unity of an understood whole. In that case there would not be any such thing as experience. Therefore: whilst perceptions without notions are blind, and notions without perceptions are void, cognition (knowledge) is a union of both, in this way, that it fills up the frames of the notions with the matter of experience, or disposes the matter of experience into the net of the notions. Nevertheless, we do not know things as they are in themselves. *First*, because of the forms native to the mind, that is, because of the categories. In adding to the given manifold of perception, as the matter of cognition, our own notions as its form, we must, it is plain, produce some change in the objects: these objects, evidently, are not thought as they are in themselves, but only as we apprehend them; they appear to us only as modified by categories. Besides this there is another subjective addition. In the *second* place, that is, we cognise things not as they are in themselves, because the very perceptions which we embrace in the frames of our notions, are not pure and uncoloured, but have been equally obliged to traverse a subjective medium, time and space namely, which are the universal forms of all objects of sense. Space and time are also subjective additions, then, forms of sensuous perception, and no less native to the mind than the *a priori* notions, the categories themselves. Whatever is to be perceived, must be perceived in time and space; without them perception is impossible. It follows, then, that we only know appearances, not things themselves, in their own true nature, as divested of space and time.

If these propositions of Kant be superficially taken, it may appear as if the Kantian criticism were nowise substantially in advance of the empiricism of Locke. Nevertheless, it *is* in advance, even if for nothing else than the investigation of the *a priori* notions. That the notions

cause and effect, substance and accident, and others, the like, which the human mind finds itself obliged to *think into* all perceptions of sense, and under which it really thinks everything that it does think,—that these arise not from sensuous experience, this Kant is compelled to acknowledge as well as Hume. For example, when affections reach us from several directions, when we perceive a white colour, a sweet taste, a rough surface, etc., and now speak of a single thing, a piece of sugar perhaps, it is only the manifold of the sensations that is given us from without, while the notion of unity cannot come to us through sensation, but is a notion added to the manifold, a category. But Kant now, instead of denying the reality of these notions, took a different step, and assigned to the mental activity (which supplies these forms of thought to the matter of experience) a special and peculiar province. He demonstrated these forms of thought to be immanent laws of the intellect, necessary principles of action in the understanding that are essential to every experience, and he endeavoured to attain the complete system of them by an analysis of the faculty of thought. (They are twelve in number: unity, plurality, totality; reality, negation, limitation; substantiality, causality, reciprocity; possibility, actuality, necessity.) Kant's philosophy, then, is not empiricism, but idealism. It is not that dogmatic idealism, however, which transfers all reality to conception, but rather a critical subjective idealism that distinguishes in the conception (perception) an objective and a subjective element, and vindicates for the latter a place as important in every act of cognition as is that of the former.

From what has been said, there result—and the one in consequence of the other—the three chief propositions under which the Kantian cognitive theory may be comprehended: 1. *We know only appearances, not things in themselves.* The empirical matter that comes to us from without is, in consequence of our own subjective additions (for we receive this matter first of all into the subjective frames of time and space, and then into the equally subjective forms of the innate notions), so worked up and relatively altered that, like the reflection of a luminous body variously bent and broken by the surface of a mirror, it no longer represents the thing itself, in its original quality, pure and unmixed. 2. Nevertheless, *experience alone is our field of knowledge, and any science*



*of the unconditioned does not exist.* And naturally so: for as every act of cognition is a product of empirical matter and intellectual form, or is founded on the co-operation of sense and understanding, any cognition of things is impossible where the factor of empirical matter fails. Knowledge through intellectual notions alone is illusory, inasmuch as, for the notion of the unconditioned, which understanding sets up, sense is unable to show the unconditioned object which should correspond to it. The question, therefore, which Kant placed at the head of his entire critique, How are synthetic judgments (judgments of extension as in contradistinction to analytic judgments, judgments of explanation), possible *a priori?* can we, *a priori*, by thought alone, extend our knowledge beyond experience of sense? *is* knowledge of the supersensuous possible?—must be answered by an unconditional No. 3. If, nevertheless, human cognition *will* overstep the limits of experience assigned to it, that is to say, if it *will* become transcendent, then it can only involve itself in the greatest contradictions. The three *ideas of reason*—namely, (*a.*) the psychological idea of an absolute subject, that is, of the soul or of the immortality; (*b.*) the cosmological idea of the world as totality of all conditions and phenomena; (*c.*) the theological idea of an all-perfect being—are so much without application to empirical reality, so much mere fabrications of reason, regulative, not constitutive principles, to which no objective sensuous experience corresponds, that they rather lead—if applied to experience, or conceived, that is, as actually existent objects—to the most glaring logical errors, to the most striking paralogisms and sophisms. Kant has attempted to demonstrate these errors, whether unavoidable contradictions of reason with its own self, or only subreptions and false conclusions, in the case of all the ideas of reason. By way of example, let us take the cosmological idea. Directly reason, in reference to this idea, in reference to the cosmical whole, proceeds to give utterance to its transcendental dicta, directly it seeks to apply, that is, the forms of the finite to the infinite, it is at once seen, that in all cases the antithesis of the dictum is quite as demonstrable as the thesis. The thesis, The world has limits in space and a commencement in time; the antithesis, The world has no limits in space and no commencement in time: these propositions are both susceptible of an equal proof. It follows, conse-

quently, that speculative cosmology is but an assumption of reason. The theological idea, for its part again, rests on mere logical subreptions and vicious conclusions, as (with great acuteness) was proved by Kant in the case of the various arguments hitherto dogmatically proposed for the existence of God. It is impossible, therefore, in the theoretical sphere, and with perfect stringency in all respects, to prove and comprehend the existence of the soul as a *real* subject, the existence of the world as a single system, and the existence of God as a supreme being: the metaphysical problems proper lie beyond the limits of philosophical knowledge.

This is the negative of the Kantian philosophy: its supplementing positive is to be found in the *Kritik of Practical Reason.* If mind, theoretically or cognitively, is under condition and control of the objects of sense—no complete act of knowledge being possible without an element of perception,—practically, or as regards action, it directly transcends the *given* element (the motive of sense), it is determined only by the categorical imperative, by the moral law, by its own self, and is therefore free and autonomous. The ends it pursues are such as it—a moral spirit—gives itself. External objects are no longer arbiters and masters for it; it has no longer to adapt itself to them when it would become participant of truth; it is they now must serve it, mere selfless (unconscious) means for the realization of the moral law. If the theoretical spirit was bound to the phenomenal world in its blind obedience to mere necessity, the practical spirit, on the contrary, belongs, through its relation to the absolute end, through its own essential freedom, to a purely intelligible, to a supersensuous world. This is Kant's practical idealism, which directly leads to the three (as theoretical verities previously declared insufficient) practical postulates—the immortality of the soul, the freedom of the will, and the existence of God. So much by way of introduction: we proceed now to the more systematic exposition of the philosophy of Kant.

## XXXVIII.—*Kant.*

IMMANUEL KANT was born, April 22, 1724, at Königsberg in Prussia. His father, an honest, worthy saddler, and his mother, a woman of piety and intelligence, exercised over him from his earliest years a wholesome influence. In the year 1740 he entered the university as a student of theology, but applied himself by inclination to the study of philosophy, mathematics, and physics. He opened his literary career in his twenty-third year, 1747, with an essay 'Thoughts on the true Estimate of Motive Forces.' For several years, he was obliged by circumstances to act as domestic tutor in various families in the neighbourhood of Königsberg. In the year 1755 he settled at the university as a private lecturer (where he remained as such for fifteen years), and gave courses of logic, metaphysics, physics, mathematics, and, at a later period, of morals, anthropology, and physical geography, mostly in the sense of the Wolfian school, though not without an early expression of his doubts with respect to dogmatism. At the same time, after the publication of his first dissertation, he was indefatigable as an author, although his decisive great book, the *Kritik of Pure Reason*, appeared only in his fifty-seventh year, 1781, and was followed by his *Kritik of Practical Reason* in 1788, as by his *Kritik of Judgment* in 1790. In the year 1770, at the age of forty-six, he became an ordinary professor of logic and metaphysics, the duties of which position he continued actively to carry on till 1797, after which year he was prevented from lecturing by the increasing frailties of age. Calls to Jena, to Erlangen, to Halle, he declined. Soon the noblest as well as the most studious of knowledge thronged from the whole of Germany to Königsberg, in order to place themselves at the feet of the Prussian sage. One of his admirers, Reuss, professor of philosophy at Würzburg, and who was able to make only a very short stay at Königsberg, entered the room of Kant with the words: 'He had come no less than 760 miles just to see him and speak to him.' During the last seventeen years of his life he occupied a small house with a garden in a retired part of the town, where he was able to pursue his own quiet and regular mode of life without disturbance. He lived extremely simply, but liked a good table and a comfortable social meal. Kant was never out of his own province—never as far even as Dantzic. His longest journeys were to neighbouring country houses. Nevertheless he acquired by the reading of descriptions of travels a very accurate knowledge of the surface of the globe, as indeed is specially proved by his lectures on physical geography. He was well acquainted with all Rousseau's works, and the

*Emile*, in particular, on its first appearance, prevented him for several days from taking his usual walks. Kant died February 12, 1804, in the eightieth year of his age. He was of middle size, slenderly built, with blue eyes, and always healthy, till in his old age he became childish. He never married. A strict regard for truth, pure integrity, and simple modesty distinguished his character.

Though Kant's great, era-making work, the *Kritik of Pure Reason*, only appeared in 1781, its author had in smaller works long been making efforts in the same direction; and this was particularly the case with his inaugural dissertation 'On the Form and Principles of the Sensible and the Intelligible World,' which was published in 1770. The internal genesis of his critical position was attributed by Kant especially to Hume. 'It was reflection on David Hume that several years ago first broke my dogmatic slumber, and gave a completely new direction to my inquiries in the field of speculative philosophy.' The critical idea first developed itself in Kant, then, on the occasion of his abandonment of the dogmatic metaphysical school, the Wolfian philosophy, in which he had been educated, for the study of empiricism in the sceptical form which had been impressed upon it by Hume. 'Hitherto,' says Kant at the close of his *Kritik of Pure Reason*, 'there was no choice but to proceed either dogmatically like Wolff, or sceptically like Hume. The critical path is the only one that is still open. If the reader has had the courtesy and the patience to travel it thus far in my society he may now contribute his help towards the conversion of this footpath into a highway, by which, what many centuries were unable to effect, what, indeed, was impossible before the expiration of the present century, there shall be attained complete satisfaction for human reason in that which has always occupied its curiosity, but always hitherto in vain.' Kant, lastly, possessed the clearest consciousness of the relation of criticism to all preceding philosophy. He compares the revolution effected by himself in philosophy to that effected by Copernicus in astronomy. 'Hitherto the assumption was, that all our knowledge must adapt itself to the objects; but every attempt to ascertain anything in regard to them *a priori* by notions, in order to extend our knowledge, was by such a presupposition necessarily rendered vain. Suppose we now try, then, whether better success may not attend us in the problems of metaphysics, if we assume objects to be under a necessity of adapting themselves to the nature of our cognition. The proposal, at all events, evidently harmonizes better with the desired possibility of an *a priori* knowledge which should be able to determine something in regard to objects before they were yet given to us. It is with us here as it was at first with the idea of Copernicus, who, dissatisfied with the theory of the heavens, on the assumption that the starry host circled round the spectator, tried whether it would not succeed better, as regarded explanation, if, on the contrary, he supposed the spectator to move and the stars to remain at rest.' In these words, the principle of subjective idealism is expressed in the clearest manner and with the most perfect consciousness.



In the succeeding exposition of the Kantian philosophy we follow, as the most appropriate, the course which has been taken by Kant himself. Kant's principle of division and disposition is a psychological one. All the faculties of the soul, he says, may be reduced to three, which three admit not of being again reduced to any other. They are, cognition, emotion, will. For all the three the first contains the principles, the regulating laws. So far as cognition contains the principles of its own act, it is theoretical reason. So far again as it contains the principles of will, it is practical reason. And so far, lastly, as it contains the principles of the emotion of pleasure and pain, it is a faculty of judgment. The Kantian philosophy (on its critical side) falls thus into three Kritiken (critiques): 1. The Kritik of (pure) Theoretic Reason; 2. The Kritik of Practical Reason; and 3. The Kritik of Judgment.

## I.—The Kritik of Pure Reason.

The Kritik of Pure Reason, says Kant, is the ground-plan of all our possessions through pure reason (of all that we can know *a priori*), systematically arranged. What are these possessions? What is our contribution to the effecting of an act of perception? With this object before him, Kant passes under review the two main stadia of our theoretical consciousness, the two main factors of all cognition: sense and understanding. First, then, what is the *a priori* possession of our perceptive faculty, so far as it is sensuous, and, second, what is the

*a priori* possession (applicable in perception) of our understanding? The first question is considered in the transcendental *Æsthetic* (a term which is to be taken naturally not in its usual, but in its etymological import, as 'science of the *a priori* principles of sense'); the second, in the transcendental *Logic* (specially in the *Analytic*). Sense and understanding, namely—explanatorily to premise this—are the two factors of all perceptive cognition, the two stems, as Kant expresses it, of knowledge, which spring, perhaps, from a common but unknown root. Sense is the receptivity, understanding the spontaneity of our cognitive faculty; by means of sense, which alone affords us intuitions (in the signification of the *sensuous* perceptive elements), are objects *given* to us; by means of understanding, which forms notions, are objects *thought* (but still in a perceptive reference). Notions without intuitions (perceptive elements strictly sensuous) are empty: without notions such intuitions (or perceptions) are blind. Perceptions (proper) and notions constitute the mutually complementary constituents of our intellectual activity. What now are the *a priori* ('lying ready in the mind from the first'), principles of our sensuous, what those of our thinking faculty, in the operation of cognition? The first of these questions is answered, as said, in

1. *The transcendental Æsthetic.*—To anticipate at once the answer: the *a priori* principles of sense, the innate forms of sensuous perception, are space and time. Space, namely, is the form of external sense by means of which objects are given to us as existent without us, and as existent also apart from and beside one another. If we abstract from all that belongs to the *matter* of sensation (in any perception), there remains behind only space, as the universal form into which all the materials of the external sense dispose themselves. If we abstract from all that belongs to the matter of our inner sense, there remains the time which the mental movement occupied. Space and time are the ultimate forms of external and internal sense. That these forms are contained *a priori* in the human mind, Kant proves, first directly in what he calls the *metaphysical exposition*, from the nature of the very notions of them, and, second, indirectly, in what he calls the *transcendental exposition*, by demonstrating that, unless these notions were really *a priori*, certain sciences of undoubted truth would be altogether impossible. (1.) The *metaphysical exposition* has to show, (*a.*) that time and space are given *a priori*, (*b.*) that both, nevertheless, belong to sense (to the 'æsthetic,' then), and not to the understanding (not to the 'logic'), that is to say, that they are perceptions (proper), and not conceptions (notions). (*a.*) That space and time are *a priori* is evident from this, that every experience, if only to be able to take place, always presupposes time and space as already existent. I perceive something external to myself: but this *external to myself* presupposes space. Further, I have sensations either together or after one another: these relations, it is obvious, presuppose the existence of time. (*b.*) Space and time are not on this account, however, *notions*, but forms of sensuous perception, or simply perceptions. For general notions contain their particulars only *under* them, and not as parts *in* them; whereas all particular spaces and all particular times are contained in space and time generally. (2.) In the *transcendental exposition* Kant makes good his indirect proof by showing that certain universally accepted sciences are inconceivable without assuming the a-priority of space and time. Pure mathematics is only possible, if space and time are pure and not empirical perceptions. Kant, therefore, placed the whole problem of the transcendental æsthetic in the single question, How are the pure mathematical sciences possible? Time and space, says Kant, are the element in which pure mathematics moves. But mathematics takes it for granted that its propositions are necessary and universal. Necessary and universal propositions, however, can never originate in experience; they must have a foundation *a priori*: time and space, consequently, from which mathematics takes its principles, cannot possibly be given *a posteriori*, but necessarily *a priori*, as pure (non-empirical) intuitions or perceptions of—general not special—sense. There is, therefore, an *a priori* knowledge, a science founded on *a priori* grounds; and he who would deny this must deny at the same time the possibility of mathematics. But if the foundations of mathematics are *a priori* perceptions, it is natural to infer further that there will also be *a priori* notions, and the possibility consequently of a pure science of metaphysics, consisting as well of the *a priori* perceptions as of the *a priori* notions. This is the positive result of the transcendental æsthetic, and with this positive side there is connected, precisely enough, a

negative one. Perception, or direct, immediate cognition, is possible to us only through sense, the universal forms of which are only space and time. But as these intuitions or perceptions of space and time are not (externally) objective relations, but only subjective forms, a certain subjective element must be held to mingle in all our perceptions: we perceive not things as they are in themselves, but only as they appear to us through this subjectivo-objective medium of space and time. This is the sense of the Kantian dictum that we know not things in themselves, but only appearances. It were too much to assert, however, that all things are in space and time. This is so only *for us*, and in such manner too, that all appearances of outer sense are in space as well as in time, whereas all appearances of inner sense are only in time. Kant by no means intends, however, to convey by this, that the world of sense is a mere show. What he maintains, he says, is, transcendentally, the subjective ideality, but, empirically nevertheless, the objective reality of space and time. Things without us as certainly exist as we ourselves, or our own states within us: only they exhibit themselves to us not as, independent of space and time, they are in themselves. As regards the thing in itself that lies behind the appearance of sense, Kant, in the first edition of his work, expressed himself as if it were possible that it and the ego might be one and the same thinking substance. This thought, which Kant only threw out as a conjecture, has been the source of the whole subsequent evolution of philosophy. That the ego is affected, not by an alien thing in itself, but purely by its own self,—this became the leading idea of the system of Fichte. In his second edition, however, Kant expunged the conjecture.

Space and time being discussed, the transcendental æsthetic is at an end: it is now ascertained what is *a priori* in sense. But the mind of man is not contented with the mere receptivity of sense: it does not merely receive objects, but applies to them its own spontaneity, embracing them in its intelligible forms, and striving to think them by means of its notions (still possibly in a *perceptive* reference). The investigation of these *a priori* notions or forms of thought, 'lying ready in the understanding from the first,' like the forms of space and time in the sensible faculty, is the object of the *transcendental analytic* (which forms the first part of the *transcendental logic*).



2. *The transcendental Analytic.*—The first task of the analytic will be the discovery of the pure intelligible notions. Aristotle has already attempted to construct such a table of categories; but, instead of deriving them from a common principle, he has merely empirically taken them up as they came to hand: he has committed the error also of including space and time among them, which, however, are not intelligible, but sensible forms. Would we have, then, a complete and systematic table of all pure notions, of all the *a priori* forms of thought, we must look about us for a principle. This principle, from which the pure notions are to be deduced, is the logical judgment. The primitive notions of understanding may be completely ascertained, if we will but completely examine all the species of judgments. This examination Kant accomplishes by means of ordinary logic (which, however, is *a priori* in its nature as well as a demonstrated doctrine for thousands of years). In logic there are four species of judgments, namely, judgments of

| *Quantity.* | *Quality.* | *Relation.* | *Modality.* |
|---|---|---|---|
| Universal, | Affirmative, | Categorical, | Problematic, |
| Particular, | Negative, | Hypothetical, | Assertoric, |
| Singular. | Infinite or Limitative. | Disjunctive. | Apodictic. |

From these judgments there arises an equal number of primitive pure notions, the categories, namely, of

| *Quantity.* | *Quality.* | *Relation.* | *Modality.* |
|---|---|---|---|
| Totality, | Reality, | Substance and Accident, | Possibility and Impossibility, |
| Plurality, | Negation, | Causality and Dependence, | Existence and Non-existence, |
| Unity.* | Limitation. | Community (reciprocity). | Necessity and Contingency. |

From these twelve categories, in combination with each other (or with the pure *modi* of sense), all the other pure or *a priori* principles may be derived. The adduced categories having demonstrated themselves to be the *a priori* possession of the intellect, these two consequences follow: (1.) These notions are *a priori*, and possess, therefore, a necessary and universal validity; (2.) *per se* they are empty forms, and obtain filling only by perceptions. But as our perception is only a sensuous one, these categories have validity only in application to sensuous perception, which, for its part, is raised into experience proper (perfected perception), only by being taken up into the pure notions (and so brought to an ob-

* Kant himself (*K. of P. R.*) makes *Einheit* first, and *Allheit* last.

jective synthesis). And here we arrive at a second question: How does this take place? How are objects (at first mere blind blurs of special sensation, and the perceptive forms of general sense), subsumed under the empty intelligible forms (and so made, for the first time, properly *objects*)?

This subsumption would have no difficulty if objects and notions were homogeneous. But they are not so. The objects, as coming into the mind through sense, are of sensuous nature. The question is, then, How can *sensible* objects be subsumed under *intelligible* notions? how can the categories be applied to objects? how can principles be assigned in regard to the manner in which we have to think (perceive) things in correspondence with the categories? This application cannot be direct, a third something must step between, which shall unite in itself as it were both natures, which, on one side, then, shall be pure, or *a priori*, and on the other side sensuous. But such are the two pure perceptions of the transcendental æsthetic, such are time and space, especially the former, and such are time and space alone. A quality of time, such as simultaneousness, is, as *a priori*, on one side homogeneous with the categories; while on another side, inasmuch as all objects can only be perceived in time, it is homogeneous with objects. In this reference Kant calls the quality of time a transcendental *schema*, and the use to which the mind puts it, he calls the transcendental schematism of the pure intellect. The schema is a product of imagination, which spontaneously determines inner sense so; but the schema is not to be confounded with the mere image. The latter is always an individual perception; the former, on the contrary, is a universal form which imagination produces as picture of a category, through which this category itself becomes capable of application to the appearance in sense. For this reason a schema can exist only in the mind, and can never be sensuously perceived. If, looking closer now at this schematism of the understanding, we ask for the transcendental time-quality of each category, the answer is this: (1.) The relation of time that constitutes the schema of *quantity* is *series in time* or number,—a conception that consists of the successive addition of like unit to like unit. The pure notion of magnitude I cannot otherwise conceive than by figuring in imagination a succession of units. If I arrest the movement in the very beginning,



I have unity; if I allow it to continue longer, plurality; and if I allow it to continue without limit, totality. The notion of magnitude, then, is applicable to appearances of sense only through the scheme of this homogeneous succession. (2.) The *contents of time* constitute the schema of *quality*. If I would apply the pure notion of reality (due to logical quality) to anything sensuous, I conceive to myself a filled time, a contained matter of time. Real is what fills time. Similarly to conceive the pure notion of negation, I figure an empty time. (3.) The categories of *relation* find their schemata in the *order of time*. For if I want to conceive a determinate relation, I call up always a determinate order of things in time. Substantiality appears thus as permanence of reality in time, causality as regular sequence in time, reciprocity as regular co-existence of the states of one substance with the states of another. (4.) The categories of *modality* derive their schemata from connexion *with* time as a whole, that is, from the manner in which an object belongs to time. The schema of possibility is agreement with the conditions of time in general; the schema of actuality is existence in a certain time; the schema of necessity is existence in all time.

We are now, then, equipped with all the appliances necessary for the subsumption of *sensible* appearances (phenomena) under *intelligible* notions, or for the application of the latter to the former, in order to show how, from this application, experience, coherent cognitive perception, results. We have (1.) the various classes of categories, of those *a priori* notions, namely, which, operative for the whole sphere of perception, render possible a synthesis of perceptions in a whole of experience. And we have (2.) the schemata through which to apply them to the objects of sense. With every category and its schema there is conjoined a special mode of reducing the objects of sense under a universal form of intellect, and, consequently, of bringing unity into cognition. Or with every category there are principles of cognition, *a priori* rules, points of view, to which the objects of sense must be subjected in order to perfect them into a coherent experience. These principles, the most universal synthetic judgments regulative of experience, are, in correspondence with the four categorical classes, as follows:—(1.) All objects of sense are, as only apprehended in time and space, in their form magnitudes, *quanta*, multiples, supplied by the

conception of a definite space or a definite time, and consequently *extensive magnitudes* or wholes consistent of parts successively added. All perception depends on our imagination apprehending objects of sense as extensive magnitudes in time and space. For this reason too, then, all perceptions will be in subjection to the *a priori* laws of extensive quantity, to those of geometrical construction, for instance, or to that of the infinite divisibility, etc. These principles are the *axioms of intuition or general perception*—laws obligatory on perception as a whole. (2.) In reference to reality, all objects of sense are *intensive magnitudes*, inasmuch as without a greater or less degree of impression on sense, no definite object, nothing real, could be at all perceived. This magnitude of reality, the object of sensation, is merely intensive, or determinable according to degree, for sensation is not anything extended either in space or time. All objects of perception are intensive as well as extensive magnitudes, and subjected to the general laws of the one not less than to those of the other. All the powers and qualities of things, accordingly, possess an infinite variety of degrees, which may increase or decrease; anything real has always some degree, however small; intensive may be independent of extensive magnitude, etc. These principles are the *anticipations of sensation*, rules which precede all sensation, and prescribe its general constitution. (3.) Experience is possible only through the conception of a *necessary connection of perceptions*; without a necessary order of things and their mutual relation in time, there cannot be any knowledge of a definite system of perceptions, but only contingent individual perceptions. (*a.*) The first principle in this connexion is, that amid all the changes of phenomena, *the substance remains the same*. Where there is nothing permanent, there cannot be any definite relation of time, any duration of time; if in the conditions of a thing, I am to assume one certain condition as earlier or later, if I am to distinguish these conditions in time, I must oppose the thing itself to the conditions it undergoes, I must conceive it as persistent throughout all the vicissitudes of its own conditions, that is, I must conceive it as self-identical substance. (*b.*) The second principle here is, That all mutations obey the law of the connexion of *cause and effect*. The consequence of several conditions in time is only then a fixed and determinate one, when I assume the one as cause of the other, or as necessarily preceding it in obedience to a rule or law, the other as effect of the former, or as necessarily succeeding it; determinate succession in time is only possible through the relation of causality; but without a determinate succession in time there were no experience; the causal relation consequently is a principle of all empirical knowledge; only this relation it is that produces connexion in things; and without this relation we should only have incoherent subjective states. (*c.*) A third principle further is, that all co-existent substances are in *complete reciprocity*; only what acts in community is determined as inseparably simultaneous. These three principles are the *analogies of experience*, the rules for cognising the relations of things, without which there were for us mere piece-meal units, but no whole, no *nature* of things. (4.) The *postulates of empirical thought* correspond to the categories of modality. (*a.*) What agrees with the formal conditions of experience is possible, or may exist. (*b.*) What agrees with the material conditions of experience is actual, or does exist. (*c.*) What is connected with actual existence through the universal conditions of experience, is necessary, or must exist. These are the only possible and authentic synthetic judgments *a priori*, the first lines of all metaphysics. But it is to be rigidly understood, that of all these notions and principles we can make only an empirical use, or that we can apply them, never to things in themselves, but always only to things as objects of possible experience. For the notion without object is an empty form; an object can be found for it again only in perception; and, lastly, perception, the pure perceptions of time and space, can acquire filling only through sensation. Without reference to human experience, the *a priori* notions and principles, therefore, are but a play of the imagination and understanding with their own ideas. Their special function is, that by their means we are able to spell actual perceptions, and so read them as experience. But here we encounter an illusion which it is hard to avoid. As, namely, the categories are not derived from sense, but have their origin *a priori*, it easily seems as if they might be extended beyond sense in their application also. But this idea, as said, is an illusion. Of a knowledge of things in themselves, of noumena, our notions are not capable, inasmuch as, for their *filling*, perception provides only appearances (phenomena), and the thing in itself is never present in any

possible experience; our knowledge is restricted to phenomena alone. To have confounded the world of phenomena with the world of noumena, this is the source of all the perplexities, errors, and contradictions of metaphysics hitherto.

Besides the categories, which in strictness are intended only for experience, although, indeed, they have been often erroneously applied beyond the bounds of experience, there are certain other similar notions which from the first are calculated for nothing else than to deceive, notions which have the express function to transgress the bounds of experience, and which therefore may be named transcendent. These are the fundamental notions and propositions of former metaphysics. To investigate these notions, and to strip from them the false show of objective knowledge, this is the business of the second part of the transcendental logic, or *of the transcendental dialectic.*

3. *The transcendental Dialectic.*—Reason is distinguished from understanding in the more restricted sense. As the understanding has its categories, reason has its ideas. As the understanding forms axioms from the notions, reason from the ideas forms principles in which the axioms of the understanding reach their ultimate unity. The first principle of reason is, to find for the conditioned knowledge of understanding the unconditioned, and so complete the unity of knowledge in general. Reason, then, is the faculty of the unconditioned, or of principles. As it refers, however, not to objects directly, but only to understanding, and to the judgments of understanding concerning objects, its true function is only an immanent one. Were the ultimate unity of reason understood, not merely in a transcendental sense, but assumed as an actual object of knowledge, this were, on our part, a transcendent use of reason; we should be applying the categories to a knowledge of the unconditioned. In this transcendent or false use of the categories originates the *transcendental show* (*Schein*) which amuses us with the illusion of an enlargement of understanding beyond the bounds of experience. The detection of this transcendental show is the object of the transcendental dialectic.

The speculative ideas of reason, derived from the three forms of the logical syllogism, the categorical, the hypothetical, and the disjunctive, are themselves threefold:—

(1.) The psychological idea, the idea of the soul as a thinking substance (the object of preceding rational psychology).



(2.) The cosmological idea, the idea of the world as totality of all phenomena (the object of preceding cosmology).

(3.) The theological idea, the idea of God as ultimate condition of the possibility of all things (the object of preceding rational theology).

Through these ideas, in which reason attempts to apply the categories to the unconditioned, it gets only entangled in unavoidable show and deception. This transcendental show, or this optical illusion of reason, displays itself variously in the various ideas. In the psychological ideas reason commits a simple paralogism (*the paralogisms of pure reason*): in the cosmological ideas it is the fate of reason to find itself compelled to make contradictory assertions (the *antinomies*): and in the theological ideas reason is occupied with a void ideal (*the ideal of pure reason*).

(*a.*) *The psychological idea, or the paralogisms of pure reason.*—What Kant propounds under this rubric is intended completely to subvert the traditional rational psychology. This doctrine viewed the soul as a psychical thing with the attribute of immateriality; as a simple substance with the attribute of indestructibility; as an intellectual, numerically identical substance with the predicate of personality; as an inextended thinking substance with the predicate of immortality. All these statements are, according to Kant, subreptions, *petitiones principii.* They are derived one and all of them from the simple 'I think:' but the 'I think' is neither perception nor notion; it is a mere consciousness, an act of the mind which attends, unites, supports all perceptions and notions. This act of thought now is falsely converted into a thing; for the ego as subject, the existence of an ego as object, as soul, is substituted; and what applies to the former analytically is transferred to the latter synthetically. To be able to treat the ego as an object and apply categories in its regard, it would have required to have been empirically given in a perception, which is impossible. From this it follows, too, that the arguments for the immortality rest on sophisms. I can certainly ideally separate my thought from my body, but it by no means follows on that account that my thought, if really separated from the body, would continue. The result that Kant claims for his critique of rational psychology is this: There is no rational psychology as a doctrine which might procure us an addition to the knowledge of ourselves, but

only as a discipline which sets insurmountable bounds to speculative reason in this field, in order, on the one hand, that we may not throw ourselves into the lap of a soulless materialism, and on the other hand that we may not lose ourselves in the fanaticism of a spiritualism that is inapplicable to life. We may view this discipline, too, as admonishing us to regard the refusal of reason perfectly to satisfy the curious in reference to questions that transcend this life as a hint of reason's own to withdraw our attempts at knowledge from fruitless extravagant speculation, and apply them to the all-fruitful practical field.

(*b.*) *The antinomies of cosmology.*—For a complete list of the cosmological ideas, we require the cue of the categories. In (1.) a quantitative reference to the world, time and space being the original *quanta* of all perception, it were necessary to determine something in regard to their totality. (2.) As regards quality, some conclusion were required in reference to the divisibility of matter. (3.) On the question of relation, we must endeavour to find for all the effects in the world the complete series of their causes. (4.) As for modality, it were necessary to understand the contingent in its conditions, or, in other words, the absolute system of the dependency of the contingent in the phenomenal world. Reason, now, in attempting a determination of these problems, finds itself involved in contradiction with its own self. On each of the four points contradictory conclusions may be proved with equal validity. As (1.) the thesis: The world has a beginning in time and limits in space; and the antithesis: The world has neither beginning in time nor limits in space. (2.) The thesis: Every compound consists of simples, nor does there exist in the world anything else than simples and their compounds; and the antithesis: No compound consists of simples, nor does there exist in the world anything that is simple. (3.) The thesis: Causality according to the laws of nature is not the only one from which the phenomena of the world may be collectively derived, there is required for their explanation a causality of free-will as well; and the antithesis: Free-will there is none, all happens in the world solely by law of nature. Lastly, (4.) the thesis: There is something in the world, which, either as its part or as its cause, is an absolutely necessary being; and the antithesis: Neither within the world nor without the world does there exist any absolutely necessary being as its cause. This dialectical conflict of the cosmological ideas demonstrates its own nullity.



(*c.*) *The ideal of pure reason or the idea of God.*—Kant shows first of all how reason attains to the idea of an all-perfect being, and then directs himself against the attempt of former metaphysicians to prove the existence of this all-perfect being. His critique of the traditional arguments for the existence of God is essentially as follows:—(1.) The *ontological* proof reasons thus: There is possible a being the most real of all. But in all reality, existence is necessarily included; if I deny this existence, then, I deny the possibility of a being the most real of all, which is self-contradictory. But, rejoins Kant, existence is nowise a reality, or a real predicate, that can be added to the notion of a thing; existence is the position of a thing with all its qualities. But the suppression of existence suppresses not one single significate of a notion. Though, then, it possess every one of its significates, it does not on that account possess existence also. Existence is nothing but the logical copula, and nowise enriches the (logical) comprehension of the subject. A hundred actual crowns, for example, contain no more than a hundred possible ones: only for my means are the cases different. A being the most real of all may, consequently, be quite correctly thought as the most real of all, even when also thought as only possible, and not as actual. It was therefore something quite unnatural, and a mere revival of school-wit, to propose to dig out of an arbitrary idea the existence of its correspondent object. All the pains and trouble, then, of this famous argument are only lost; and a man is no more likely to be made, by mere ideas, richer in knowledge, than a merchant in means by the addition to his balance of a few ciphers. While the ontological proof reasoned *to* necessary existence, (2.) the *cosmological* proof takes its departure *from* necessary existence. If anything exists, there must exist an absolutely necessary being as its cause. But I myself at all events exist, therefore there exists also an absolutely necessary being as my cause. This proof, so far, is now criticised by reference to the last of the cosmological antinomies. The conclusion perpetrates the error of inferring from the phenomenal contingent a necessary being in excess of experience. But were this inference even allowed, it implies no God. It is reasoned further, then, that it is possible only for

that being to be absolutely necessary who is the sum of all reality. But if we invert this proposition and say, that being who is the sum of all reality is absolutely necessary, we are back in the ontological proof, with which, then, the cosmological must fall also. The cosmological proof resorts to the stratagem of producing an old argument in a new dress, in order to have the appearance of appealing to two witnesses. (3.) But if, in this way, neither notion nor experience is adequate to prove the existence of God, there is still left a third expedient, to begin, namely, with a specific experience and so determine whether it may not be possible to conclude from the frame and order of the world to the existence of a supreme being. This is the object of the *physico-theological* proof, which, taking its departure from the existence of design in nature, proceeds, in its main moments, thus: everywhere there is design; design in itself is extrinsic or contingent as regards the things of this world; there exists by necessity, therefore, a wise and intelligent cause of this design; this necessary cause is necessarily also the most real being of all beings: the most real being of all beings has consequently necessary existence. Kant answers, the physico-theological proof is the oldest, the clearest, and the fittest for common sense; but it is not apodictic. It infers from the form of the world a cause proportioned to the form. But even so we have only an originator of the form of the world, only an architect of the world: we have no originator of matter, we have no author and creator of the universe. In this strait a shift is made to the cosmological argument again, and the originator of the form is conceived as the necessary being whom things imply. We have thus an absolute being whose perfection corresponds to the perfection of the universe. In the universe, however, there is no absolute perfection; we have thus, then, only a very perfect being; and for a most perfect being we must have recourse once more to the ontological argument. The teleological argument, then, implies the cosmological; the cosmological the ontological; and out of this circle the metaphysical demonstration is unable to escape. The ideal of a supreme being, accordingly, is nothing else than a *regulative* principle of reason which leads us to view all connexion in the world, *as if* it were due to an all-sufficient necessary cause, as source of unity and foundation of the rule of explanation: in which case,



indeed, it is unavoidable that in consequence of a transcendental subreption, we should mistake a merely formal principle for a *constitutive* one, and hypostasize it withal into a creative absolute intelligence. In truth, however, a supreme being constitutes, so far as the speculative exercise of reason is concerned, a mere but faultless ideal, a notion which is the close and the crown of human knowledge, but whose objective reality, nevertheless, can, with apodictic certainty, neither be proved nor refuted.

The preceding critique of the ideas of reason leaves one more question to answer. If these ideas are without an objective value, why do they exist in us? Being necessary, they will possess, of course, their own good reason. And this good reason has just been pointed out on occasion of the theological idea. Though not constitutive, they are regulative principles. In arranging our mental faculties, we never succeed better than when we proceed 'as if' there were a soul. The cosmological idea gives us a hint to regard the world 'as if' the series of causes were infinite, without exclusion however of an intelligent cause. The theological idea enables us to consider the entire world-complex under the point of view of an organized unity. In this way, then, these ideas, if not constitutive principles to extend our knowledge beyond the bounds of experience, are regulative principles to arrange experience and reduce it under certain hypothetical unities. If they compose not an organon for the discovery of truth, they still constitute—the whole three of them, psychological, cosmological, and theological—a canon for the simplification and systematization of our collective experiences.

Besides their regulative import, the ideas possess also a practical one. There is a species of certainty, which, though not objectively, but only subjectively competent, is pre-eminently of a practical nature, and is called belief or conviction. If the liberty of the will, the immortality of the soul, and the existence of God, are three cardinal tenets, such that, though not necessary for knowledge, they are still urgently pressed on us by reason, then without doubt they will have their own value in the practical sphere as regards moral conviction. This conviction is not logical, but moral certainty. As it rests, then, entirely on subjective grounds of the moral feeling, I cannot say, It is morally certain, but only, I am morally

certain that there is a God, etc. That is to say, belief in God and another world is so interwoven with my moral feeling, that, as little as I run risk of losing this latter, so little am I apprehensive of being deprived of the former. With this we are already within the sphere of *practical reason*.

## II.—The Kritik of Practical Reason.

With the Kritik of Practical Reason we enter an entirely different world, in which reason is amply to recover all that has been lost in the theoretical sphere. The problem now is essentially, almost diametrically, different from the problem then. The speculative Kritik had to examine whether pure reason is adequate to an *a priori* knowledge of objects: the object of the practical Kritik is to examine whether pure reason is capable of an *a priori* determination of the will in reference to objects. The question of the former concerned the *a priori* cognisableness of objects: that of the latter concerns, not the cognisableness of objects, but the motives of the will, and all that is capable of being known in the same connexion. All therefore, in the Kritik of Practical Reason presents itself in an order precisely the reverse of the Kritik of Pure Reason. The primitive determinants of cognition are perceptions; those of volition are principles and notions. The Kritik of Practical Reason must begin, therefore, with the moral principles, and, only after their establishment, proceed to any question of the relation of practical reason to sense. The results, too, of these two Kritiken are opposed the one to the other. If in the theoretical sphere, because reason that sought the thing in itself became transcendent (perceptionless), the ideas remained only on the whole negative, the contrary is now the case in the practical sphere. In this sphere the ideas demonstrate themselves true and certain, in a manner direct and immanent, without once quitting the limits of self-consciousness and inner experience. The question here is of the relation of reason, not to outer things, but to an internal element, the will. And the result is, that reason is found to be capable of influencing the will purely from its own self, and hence now the ideas of free-will, immortality, and God, recover the certainty which theoretical reason had been unable to preserve to them.

That there is a determination of the will by pure reason, or that reason has practical reality, this is not immediately certain, inasmuch as the actions of men appear conditioned, in the first instance, by the sensuous motives of pleasure and pain, of passion and inclination. The Kritik of Practical Reason will require to examine, then, whether these determinants of will are actually the only ones, or whether there is not also a higher active faculty in which not sense, but reason, gives law, and where will follows not mere incentives from without, but obeys in pure freedom a higher practical principle from within. The demonstration of all this belongs to the analytic of practical reason, while to the dialectic of practical reason it belongs to consider and bring to resolution the antinomies which result from the relation between the practical authority of pure reason, and that of the empirical instigations of sense.



1. *Analytic.*—The reality of a higher active faculty in us, is made certain by the fact of the *moral law*, which is nothing else than a law spontaneously imposed on the will by reason itself. The moral law stands high above the lower active faculty in us, and, with an inward irresistible necessity, orders us, in independence of every instigation of sense, to follow it absolutely and unconditionally. All other practical laws relate solely to the empirical ends of pleasure and happiness; but the moral law pays no respect to these, and demands that we also shall pay them none. The moral law is no hypothetical imperative that issues only prescripts of profit for empirical ends; it is a *categorical imperative*, a law, universal and binding on every rational will. It can derive consequently only from reason, not from animal will, and not from individual self-will; only from pure reason, too, and not from reason empirically conditioned: it can only be a commandment of the autonomous, one, and universal reason. In the moral law, therefore, reason demonstrates itself as practical, reason has direct reality in it. The moral law it is that shows pure reason to be no mere idea, but a power actually determinative of will and action. This law it is, also, that procures perfect certainty and truth for another idea, the idea of free-will. The moral law says, 'Thou canst, for thou shouldst,' and assures us thus of our own freedom, as indeed it is, in its own nature, nothing but the will itself, the will in freedom from all sensuous matter of desire, and constituting therefore our very highest law

of action. But now there is the closer question, What, then, is it that practical reason categorically commands? For an answer to this question we must first consider the empirical will, the natural side of mankind.

Empirical will consists in the act of volition being directed to an object in consequence of a pleasure felt in it by the subject; and this pleasure again roots in the nature of the subject, in the susceptibility for this or that, in natural desires, etc. Under this empirical will must be ranked all appetition for any precise object, or all *material* volition; for nothing can be an object of subjective will unless there exist a natural sensibility in consequence of which the object is not indifferent, but suggests pleasure to the subject. All material motives of will come under the principle of agreeableness or felicity, or, in the subject, of self-love. The will, so far as it follows such, is dependent on, and determined by, empirical natural ends, and is, consequently, not autonomous, but heteronomous. But from this it follows that any law of reason unconditionally obligatory on all rational beings, must be totally distinct from all material principles, must contain, indeed, nothing material whatever. Material principles are of empirical, contingent, variable nature. For men are not at one about pleasure and pain, what is pleasant to one being unpleasant to another; and even were they at one in this respect, the agreement would only be contingent. Material motives, consequently, are not capable, like laws, of being considered binding on every one; every single subject is at liberty to select other motives. Subjective rules of action are named by Kant *maxims* of volition, and he censures those moralists who set up such maxims as universal moral principles.

Maxims, nevertheless, though not the supreme principle of morality, are yet necessary to the autonomy of the will, as without them there were no definite object of action. Only union of the two sides, then, can conduct us to a true principle of morals. To that end the maxims must be relieved of their limitation, and enlarged into the *form* of universal laws of reason. Only those maxims must be adopted as motives which are susceptible of being made universal laws of reason. The *supreme principle* of morals is consequently this: act so that the maxim of your will may be capable of being regarded as a principle of universal validity, or so that from the thought of your maxim as a law universally obeyed, no



contradiction results. All material moral principles, as only of empirical, sensuous, heteronomous nature, are excluded by this formal moral principle: in it there is a law provided that raises the will above the lower motives, a law that reduces all wills to unanimity, a law that, binding on all rational beings, is consequently the one true law of reason itself.

A further question now is, what induces the will to act according to this supreme law of reason? The answer of Kant is, that the only spring of human will must be the moral law itself, or respect for it. An action in accordance with the law, but only for the sake of felicity or sensuous inclination, and not purely for the sake of the law itself, gives rise to mere *legality*, not to *morality*. The inclinations of sense, taken collectively, are self-love and self-conceit. The former is restricted by the moral law, the latter completely quashed. Whatever quells our self-conceit, however, whatever humbles us, must appear to us extremely estimable. Such being the action of the moral law, then, respect will be the positive feeling entertained by us in regard of the moral law. This respect is indeed a feeling, but it is no feeling of mere sense, no pathological feeling; on the contrary, it is an intellectual feeling produced by consciousness of the practical law of reason, and is directly opposed to the other. This respect again is, on one side, as subjection to law, pain, but on the other side, as the subjection is that of our own reason, pleasure. Respect, awe, is the only feeling which beseems man in presence of the moral law. Natural love to it is not to be expected from men who, as sensuous beings, are subjected to many passions which resist the law: love to the law, then, can only be regarded as a mere ideal. The moral purism of Kant—that is, his anxiety to purge the motives of action from all the greeds of sense—ends thus in rigorism, or the gloomy view that duty can only be reluctantly performed. It is this exaggeration that is pointed to in a well-known *Xenium* of Schiller's. The following scruple of conscience, namely,

> 'Willing serve I my friends all, but do it, alas, with affection;
> And so gnaws me my heart, that I'm not virtuous yet—

Schiller answers thus,

> 'Help, except this, there is none: you must strive with might to contemn them,
> And with horror perform then what the law may enjoin.'

2. *Dialectic.*—Pure reason must always have its dialectic, for it lies in its nature to demand the unconditioned for the given conditioned. Thus, too, then, practical reason demands for the conditioned goods which influence the action of man, an unconditioned supreme good. What is this *summum bonum?* If the ultimate good, the fundamental condition of all other goods be understood by it, then it is virtue. But virtue is no completed good, for finite rational beings require, as sentient, felicity. The greatest good is then only complete, therefore, when the greatest felicity is united with the greatest virtue. How now are these two moments of the greatest good mutually related? Are they analytically or synthetically combined? The former was the opinion of the greater number of the ancient, especially Greek, moral philosophers. They either regarded felicity, like the Stoics, as accidental moment in virtue, or virtue, like the Epicureans, as accidental moment in felicity. Felicity, said the Stoics, is the consciousness of virtue; virtue, said the Epicureans, is the consciousness of the maxim that leads to felicity. But, says Kant, an analytic union is impossible in the case of two such heterogeneous notions. A synthetic union, consequently, can alone take place between them, a causal union, namely, in such manner that the one is cause and the other effect. Practical reason must regard such a relation as its greatest good, and must propose the thesis, therefore: virtue and felicity are to be correspondently connected as cause and effect. But this thesis founders at once on actual fact. Neither of them is the direct cause of the other. Neither is the desire of felicity motive to virtue, nor is virtue the efficient cause of felicity. Hence the antithesis: virtue and felicity are not necessarily correspondent, and are not mutually related as cause and effect. Kant finds the solution of this antinomy in the distinction between the sensible and the intelligible world. In the world of sense virtue and felicity are certainly not correspondent; but rational beings, noumenally, are citizens of a supersensuous world where conflict between virtue and felicity does not exist. Here felicity is always adequate to virtue; and with his translation into the supersensuous world man may expect as well the realization of the supreme good. But, as observed, the supreme good has two constituents; (1.) supreme virtue, and (2.) supreme felicity. The necessary



realization of the first moment postulates the *immortality of the soul*, that of the second the *existence of God.*

(1.) For the supreme good, there is required in the first place perfected virtue, holiness. But now no sensuous being can be holy. A being composed of reason and sense is only capable of approaching in an infinite series nearer to holiness as to an ideal. But such infinite progress is only possible in an infinite duration of personal existence. If then the supreme good is to be realized, the soul's immortality must be presupposed.

(2.) For the supreme good there is required, in the second place, perfected felicity. Felicity is the condition of a rational being in the world, for whom everything happens according to his wish and his will. But this can only be realized when entire nature agrees with his objects, and this is not the case. As active beings we are not causes of nature, and the moral law affords no ground for a connexion of morality and felicity. Still we *ought to*, or we *are to* endeavour to promote the supreme good. It must be possible therefore. The necessary union of these two moments is consequently postulated, that is to say, the existence of a cause of nature distinct from nature, and which will constitute the ground of this union. A being must exist, as common cause of the natural and the moral world; such a being withal as knows our minds, an intelligence, and, according to this intelligence, distributes to us felicity. Such a being is God.

Thus from practical reason there flow the idea of immortality and the idea of God, as previously the idea of free-will. The idea of free-will derived its reality from the possibility of the moral law; the idea of immortality derives its reality from the possibility of perfected virtue, and that of God from the necessity of perfected felicity. These three ideas, therefore, which to speculative reason were insoluble problems, have acquired now, in the field of practical reason, a firmer basis. Nevertheless, they are not even now theoretical dogmas, but, as Kant names them, practical postulates, necessary presuppositions of moral action. My theoretical knowledge is not extended by them: I know now only that there are objects correspondent to these ideas, but of these objects I know nothing more. Of God, for example, we possess and we know no more than this idea itself. Should we construct a theory of the supersensuous founded on categories alone,

we should only convert theology into a magic lantern of chimeras. Practical reason, nevertheless, has still procured us certainty as regards the objective reality of these ideas which theoretical reason was obliged to leave in abeyance, and so far therefore the former has the advantage. This respective position of the two faculties has been wisely calculated in reference to the nature and destiny of man. For the ideas of God and immortality remaining dubious and dark *theoretically*, introduce not any impurity into our moral principles through fear or hope, but leave free scope for awe of the law.

So far the Kantian critique of practical reason. By way of appendix we may here give a summary of Kant's *religious views* as expressed in his work, *Religion within the Limits of Pure Reason*. The fundamental thought of this work is the reduction of religion to morals. Between morals and religion there may exist a double relation: either the former founds on the latter, or the latter on the former. In the first case, however, fear and hope would become the motives of moral action: there remains for us, then, only the second way. Morality leads necessarily to religion, for the supreme good is necessarily the ideal of reason, and is capable of being realized only by God; but religion must not by any means alone impel us to virtue, for the idea of God ought never to become a mere moral motive. Religion is to Kant the recognition of all our duties as commandments of God. It is revealed religion when through it I must first of all know that something is a commandment of God before I can also know that it is my duty: it is natural religion when I must first of all know that something is a duty before I can know that it is a commandment of God. A church is an ethical community which has for object the fulfilment and the greatest possible realization of the moral prescripts,—an association of such as with united efforts will resist sin and advance morality. The church, so far as it is not an object of possible experience, is the invisible church: it is then a mere idea of the union of all good men under the moral government of God. The visible church, again, is that church which represents the kingdom of God on earth, so far as that is possible by man. The requisites, and consequently the criteria of the true visible church (which dispose themselves according to the table of the categories, because this church is one given in experience), are as follows: (*a.*) With reference



to *quantity*, the church must possess totality or *universality*, and, though divided indeed into contingent opinions, must still be established on such principles as necessarily unite all these opinions in a single church. (*b.*) The *quality* of the true visible church is *purity*, as it is animated only by moral motives at the same time that it is purified as well from the fatuousness of superstition as from the mania of fanaticism. (*c.*) The *relation* of the members of the church reciprocally rests on the principle of liberty. The church is a *free state*, therefore; neither a hierarchy nor a democracy, but a free, universal, permanent spiritual union. (*d.*) In *modality*, the church aims at immutability of constitution. The laws themselves must not be changed, though the right of modification be reserved for more contingent arrangements that concern administration alone. What alone is able to constitute the foundation of a universal church is moral, rational belief, for only such belief is capable of being communicated to every one with conviction. But in consequence of the peculiar weakness of human nature, this pure belief can never be counted on as the sole foundation of a church; for it is not easy to convince mankind that striving to virtue, a good life, is all that is required by God: they suppose always that they must render to God a particular traditional worship, in regard to which all the merit depends on the rendering of it. For the establishment of a church, therefore, there is still necessary an historical and statutory belief that is founded on certain facts. This is the so-called creed. In every church, then, there are two elements, the pure moral, rational belief, and the historico-statutory creed. On the relation of these two elements it depends, whether a church shall possess worth or not. The statutory is in function always only the vehicle of the moral element. Whenever the statutory element becomes an independent object, claims an independent authority, the church sinks into corruption and unreason; whenever the church assumes the pure belief of reason it is in the way to the kingdom of God. This is the distinction between true worship and false worship, religion and priestcraft. The dogma has value only so far as it has a moral core. Without this moral belief the apostle Paul himself would have hardly put faith in the legends of the creed. The doctrine of the Trinity, for example, contains, in the letter, absolutely nothing for practice.

Whether three or ten persons are to be worshipped in the Godhead, is indifferent, inasmuch as no difference of rule results thence for the conduct of life. Even the Bible and the interpretation of the Bible are to be placed under the moral point of view. The revealed documents must be interpreted in accordance with the universal rules of rational religion. Reason is in matters of religion the supreme interpreter of Scripture. Such interpretation may in reference to the text often appear forced: nevertheless it must be preferred to such a literal interpretation as yields nothing for morality, or is directly opposed to ethical principles. The possibility of such moral interpretation, without distortion of the literal sense, lies in the fact of the instinct to moral religion having been always present in the reason of man. The representations of the Bible have only to be divested of their mystical husk (and Kant has given examples of this in his moral interpretations of the most important dogmas) in order to obtain a universal rational sense. The historical element of the sacred writings is in itself indifferent. The riper reason becomes, the more it is capable of being satisfied with the exclusive moral interpretation, the less indispensable become the statutory dogmas of the creed. The transition of the creed into a purely rational faith, is the coming of the kingdom of God, towards which, however, we can draw near only in an infinite progress. The actual realization of the kingdom of God is the end of the world, the close of history.

### III.—The Kritik of Judgment.

Kant sketches the notion of this science as follows. The two mental faculties which have been hitherto considered, are those of cognition and volition. As regards the former (cognition), that only understanding is possessed of constitutive *a priori* principles, was proved in the Kritik of Pure Reason. As regards the latter (volition), that only reason is possessed of constitutive *a priori* principles, was proved in the Kritik of Practical Reason. Whether *judgment* now, as middle-term between *understanding* and *reason*, supplies its object, the *emotion* of pleasure and pain, as middle-term between *cognition* and *volition*, with constitutive (not merely regulative) *a priori* principles of its own,—this is what the



Kritik of Judgment has to determine. This faculty, judgment, is by virtue of its peculiar function a middle-term between understanding (simple apprehension) as faculty of notions, and reason (reasoning) as faculty of principles (syllogistic premises). Theoretical reason has taught us to comprehend the world only according to laws of nature: practical reason has disclosed to us a moral world in which all is under the control of liberty. There were, then, an insurmountable cleft between the kingdom of nature and the kingdom of liberty (free-will), should judgment prove unable to replace this cleft by the notion of a common ground of unity for both. The warrant of such expectation lies in the notion of judgment itself. The function of this faculty being to think the particular as contained under a universal, it will naturally refer the empirical plurality of nature to a supersensual transcendental principle as ground of unity to this plurality. This principle, as object of judgment, will, therefore, be the notion of *design* in nature, for design is nothing else than this supersensual unity which constitutes the reason of the reality of objects. Then all design, all realization of a proposed end, being attended with satisfaction, it will be easily understood why judgment has been said to contain the laws for the emotion of satisfaction and dissatisfaction.

Adaptation in nature, however, may be either subjectively or objectively conceived. In the first case, I experience pleasure or pain directly on the presentation of an object, and before I have formed any notion of it. An emotion of this nature can be referred only to a harmonious relation subsisting between the form of the object and the faculty that perceives it. Judgment in this subjective aspect is *æsthetic judgment*. In the second case I form first of all a notion of the object, and then decide whether the object corresponds to this notion. That my perception should find a flower beautiful, it is not necessary that I should have formed beforehand a notion of this flower. But to find contrivance in the flower, to that a notion is necessary. Judgment as the faculty cognisant of objective adaptation is named *teleological judgment*.

1. *Critique of æsthetic judgment.*—(*a.*) *Analytic.*—The analytic of æsthetic judgment is divided into two principal parts, the analytic of the *beautiful* and the analytic of the *sublime*.

To discover on what the naming of an object *beautiful* depends, we must analyse the judgments of Taste as the faculty that is cognisant of the beautiful. (1.) In *quality* the beautiful is the object of a satisfaction that is wholly disinterested. This disinterestedness distinguishes the satisfaction of the beautiful as well from that of the *agreeable* as from that of the *good*. In the agreeable and in the good also, I am interested. In the case of the agreeable my satisfaction is accompanied by a feeling of desire. My satisfaction in the good is at the same time motive to my will for the realization of it. Only in the case of the beautiful is my satisfaction free from interestedness. (2.) In *quantity* the beautiful gives a *universal* satisfaction. As regards the agreeable every one is convinced that his pleasure in it is only a personal one; but whoever says, This picture is beautiful, expects every one else to find it so. Nevertheless, this decision of taste does not arise from notions; its universality, therefore, is merely subjective. My judgment is not that all objects of a class are beautiful, but that a certain particular object will appear beautiful to all beholders. The judgments of taste are *singular* judgments. (3.) As regards *relation* the beautiful is that in which we find the form of adaptation without conceiving at the same time any particular *end* of this adaptation. (4.) In modality, the beautiful is, without notion, object of a *necessary* satisfaction. Every consciousness may be at least conceived as capable of causing pleasure. The agreeable actually does cause pleasure. But the beautiful *must* cause pleasure. The necessity of the æsthetic judgment, then, is a necessity of the agreement of all in a judgment which is regarded as example of a universal rule, which rule again it is impossible to assign. The subjective principle which underlies the judgments of taste, therefore, is a *sensus communis* that determines only by feelings and not by notions what should please or displease.

*Sublime* is what is absolutely or beyond all comparison great,—that compared with which all else is small. But there is nothing in nature that may not be surpassed by yet a greater. The infinite alone is absolutely great, and the infinite is only to be found in ourselves as idea. The sublime is not properly in nature, then, but is only reflected from the mind to nature. We call that sublime in nature which awakens in us the idea of the infinite. As with the beautiful, it is principally quality that is in



question, so with the sublime it is principally quantity; and this quantity is either magnitude of extension (the mathematical sublime) or magnitude of power (the dynamical sublime). In the sublime the satisfaction concerns formlessness rather than form. The sublime excites a powerful mental emotion, and gives pleasure only through pain, or by occasioning a momentary feeling of obstructed vitality. The satisfaction of the sublime, then, is not so much positive pleasure, as rather wonder and awe,—what may be called negative pleasure. The moments of the æsthetic appreciation of the sublime are the same as in that of the beautiful. (1.) In quantitative reference that is sublime which is absolutely great, and in comparison with which all else is small. The æsthetic estimation of magnitude, however, does not lie in number but in the mere perception of the subject. The magnitude of a natural object, in the comprehension of which imagination vainly exerts its entire faculty, infers a supersensual substrate great beyond all measure of sense, and with which properly the feeling of the sublime is connected. It is not the object, the raging sea, for example, that is sublime, but rather the mental emotion of him who contemplates it. (2.) As regards *quality*, the sublime creates not pleasure like the beautiful, but rather in the first instance pain, and only through pain pleasure. The feeling of the inadequacy of imagination in the æsthetic estimation of magnitude produces pain; but again the consciousness of our independent reason in its superiority to imagination produces pleasure. Sublime, then, in this respect is that which in its opposition to the interest of the senses directly pleases. (3.) As concerns *relation*, the sublime causes nature to appear as a power in relation to which we possess nevertheless a consciousness of our superiority. (4.) As for *modality*, our judgments in reference to the sublime are as necessarily valid as those in reference to the beautiful—with this difference only, that the former are accepted by others with greater difficulty than the latter, because for our sense of the sublime culture and developed moral ideas are necessary.

(*b.*) *Dialectic.*—A dialectic of æsthetic judgment is possible, like every other dialectic, only where there are judgments that pretend to an *a priori* universality. For dialectic consists in the contrariety of such judgments. The antinomy of the principles of taste depends on the

two opposed moments of the relative judgment, that it is purely subjective, and yet claims universality. Hence the two commonplaces: In matters of taste there can be no dispute; and, Tastes differ. This gives rise to the following antinomy, (1.) Thesis: The judgment of taste is not founded on notions, otherwise dispute were possible (proofs might be led). (2.) Antithesis: The judgment of taste is founded on notions, otherwise, despite its diversity, dispute were impossible. This antinomy, says Kant, is only an apparent one, and disappears as soon as the two propositions are more precisely understood. The thesis, namely, should run so: The judgment of taste is not founded on definite notions, or, it is not susceptible of strict proof; the antithesis again so: The judgment of taste is founded on a notion; but an indefinite notion, that, namely, of a supersensual substrate of the phenomena. In this construction there is no longer any contradiction between the two propositions.

Now, at the close of the inquiry, an answer is possible for the question: does the adaptation of things to our judgment of them (their beauty and sublimity), lie in us or in them? Æsthetic realism assumes that the supreme cause of nature has willed the existence of things which should appear to imagination as beautiful and sublime. The organized forms are the principal witnesses for this view. But, again, even in its merely mechanical forms, nature seems to testify such a tendency to beauty, that it is possible to believe in a mere mechanical production even for those more perfect forms as well, and the adaptation, consequently, would lie, not in nature, but in us. This is the position of idealism, and renders possible an explanation of the capacity to pronounce *a priori* on the beautiful and the sublime. The highest mode of viewing the æsthetic element, however, is to regard it as a symbol of the moral good. And thus, in the end, taste, like religion, is placed by Kant as a corollary to morals.

2. *Critique of teleological judgment.*—In the preceding, the subjectively æsthetic adaptation of the objects of nature has been considered. But these objects stand to each other also in a relation of adaptation. This objective adaptation is now to be the consideration of teleological judgment.

(*a.*) *Analytic of teleological judgment.*—This analytic has to determine the kinds of objective (material) adaptation. These are two: an external, and an internal.



External adaptation, as it designates merely the utility of one thing for another, is only something relative. The sand, for example, deposited on the sea-shore is good for pine-trees. For animals to live on the earth, the latter must produce the necessary nourishment, etc. These examples of external adaptation show that the means in such a case possess not adaptation in themselves, but only contingently. The sand is not understood in consequence of it being said that it is means for pine-trees: it is intelligible *per se* quite apart from any notion of use. The earth produces not food because men must necessarily live on the earth. In short, this external or relative adaptation is to be understood by a reference to the mechanism of nature alone. Not so the internal adaptation, which exhibits itself principally in the organic products of nature. These are so constituted that each of their parts is end, and each also instrument or means. In the generative process the product of nature generates itself as a genus; in the process of growth the product of nature produces itself as an individual; in the process of formation each part of the individual produces its own self. This organism of nature is inexplicable by mere mechanical causes: it admits of being explained only teleologically, or by means of final causes.

(*b.*) *Dialectic.*—This antithesis of natural mechanism and of teleology, it is the business of the dialectic of teleological judgment to reconcile. On the one side we have the thesis: All production of material things must be held possible only according to mechanical laws. On the other side the antithesis is: Some products of material nature cannot be held possible on the mere supposition of mechanical laws, but demand for their explanation the existence of final causes. If these two propositions were assumed as constitutive (objective) principles for the possibility of objects themselves, they would contradict each other; but as mere regulative (subjective) principles for the investigation of nature they are not contradictory. Earlier systems treated the notion of design in nature dogmatically; they either affirmed or denied it as—with reference to nature—an actual thing in itself. We, however, aware that teleology is only a regulative principle, are indifferent as to whether internal adaptation belongs to nature or not: we maintain only that our judgment must regard nature [illegible] We look the notion of design, so to

speak, *into* nature, leaving it quite undetermined whether, perhaps, another understanding, not discursive like our own, might not find any such notion quite unnecessary for the comprehension of nature. Ours is a discursive understanding, that, proceeding ever from the parts, conceives the whole as product of them. The organic products of nature, therefore, in which, on the contrary, the whole is originating principle and prius of the parts, it cannot otherwise conceive than under the point of view of the notion of design. Were there, however, an intuitive understanding which should recognise in the universal the particular, in the whole the parts, as already co-determined, such an understanding would, without resorting to the notion of design, comprehend the whole of nature by reference to a single principle.

If Kant had been but serious with this notion of an intuitive understanding, as well as with the notion of immanent adaptation, he would have surmounted in principle the position of subjective idealism, to escape from which he had made several attempts in his *Kritik of Judgment*. In effect, however, he has only casually suggested these ideas, and left their demonstration to his successors.

## XXXIX.—*Transition to the Post-Kantian Philosophy.*

THE Kantian philosophy soon acquired in Germany an almost absolute sovereignty. The imposing boldness of its general position, the novelty of its results, the fertility of its principles, the moral earnestness of its view of the universe, above all, the spirit of liberty and moral autonomy which breathed in it, and which powerfully supported the tendencies of the time, procured it a reception equally enthusiastic and universal. It excited an interest in philosophical inquiries that extended itself throughout all the educated classes, and in such proportions as were never before witnessed in any other nation. In a short time a numerous school sprang up around it, and there were soon few universities in Germany where it was not represented by talented disciples. It presently exerted an important influence on all departments of science and literature, particularly on theology, morals, and the liberal sciences (*Schiller*). The majority of the writers, however, of the Kantian school confine them-



selves to popular explanatory applications of the received doctrine, and even the most talented and independent of the supporters or improvers of the Critical Philosophy (as *Reinhold*, 1758-1813; *Bardili*, 1761-1808; *Schulze*, *Beck*, *Fries*, *Krug*, *Bouterweck*), sought only to find for it a firmer basis of support, or to remove from it certain faults and defects, or to demonstrate its position generally in a manner more logical and exact. Among those who continued and further developed the Kantian philosophy there are only two men, Fichte and Herbart, who have earned the prominence of an epoch-making position, and the praise of actual progress; while amongst its opponents (Hamann, Herder), only one man, *Jacobi*, was of philosophical importance. These three philosophers, therefore, are next to be considered; but, before entering on the exacter analysis, we shall premise a brief preliminary characterization of their relation to Kant.

(1.) Kant had critically annihilated dogmatism; his *Kritik of Pure Reason* had for result the theoretic indemonstrability of the three ideas of reason,—God, free-will, and immortality. True, he had recalled in a practical interest (as postulates of practical reason), these very ideas which had just been banished in a theoretical one. But as postulates, as mere practical presuppositions, they afford no theoretic certainty, and remain exposed to doubt. In order to remove this uncertainty, this despair of knowledge, which appeared to be the end of the Kantian philosophy, *Jacobi*, a younger contemporary of Kant's, opposed as antithesis to the position of criticism the position of the philosophy of belief. Certainly the highest ideas of reason, the eternal, the divine, are not to be attained or proved by means of demonstration: but this indemonstrableness, this inaccessibleness, is the very nature of the divine. For certain apprehension of the highest, of what lies beyond understanding, there is but one organ,—feeling. In feeling therefore, in intuitive cognition, in belief, Jacobi expected to find that certainty which Kant had in vain laboured to attain through discursive thought.

(2.) *Fichte* bears to the Kantian philosophy the relation of direct consequence, as Jacobi that of antithesis. The dualism of Kant, which represents the ego, now as theoretical ego in subjection to the external world, and now as practical ego in superiority to it, in other words, now as receptive and now as spontaneous in regard of

objectivity—this dualism Fichte eliminated by being in earnest with the primacy of practical reason, by regarding reason as exclusively practical, as will, as spontaneity, and by conceiving its theoretical, receptive relation to objectivity as only lessened power, as only a limitation imposed by reason itself. For reason, so far as it is practical, objectivity there is none unless what shall be due to itself. The will knows no fixed existence, but only what is to be or ought to be. That truth is any definite object is thus denied, and the unknown thing-in-itself must of itself, as an unreal shadow, fall to the ground. 'All that is, is ego,' this is the principle of the Fichtian system; which system, therefore, exhibits subjective idealism in its consequence and completion.

(3.) Whilst Fichte's subjective idealism found its continuation in the objective idealism of Schelling, and in the absolute idealism of Hegel, there sprang up contemporaneously with these systems a third result of the criticism of Kant, the philosophy of *Herbart*. It connects, however, rather subjectivo-genetically than objectivo-historically with the philosophy of Kant, and occupies in principle, for the rest, all historical continuity being broken down in its regard, only an isolated position. Its general basis is to this extent Kantian, that it also adopts for problem, a critical investigation and construction of subjective experience. We have given it a place between Fichte and Schelling.

## XL.—*Jacobi.*

FRIEDRICH HEINRICH JACOBI was born in 1743 at Düsseldorf. His father intended him for business. After having studied at Geneva (and acquired there a taste for philosophy), he undertook the business of his father; but gave it up again on becoming Jülich-Bergian acting councillor of the exchequer and commissioner of customs, as well as privy councillor at Düsseldorf. At Düsseldorf, or at his country-seat, Pempelfort, in the neighbourhood, he spent the greater part of his life; devoting himself, in by-hours, with zeal and interest, to philosophy; gathering around him, from time to time, in his summer quarters, a variety of friends; keeping up his connexion with the absent ones by means of a constant correspondence; and renewing old acquaintanceships, or forming fresh ones, through occasional journeys. In the year 1804 he was called to the newly-founded Academy of Sciences at Munich, where, in 1819, having been President of the Academy from 1807, he died. Jacobi was amiable and talented, a man of action, and a poet as well as a philosopher; hence in the last capacity his want of logical order and precision in the expression of thought. His writings form not a systematic whole; but are in their character occasional, composed 'rhapsodically, as the grasshopper jumps,' and generally in the shape of letters, dialogues, and novels. 'It was never my object,' he says himself, 'to construct a system for the school; my writings sprang from my innermost life, they followed an historical course; in a certain way I was not the author of them, not with my own will so, but under compulsion of a higher and irresistible power.' This want of systematic connexion and unity of principle renders the due statement of Jacobi's philosophy difficult. We adopt the three following points of view as the best for our purpose: (1.) Jacobi's polemic against indirect, mediate, or conditional knowledge; (2.) his principle of direct or intuitive knowledge; (3.) his position to contemporary philosophy, especially that of Kant.



(1.) Jacobi places his negative point of departure in Spinoza. In his essay *On the System of Spinoza, in Letters to Moses Mendelssohn* (1785), he again drew public attention to the quite forgotten philosophy of Spinoza. The correspondence is introduced thus:—Jacobi discovers that Lessing was a Spinozist and communicates this to Mendelssohn; Mendelssohn refuses to believe it; and so then the further historical *pro* and *contra* develops itself. The positive philosophical affirmations contained in this essay may be reduced to three: (1.) Spinozism is fatalism and atheism. (2.) Every method of philosophical demonstration conducts to fatalism and atheism. (3.) In order to escape these we must set limits to demonstration, and acknowledge that belief is the element of all human knowledge. (1.) Spinozism is atheism, for the cause of the world is to it not a person, not a being endowed with reason and will, and action on design, and therefore not a God. It is fatalism, for it asserts the human will to be only erroneously considered free. (2.) This atheism and fatalism, however, are only the necessary results of all philosophical demonstration.

To comprehend a thing is, Jacobi says, to deduce it from its proximate causes: it is to find for the actual the possible, for the conditioned the unconditioned, for the direct the indirect. We comprehend only what we can explain from something else. And so our intellection proceeds in a chain of conditioned conditions, and this concatenation forms a natural mechanism, in the exploration of which our understanding has its immeasurable field. As long as we desire to comprehend and prove, we must assume for every object ever a higher one which conditions it; where the chain of the conditioned ceases, there cease also comprehension and proof; unless we abandon demonstration, we reach no infinite. If philosophy would with the finite understanding seek to grasp the infinite, it must drag down the divine into finitude. All philosophy as yet is in this strait; and yet it appears self-evidently absurd to attempt to discover conditions for the unconditioned, to convert the absolutely necessary into a possible, in order to be able to construe it. A God that were capable of proof were no God, for the ground of proof must always be higher than that which is to be proved; the latter, indeed, can hold its reality only in fee of the former. If the existence of God is to be proved, consequently, God must consent to be deduced from some ground which were at once before God and above God. Hence Jacobi's paradox: It is the interest of science that there should be no God, no supernatural, supramundane being. Only on the hypothesis that there is nothing but nature, that nature alone is what is self-subsistent and all in all, is it possible for science to reach its goal of perfection, or to flatter itself with the hope of being able to become adequate to its object, and itself all in all. This, then, is the conclusion which Jacobi draws from the 'drama of the history of philosophy:' 'There is no philosophy but that of Spinoza. Whoever can suppose that all the works and ways of men are due to the mechanism of nature, and that intelligence has no function but, as an attendant consciousness, to look on,—him we need no longer oppose, him we cannot help, him we must leave go. Philosophical justice has no longer a hold on him; for what he denies cannot be philosophically proved, nor what he asserts philosophically refuted.' In this emergency what resource is there? 'Understanding, isolated, is materialistic and irrational; it denies mind, and it denies God. Reason, isolated, is



idealistic and illogical; it denies nature, and makes itself God.' But this being so we are driven to ask (3.) for another mode of cognising the supersensual, and this is belief. This flight from finite cognition to belief, Jacobi calls the *salto mortale* of human reason. Every certainty which may require to be understood, demands another certainty; and this regression necessitates at last an immediate certainty, which, far from requiring grounds and reasons, shall even absolutely exclude these. But such feeling of certainty as depends not on reasons of the understanding is belief. The sensuous and the supersensuous we know only through belief. All human knowledge originates in revelation and belief.

These conclusions of Jacobi, contained in his letters on Spinoza, could not fail to give universal umbrage to the German philosophical world. He was reproached with being an enemy of reason, a preacher of blind faith, a scorner at once of science and philosophy, a fanatic, a papist. In order to repel these reproaches, and justify the position he had assumed, he wrote, in 1787, a year and a half after the publication of this work on Spinoza, his dialogue entitled *David Hume on Faith, or Idealism and Realism*, in which he more definitely and fully developed his principle of faith, or of immediate (intuitive) knowledge.

(2.) First of all, Jacobi distinguishes between his faith, and faith on authority. Blind belief is such as is supported not on rational grounds, but on the authority of another. This is not the nature of his belief, which is supported rather on the inmost conviction of the subject himself. His belief again is no arbitrary imagination: we may imagine all manner of things, but to conceive a thing real, for that there is required an inexplicable conviction of feeling which we can only call belief. Of the relation in which belief stands to the various aspects of human cognition, Jacobi, who is nowise consistent in his terminology, expresses himself vacillatingly. In his earlier terminology he placed belief (or, as he also named it, the faculty of belief) beside sense or receptivity, and opposed it to understanding and reason, which two faculties as synonymous he identified with the finite and conditioned knowledge of preceding philosophy. Later, however, by the example of Kant, he opposed reason to understanding, calling that now reason that had been previously named sense and belief. Belief of reason, in-

tuition of reason, is now the organ for apprehension of the supersensuous. As such it stands opposed to understanding. There must be assumed to exist in us a higher faculty, to which what is true in and beyond the phenomena of sense, must, in a manner that is beyond the ken of sense and understanding, make itself known. Opposed to the explanatory understanding, we must acknowledge a non-explanatory, positively revelatory, unconditionally deciding reason or belief of reason. As there is a perception of sense, so also there must be a perception of reason, against which latter demonstration will as little avail as against the former. In excuse of the expression *a perception of reason*, Jacobi refers to the absence of any other that were preferable. Language, he says, possesses no other terms for the denotation of the mode and manner in which our all-teeming feeling masters what is inaccessible to the senses. Should any one affirm that he knows something, he may be justifiably asked whence or how he knows it; and then he is inevitably compelled to appeal either to the sensation of sense or to sentiment of mind, the latter being as superior to the former as man to the brute. And so, says Jacobi, I admit without hesitation that my philosophy founds on feeling, pure objective feeling, the authority of which is to me the highest authority. The faculty of feeling is the highest faculty in man; it is that which specifically distinguishes him from the brute; it is identical with reason, or from the faculty of feeling (sentiment) reason wholly and solely arises. Of the antithesis, in which, with this principle of intuitive cognition, he stood to preceding philosophy, Jacobi possessed a perfectly clear consciousness. 'There has arisen,' he says, in the introduction to his collected works, 'since Aristotle, an increasing effort on the part of the schools to subordinate, nay even to sacrifice immediate to mediate knowledge, the faculty of perception on which all is originally founded to the faculty of reflection, conditioned as it is by the action of abstraction, the archetype to the ectype, the substance to the word, reason to understanding. Nothing is henceforth to be considered here that has not demonstrated itself, twice demonstrated itself, now in perception, and now in the notion, now in matter of fact, and again in its image, the word, and only in the word, indeed, is the matter of fact to be conceived truly to lie and actually to be cognised. But every philosophy that assumes a reflective reason alone must disappear at last in a nullity of knowledge. Its end is nihilism.



(3.) What position Jacobi, in consequence of his principle of belief, would assume to the philosophy of Kant, may be surmised from what has been already said. Jacobi, indeed, has explained himself in this reference, partly in the dialogue 'David Hume' (particularly in the appendix to it which treats of 'the transcendental idealism,') and partly in the essay on *The Attempt of* Kriticismus *to bring Reason to Understanding* (1801). The relation concerned may be reduced to the following three heads: (1.) Jacobi dissents from the Kantian theory of sensuous cognition. He defends, instead, the position of empiricism, maintains the truth of sensuous perception, and denies the apriority of time and space. He represents Kant as attempting to prove that objects as well as the relations of objects are mere determinations of our own selves, and wholly inexistent in externality to us. For even if it be said that there is something correspondent to our perceptions as their cause, what this something is still remains unknown to us. On Kant's theory the laws of perception and thought are destitute of any objective validity, or our entire knowledge contains nothing whatever of an objective nature. But it is absurd to assume that the phenomena disclose nothing of the truth that is concealed behind them. On such an assumption it were better entirely to eliminate the unknown thing-in-itself, and carry idealism out to its natural conclusion. 'Kant cannot in consistency assume objects for the impressions on our minds: he ought to maintain the most decided idealism.' (2.) Jacobi essentially, on the other hand, assents to the Kantian critique of the understanding. Like Jacobi, Kant too maintained the incompetency of the understanding to knowledge of the supersensuous, and the possibility of any apprehension of the highest ideas of reason only by belief. Jacobi conceives the main merit of Kant to lie in the clearing away of the *ideas* as logical phantasms and mere products of reflection. 'It is easy for understanding, forming notions of notions from notions, and so gradually rising to ideas, to fancy that, by means of these mere logical phantasms, which surpass for it the perceptions of sense, it too possesses not only the power but the most manifest vocation really to transcend the world of sense and attain in its flight to a higher science, a science of the supersensuous, and that

is independent of perception. This error, this self-deception, was detected and destroyed by Kant. And thus there was obtained, in the first place, at least room for *genuine* rationalism. This is, in truth, the great achievement of Kant, and the foundation of his immortal glory. The sound sense of our Sage, however, saved him from failing to perceive that this room would of necessity directly transform itself into an abyss for the swallowing up of all knowledge of the truth, unless—a God appeared. Here it is that my opinions and the opinions of Kant meet.' Jacobi, however, (3.) does not quite accept the Kantian denial to theoretic reason of any capacity for objective knowledge. He censures Kant for lamenting the inability of human reason to demonstrate theoretically the reality of its ideas. Kant, to him, is still thus in bondage to the dream that sees the indemonstrability of the ideas to lie not in their own nature, but in the inadequacy of our faculties. And so it was that Kant was compelled to seek in the practical field a sort of scientific demonstration: a shift and circuit that to every deeper thinker must appear absurd, all proof in any such case being at once impossible and unnecessary.

Jacobi extends not his favour for Kant to the post-Kantian philosophy. The pantheistic tendency of the latter was peculiarly repugnant to him. 'For Kant, that deep thinking, candid philosopher, the words God, free-will, immortality, religion, had quite the same meaning that they possess, and have always possessed, for common-sense in general. Kant played no tricks with them. It gave offence that he irrefutably demonstrated the inadequacy to these ideas, of all speculative philosophical proofs. For the destruction of the theoretical proofs he made amends by the necessary postulates of pure practical reason. And by this expedient, according to his own assertion, philosophy was perfectly relieved; and the good, which it had always hitherto missed, at length happily reached. But now, critical philosophy's own daughter (Fichte), makes a god of the moral order of the universe, a god, then, expressly without consciousness and personality. These bold words, which were quite openly and unhesitatingly spoken, excited, indeed, some little apprehension. But the alarm soon ceased. Directly afterwards, indeed, when the second daughter of the critical philosophy (Schelling), completely withdrew what had been left sacred by the first—the distinction



between natural and moral philosophy, between liberty and necessity, and without farther preamble declared nature alone all and nothing above nature, the result was no astonishment at all: this second daughter is an inverted or beatified Spinozism, an ideal materialism.' The latter expression in reference to Schelling, with which, in the same work, other and severer allusions were connected, provoked the latter's well-known reply (*Schelling's Memorial of the Work: On Divine Things*, 1812).

Throwing back a critical glance now on the philosophical position of Jacobi, we may designate its distinctive peculiarity to be the abstract separation of understanding and feeling. These Jacobi was unable to bring to agreement. 'In my heart,' he says, 'there is light, but directly I would bring it into the understanding, it disappears. Which of the two elements is the true one? That of the understanding, which displays indeed forms that are firm, but behind them only a bottomless abyss? Or that of the heart, which, lighting with promise upwards, fails still in definite knowledge? Is it possible for the human mind to attain to truth, unless through union of both elements into a single light? And is such a union attainable without the intervention of a miracle?' When now, however, Jacobi, in order to reconcile this difference of the heart and the understanding, attempted to replace mediate (finite) cognition by immediate (intuitive) cognition, he only deceived himself. That very immediate cognition, which is supposed by Jacobi to be the special organ of the supersensuous, is in truth mediate, has already described a series of subjective intermediating movements, and can pretend to immediacy only in entire oblivion of its own nature and origin.

## XLI.—*Fichte.*

JOHANN GOTTLIEB FICHTE was born in 1762 at Rammenau in Upper Lusatia. A Silesian nobleman interested himself in the boy, and placed him first with a clergyman and then at the institute of Schulpforte. In his eighteenth year, Michaelmas 1780, Fichte entered the university of Jena as a student of theology. He soon found himself attracted to the study of philosophy; and the system of Spinoza in particular took a powerful

hold on him. The straits of his external position served only to harden his will and his energy. In the year 1784, and afterwards, he held the position of tutor in various families in Saxony, but, on applying in 1787 for the situation of country pastor there, he was rejected in consequence of his religious views. He was obliged now to quit his native country, to which he was devotedly attached, and accept a tutorship in Zürich, where he made the acquaintance of his future wife, a niece of Klopstock's. He returned in Easter of 1790 to Saxony, and assumed the position of a *privatim docens* in Leipzig. Here he became acquainted with the philosophy of Kant in consequence of being engaged to give private lessons to a student of his system. In the spring of 1791 we find him, as a family-tutor again, in Warsaw, and shortly afterwards in Königsberg, whither he had gone to make acquaintance with Kant, whom he enthusiastically admired. Instead of a letter of introduction he handed to Kant his *Critique of all Revelation*, a work composed by him in four weeks. Fichte attempted, in this work, to deduce from practical reason the possibility of a revelation. He proceeds not quite *a priori*, however, but under a certain empirical condition—this, namely, that it be presumed that man has fallen into such moral ruin that the moral law has lost all its influence on will, or, in short, that all morality is extinct. In such a case, it is reasonable to expect on the part of God, as moral regent of the universe, the communication to men of pure moral principles through the medium of the senses, or the revelation of himself as lawgiver to them by means of a special and appropriate manifestation in the world of sense. An actual revelation would be here, then, a postulate of practical reason. Even the possible matter of such a revelation Fichte attempted to determine *a priori*. We stand in need of no knowledge but that of God, freewill, and immortality; the revelation, therefore, will substantively contain nothing more. But, on the one hand, it will contain these doctrines in an intelligible form; and, on the other, it will not invest them in such symbolical dress as will claim for itself unlimited reverence. This tractate, which appeared anonymously in 1792, excited the greatest attention, and was universally regarded as a work of Kant's. It was partly the cause of Fichte—then in Zürich for the celebration of his marriage—receiving soon afterwards (in 1793) a call to the



chair of philosophy at Jena, which Reinhold, invited to Kiel, had just vacated. At this time, also, Fichte published his anonymous *Contributions in Correction of the Judgments of the Public on the French Revolution*, a work which sat badly on the memories of the governments. Fichte entered on his new office at Easter in 1794, and speedily saw his reputation established. In a series of publications (the *Wissenschaftslehre* appeared in 1794, the *Naturrecht* in 1796, and the *Sittenlehre* in 1798), he endeavoured to approve and complete his new principle in transcendence of that of Kant; and exercised in this manner a powerful influence on the scientific movement in Germany, and all the more that Jena was one of the most flourishing universities, and the focus then of all energizing intellects. Here Fichte stood in intimate relation with Goethe, Schiller, the Schlegels, W. Humboldt, and Hufeland. Unfortunately in a few years these relations came to a rupture. In 1795 Fichte had become co-editor of Niethammer's *Philosophical Journal*. Forberg, rector at Saalfeld, a contributor, offered, in 1798, for insertion in this journal, an article on 'the determination of the notion of religion.' Fichte, who had advised against it, was still induced to insert it, but he premised an introduction 'on the grounds of our faith in a divine government of the world,' the purpose of which was to remove or lessen anything that might appear offensive in the article itself. Both contributions, however, were followed by a vehement cry of atheism. The Electorate of Saxony confiscated the journal throughout its territories, and despatched a requisition to the Ernestine Dukes, the common protectors of the University of Jena, for the calling of the author to account, and the infliction of condign punishment on conviction. Fichte, in answer to the edict of confiscation, published (1799) a justification of himself in his *Appeal to the Public: a Work which Petitions to be Read before it is Confiscated*. With reference to his own government, he vindicated himself in the *Formal Defence of the Editors of the Philosophical Journal against the Accusations of Atheism*. The government of Weimar, which desired to consider as well him as the Electorate of Saxony, procrastinated with its decision. Meantime Fichte, however, having been secretly informed, rightly or wrongly, that it was intended to make an end of the whole affair by dismissing the accused with a reprimand for their imprudence, wrote,

in his desire either for legal conviction or signal satisfaction, a private letter to a member of the government, in which he declared his resolution to send in his resignation in case of a reprimand, and concluded with the threat that several of his friends would with him quit the University, and found a new one elsewhere in Germany. The government accepted this declaration as a letter of resignation, thereby indirectly pronouncing the reprimand as inevitable. Religiously and politically suspect, Fichte looked about him in vain for an asylum. The Prince of Rudolstadt, to whom he turned, refused him his protection, and even in Berlin his arrival (1799) at first excited commotion. Here, in familiar intercourse with Friedrich Schlegel, and also with Schleiermacher and Novalis, his views gradually modified themselves. The Jena catastrophe had diverted him from the one-sided moral position which, by example of Kant, he had hitherto occupied, to the sphere of religion; and now it was his endeavour to reconcile religion with his position in the *Wissenschaftslehre*, through adoption of a certain mysticism (second form of the philosophy of Fichte). After he had lectured privately, and delivered philosophical discourses in Berlin for several years, he received, in 1805, on the recommendation of Beyme and Altenstein to the Chancellor of State (Hardenberg), a chair of philosophy at Erlangen, with the permission at the same time of returning to Berlin in winter to lecture, as usual, to a general audience, on philosophical subjects. Thus, in the winter of 1807-8, while a French marshal governed Berlin, and while the voice of the orator was often drowned by the noise of the enemy's drums in the street, he delivered his celebrated 'addresses to the German nation.' Fichte promoted in the most zealous manner the establishment of the Berlin University: for only to a complete change of the system of education did he look for the regeneration of Germany. On the opening of the new university in 1809, he was made dean of the philosophical faculty the first year, and rector the second. On the outbreak of the war of liberation, Fichte, both by word and by deed, took the liveliest interest in it. His wife in attending the wounded and sick contracted a nervous fever: she, indeed, was saved; but her husband fell under the same malady, and died on the 28th of January 1814, before completion of his fifty-second year.



In the following exposition of his philosophy we distinguish, first of all, between the two (internally different) periods, that of Jena and that of Berlin. Under the first period, again, we have the *Wissenschaftslehre* in one division, and Fichte's practical philosophy in another.

## I.—The Philosophy of Fichte in its Earlier Form.

(1.) *Fichte's theoretical philosophy, or his Wissenschaftslehre (theory of knowledge, gnosology).*—That Fichte's subjective idealism is only the consequence of the principles of Kant, has been already (XXXIX.) briefly explained. It was unavoidable that Fichte should wholly reject Kant's incognizable (but, nevertheless, supposed real) thing-in-itself, and should refer that outer impact which Kant attributed to these things in themselves, to the inner action of the mind itself. That only the ego is, and that what we regard as its limitation by external objects, is but its own self-limitation—this is the fundamental thesis of the Fichtian idealism.

Fichte himself lays the foundations of his gnosology thus:—In every perception there are present at once an ego and a thing, or intelligence and its object. Which of the two sides shall be reduced to the other? Abstracting from the ego the philosopher obtains a thing-in-itself, and is obliged to attribute the ideas to the object; abstracting from the object again, he obtains only an ego in itself. The former is the position of dogmatism, the latter that of idealism. Both are incapable of being reconciled, and a third is impossible. We must choose one or the other then. To assist decision, let us observe the following: (1.) The ego is manifest in consciousness; but the thing-in-itself is a mere fiction, for what is in consciousness is only a sensation, a feeling. (2.) Dogmatism undertakes to explain the origin of an idea; but it commences this explanation with an object in itself; that is, it begins with something that is not and never is in consciousness. But what is materially existent produces only what is materially existent—being produces only being—not feeling. The right consequently lies with idealism, which begins not with being (material existence), but with intelligence. To idealism intelligence is only active, it is not passive, because it is of a primitive and absolute nature. For this reason its nature is not being (material outwardness), but wholly and solely

action. The forms of this action, the necessary system of the acts of intelligence, we must deduce from the principle (the essential nature) of intelligence itself. If we look for the laws of intelligence in experience, the source from which Kant (in a manner) took his categories, we commit a double blunder,—(1.) In so far as it is not demonstrated *why* intelligence must act thus, and *whether* these laws are also immanent in intelligence; and (2.) In so far as it is not demonstrated how the object itself arises. The objects, consequently, as well as the principles of intelligence are to be derived from the ego itself.

In assuming these consequences, Fichte believed himself to be only following the true meaning of the tenets of Kant. 'What my system specially is, whether, *as I believe*, genuine *Kriticismus* duly followed out, or however otherwise it may be named, is nothing to the point.' Fichte maintains his system to entertain the same view of the subject as that of Kant, and he conceives the numerous adherents of the latter to have only misunderstood and misrepresented their master. In his second introduction to the *Wissenschaftslehre* (1797) Fichte grants these expositors of the *Kritik of Pure Reason* that this work contains passages in which Kant demands sensations, given to the subject from without, as material conditions of objective reality. He shows, however, that these passages are wholly irreconcilable with innumerable assertions of the Kritik (to the effect that there cannot be any talk whatever of any operation on the part of a transcendental object in itself and external to us)—if by source of sensations anything else be understood than a mere thought. 'So long,' Fichte continues, 'as Kant does not in so many words expressly declare that he derives sensations from the impress of a thing-in-itself, or, to use his own terminology, that sensation is to be explained by reference to a transcendental object independently existent without us, I will not consent to believe what these expositors tell us in regard to Kant. Should he, however, make this declaration, then I will rather believe that the *Kritik of Pure Reason* is a work of chance, than that it is a product of intellect.' The aged Kant did not let the public wait long for his answer, however. In the announcement-sheet of the *Allgemeine Literaturzeitung* (1799), he formally, and with much emphasis, rejected the Fichtian improvement of his system, protested against



all interpretation of his writings on any assumed spirit, and stood by the letter of his theory as contained in the Kritik of reason. Reinhold in reference to this remarks: 'Since Kant's public declaration as regards the philosophy of Fichte, it is no longer susceptible of doubt, but that Kant conceives his system himself, and wants others to conceive it, quite differently from the manner in which Fichte has conceived it. But the most that we can conclude from this is, that Kant himself does not consider his system inconsequent because it assumes a something external to subjectivity. It by no means follows, however, that Fichte is wrong in declaring the system in question to be inconsequent because of this assumption.' That Kant himself had a feeling of this inconsequence is proved by his alterations in the second edition of the *Kritik of Pure Reason*, where the idealistic side of his system is made decidedly to recede behind the empirical one.

The general stand-point of the *Wissenschaftslehre* appears in what has been said: it would make the ego its principle, and from the ego it would derive all the rest. That we are to understand by this ego, not the particular individual, but the universal ego, universal reason, need hardly be remarked. Egoity and individuality, the pure and the empirical ego, are entirely different ideas.

As concerns the form of the *Wissenschaftslehre* we have yet to premise the following. The *Wissenschaftslehre* must according to Fichte find an ultimate principle from which all others shall be derived. This principle must be directly certain in its own self. And unless our knowledge is to be made up of mere incoherent fragments, such a principle there must be. But again, as any such principle is plainly insusceptible of proof, there is nothing left for us but trial. We must institute an experiment, and only in that way is a proof possible. That is, if we do find a proposition to which we may reduce all others, this proposition is the principle sought. Besides the first proposition, however, two others may be thought, of which the one, unconditioned in matter, is conditioned in form by, and dependent on, the first, whilst the other is the reverse. These three axioms, finally, will be so related to each other, that the second shall be the opposite of the first, and the third the result of both. On this plan, and in accordance with the previous exposition, the first absolute axiom will start from the ego, the second oppose to

it a thing or a non-ego, and the third bring the ego into reaction against the thing or the non-ego. This Fichtian method (Thesis, Antithesis, Synthesis), like that of Hegel after it, is a combination of the analytic and synthetic methods. Fichte has the merit of having been able by means of it to be the first to deduce all the philosophical fundamental notions from a single point, and to bring them into connexion, instead of only taking them up empirically, like Kant, and setting them down in mere juxtaposition. Commencement is made with a fundamental synthesis; in this synthesis opposites are looked for by means of analysis; and these opposites are then re-united in a second, more definite (richer, concreter) synthesis. But analysis will again detect opposites even in this second synthesis. There is thus a third synthesis necessary, and so on, till at last opposites are reached which can only be approximately conjoined.

We are now at the threshold of the *Wissenschaftslehre*, which falls into three parts: (*a.*) first principles of the whole science, (*b.*) the foundations of theoretical know ledge, and (*c.*) the foundations of practical (moral) science.

The first principles are, as said, three in number: one absolutely unconditioned, and the others relatively so. (1.) *The absolutely original, directly unconditioned, first principle* must express that action which is known in fact to underlie all consciousness, and alone render it possible. This principle is the *proposition of identity*, A = A. This proposition remains behind and will not be thought away when we abstract from all the empirical forms of consciousness. It is a fact of consciousness and must therefore be universally admitted; but at the same time, it is not, like every other empirical fact of consciousness, something conditioned, but, as free act, it is something unconditioned. When we maintain too that without any further ground this proposition is certain, we ascribe to ourselves the power of taking something *for granted*. We do not take for granted in it that A is, but only that A is, if A is. It is the *form* of the proposition only which we consider, and not the *matter* of it. In matter, then, the proposition A = A is conditioned (hypothetical): it is unconditioned only in form, only in *vis nexus*. Should we seek a proposition unconditioned in matter as well as in form, then in place of A we must substitute the ego (and to this we have a perfect right, for the connexion of subject and predicate



pronounced by the judgment A = A is in the ego and the work of the ego). The proposition A = A, consequently, is thus transformed into the new proposition, ego = ego. This latter proposition now is not only unconditioned in form but also in matter. While it was impossible for us to say with reference to A = A, that A is, we can now say with reference to ego = ego, that the ego is, I am. It is the explanatory ground of all facts of empirical consciousness that before anything can be given in the ego, the ego itself must be given. This directly self-determined, self-grounded ground is the ground of all action in the human mind, and is consequently, pure, inherent, independent activity. The ego assumes itself, and it *is* by this mere self-assumption; it is, only because it has assumed itself. And conversely, the ego assumes its existence by virtue of its mere existence. It is at once the agent and the product of the action. I am is the expression of the only possible original act. In a logical point of view we have in the first principle of the *Wissenschaftslehre* (A = A) the law of identity. From the proposition A = A, we proceeded to the proposition ego = ego. The latter, however, derives not its validity from the former, but contrariwise. The ego is the *prius* of all judgment, and is the foundation of the *nexus* of subject and predicate. The logical law of identity originates, therefore, in the ego = ego. In a metaphysical point of view we obtain from the first proposition of the *Wissenschaftslehre* the category of *reality*. This we obtain by abstracting from the particular matter concerned, and by reflecting merely on the mode of action of the human spirit. All categories are deduced from the ego as the absolute subject. (2.) *The second fundamental principle*, which, conditioned in matter but unconditioned in form, is as little susceptible of proof or derivation as the first, is equally a fact of empirical consciousness: it is the proposition non-A is not = A. This proposition, as a spontaneous conclusion, an original act, is unconditioned in form like the first, nor can it be derived from the first. It is conditioned in matter, because, if a non-A is to be established, there must be first assumed an A. But let us consider this principle more narrowly. In A = A the form of the act was *thesis*, statement; but here it is *antithesis*, counter-statement. The power of direct, absolute counter-statement (contraposition) is assumed, and this contraposition is, in

form, an absolutely possible act, that is unconditioned and independent of any higher ground. But, in matter, antithesis (contraposition) presupposes thesis (position): if any non-A is to be granted, A must be previously granted. What non-A is, is not made known to me by the possibility of absolute contraposition as such. I know only that non-A must be the opposite, the counterpart of some certain thing A. What non-A is, consequently, I know only under the condition of knowing A. But the ego is A, or in the ego A has absolute position. There is originally nothing else in position (seen and granted) but the ego, and only the ego is directly and absolutely in position (seen and granted). Absolute contraposition consequently is possible only of the ego. But what is contraposed to the ego—its opposite and counterpart—is the non-ego. Opposed to the ego is its absolute counterpart, a non-ego: this is the second fact of empirical consciousness. Whatever belongs to the ego, the counterpart of that must, by virtue of simple contraposition, belong to the non-ego. From this proposition, now (ego is not = non-ego) we obtain the logical law of contradiction, as from the first that of identity. Metaphysically, too, we obtain from this proposition, by abstracting from the particular act of judgment concerned, and merely referring to the form of the inference, the category of negation. (3.) *The third fundamental principle*, conditioned in form only, is almost entirely susceptible of proof, because there are now two propositions for its determination. With every step we approach nearer to the sphere in which all is susceptible of proof. The third principle is conditioned in form and unconditioned in matter: that is to say, the problem for the act, which it expresses, is given in the two preceding propositions, but not also its solution. This latter results unconditionally and absolutely from an arbitrary decision of reason. The problem which the third principle has to solve is the reconciliation, namely, of the contradiction implied in the other two. On the one hand the ego is completely sublated by the non-ego: position is impossible for the ego, so far as the non-ego is in position. On the other hand, the non-ego has position only in the ego, in consciousness: the ego, consequently, is not sublated by the non-ego; after all the sublated ego is not sublated. The result now, then, is non-A = A. In order to resolve this contradiction which threatens to destroy the identity of our



consciousness, the only absolute fundament of our knowledge, we must find an X, by virtue of which correctness will be still possible for the first two principles without prejudice to the identity of consciousness. The opposites, the ego and the non-ego, must be united, set equal, in consciousness without mutual neutralization; they must be taken up into the identity of the one sole consciousness. How, now, may being and non-being, reality and negation, be thought together without mutual destruction? They must mutually *limit* each other. Limit then, is the X required: this is the required original action of the ego, and, thought as category, it is the category of determination or limitation. But in limitation the category of *quantity* is already implied: for to limit anything is to sublate its reality by negation not in *whole* but in *part*. In the notion of limit, consequently, there lies, besides the notions of reality and negation, that also of divisibility, of the susceptibility to quantity in general. Through the action of limitation, as well the ego as the non-ego is assumed as divisible. Further, there results from the third principle, as from the two former, a logical law. Abstraction being made from the matter, the ego and non-ego, and only the form of the union of opposites through the notion of divisibility remaining, we have, namely, the logical *proposition of ground or reason*, which may be expressed in the formula, A in part = non-A, non-A in part = A. The ground is ground of relation so far as each opposite is identical with the other in some single significate (*nota*), while it is ground of distinction again, so far as each equal is opposed to the other in some single significate. The complex now of what is unconditionally and absolutely certain is in these three principles exhausted. They may be comprised in the following formula: *In the ego I oppose to the divisible ego a divisible non-ego.* No philosophy transcends this proposition, but all true philosophy must accept it; and in accepting it, philosophy becomes *Wissenschaftslehre*. All that is henceforth to present itself in the system of knowledge must be derived thence, and in the first place the further divisions of the *Wissenschaftslehre* itself. In the proposition that ego and non-ego mutually limit each other, there are these two elements: (1.) the ego exhibits itself as limited by the non-ego (that is to say, the ego is cognitive); (2.) conversely the ego exhibits the non-ego as limited by the ego (that is to say, the ego is active). These propositions

are the foundation, the one of the theoretical, the other of the practical part of the *Wissenschaftslehre*. The latter part is problematical at first: for a non-ego limited by an active ego does not at first exist, and we have to wait for its realization in the theoretical part.

*The elements of theoretical knowledge* present a continuous series of antitheses and syntheses. The fundamental synthesis is the proposition that the ego is determined by the non-ego. Analysis demonstrates in this proposition two subordinate mutually opposed propositions: (1.) the non-ego, as active, determines the ego, which is in so far passive. But as all action must originate in the ego, it is (2.) the ego itself that is absolutely self-determinative. We have here the contradiction of action and passion at once on the part of the ego. As, then, this contradiction would subvert the above proposition, and by consequence also the unity of consciousness, we are under the necessity of finding a point, a new synthesis, in which the apparent opposites may be reconciled. This is accomplished by reconciling in the notion of divisibility the notions of action and passion, falling as they do under those of reality and negation. The propositions, 'The ego determines,' 'The ego is determined,' coalesce in the proposition, 'The ego partly determines itself, and is partly determined.' But more, both are to be thought as one and the same. With greater precision then: as many parts of reality as the ego determines in itself, so many parts of negation does it determine in the non-ego, and, conversely, as many parts of reality as the ego determines in the non-ego, so many parts of negation does it determine in itself. This determination is *reciprocal determination* or *reciprocity*. In this way Fichte is found to have deduced the last of Kant's three categories of relation. In the same manner (namely, by synthesis of analysed antitheses), he continues to deduce the remaining two categories of this class, or those of *causality* and *substantiality*. For example: so far as the ego is determined, is passive, the non-ego possesses reality. The category of reciprocity, then, in which it is indifferent which side is one or the other, is brought to this form that the ego is passive, and the non-ego active. But the notion expressive of this relation is the notion of *causality*. That to which activity is ascribed is called *cause* (the primitive reality); that to which passivity is ascribed, *effect*; and both in union



constitute an action or operation. Again, the ego determines itself. This is a contradiction: (1.) The ego determines itself, it is what acts; (2.) It determines itself, it is what is acted on. Thus, in a single relation and action, reality and negation are at once ascribed to it. Solution for such a contradiction as this is only possible in such mode of action as is action and passion at once: the ego must through action determine its passion, and through passion its action. The solution implies recourse, then, to the aid of the notion of quantity. All reality is in the ego first of all as absolute quantum, as absolute totality, and the ego so far may be compared to a great circle. A determinate quantum of action, or a limited sphere within the great circle of action, is reality indeed, but compared with the totality of action it is negation of this totality, or passion. Here we have the solution sought: it lies in the notion of *substantiality*. So far as the ego is considered to comprehend the entire compass, the totality of realities, it is substance; so far as it is referred to a determinate sphere of the entire compass, it is accidental. No accident can be thought without substance, for to be able to recognise anything as a determinate reality, it must be first referred to reality in general or substance. Substance is thought vicissitude in general: the accident is a determinate that changes place with what itself changes. *Originally there is only a single substance, the ego.* In this single substance all possible accidents, and therefore all possible realities, are contained. Ego alone is the absolute infinite: I think, I act, is already limitation. Fichte's philosophy is therefore Spinozism, but, as Jacobi felicitously named it, an inverted, idealistic Spinozism.

Glancing back, we perceive that Fichte has abolished the objectivity which Kant had left. *Only* the ego is. But the ego presupposes a non-ego, and so, therefore, a sort of object. How the ego accomplishes the determination of this object, it is now the business of the theoretical *Wissenschaftslehre* to demonstrate.

In regard to the relation of the ego to the non-ego, there are two extreme views, according as we begin with the notion of causality or with that of substantiality. (1.) Beginning with the notion of causality there is assumed in the passion of the ego an action of the non-ego. The passion of the ego must have a ground. This ground cannot be in the ego, which assumes for itself

action only. It is consequently in the non-ego. Here, then, the difference between action and passion is not conceived as merely quantitative (passion as diminished action), but the passion is opposed qualitatively to the action: a presupposed action of the non-ego is therefore the real ground of the passion in the ego. (2.) Beginning with the notion of substantiality, the action of the ego is assumed to imply also a passion in the ego. Here the passion is in quality nothing but action, a diminished action. Whilst, then, by the first view, the passive ego has a ground qualitatively different from the ego, or a real ground, it has, by the second view, only a quantitatively diminished action of the ego for its ground, or it has an ideal ground. The first view is dogmatic realism, the second dogmatic idealism. The latter maintains: all reality of a non-ego is simply a transference from the ego. The former maintains: transference is impossible, unless there previously exist an independent real non-ego, a thing-in-itself. There is thus an antithesis, to be resolved only in a new synthesis. Fichte attempts this synthesis of idealism and realism, through the intermediate system of the critical idealism. For this purpose he endeavours to show that the ideal ground and the real ground are one and the same. Neither the mere action of the ego is ground of the reality of the non-ego, nor the mere action of the non-ego ground of the passion of the ego. The two are to be thought together thus: on the action of the ego there presents itself, but not without help of the ego, an opposed principle of repulsion (the *Anstoss*—the plane of offence), which bends back the action of the ego, and reflects it into itself. This repelling principle consists in this, that the subjective element cannot be farther extended, that the radiating activity of the ego is driven back into itself, and self-limitation results. What we call objects are nothing but the various breakings of the action of the ego against an incomprehensible obstacle, and these affections of the ego are then transferred by us to something external to us, or are conceived by us as things occupying space. The Fichtian principle of reflexion consequently is in the main the same thing as the Kantian thing-in-itself, only that it is conceived by Fichte as a product from within. Fichte proceeds next to deduce the subjective faculties of the ego, which, theoretically, mediate or seek to mediate between the ego and the non-ego,—imagination, conception (sensation, perception, feeling), understanding, judgment, reason, and, in connexion with these, the subjective projections of perception, time, and space.



We stand now before the third part of the *Wissenschaftslehre*, or the *exposition of the practical sphere*. We left the ego an intelligence. But that the ego is intelligent at all, is not brought about by the ego, but by something external to the ego. We were unable to conceive the possibility of a perceptive intelligence unless by presupposing an obstruction and reflexion of the action of the ego, striving otherwise into the infinite and the indefinite. The ego, accordingly, is, as intelligence, dependent on an indefinite and wholly indefinable non-ego, and only through and by means of such a non-ego is it intelligence. But this limit must be broken through. The ego, in all its attributes, is still to be supposed as absolutely self-affirmed, and completely independent therefore of any possible non-ego whatever, but as intelligence it is finite, dependent; the absolute ego and the intelligent ego, consequently, though still to be supposed one and the same, are mutually opposed. This contradiction may be remedied only by assuming that the ego, as insusceptible of passion, and possessed only of absolute action, does itself spontaneously determine the still unknown non-ego to which the reflexion (*Anstoss*) is attributed. The limit which the ego, as theoretical ego, opposed to itself in the non-ego—this limit the same ego as practical ego must endeavour to withdraw, that is, it must endeavour to reabsorb into itself the non-ego (or comprehend it as self-limitation of the ego). The Kantian supremacy of practical reason is in this way realized. The transition of the theoretical into the practical part, the necessity of the advance from the one to the other, is more particularly represented by Fichte thus: The business of the theoretical part was to conciliate ego and non-ego. To this end, middle term after middle term was intercalated without success. Then came reason with the absolute decision, 'Inasmuch as the non-ego is incapable of union with the ego, non-ego there shall be none,' whereby the knot was not undone indeed, but cut. It is thus, then, the incongruity between the absolute (practical) ego and the finite (intelligent) ego that necessitates the transition from the theoretical to the practical sphere. Nor does the incongruity wholly disappear even in the practical sphere: action is but an infinite striving to sur-

mount the limit of the non-ego. The ego, as practical, tends, indeed, to transcend the actual world, to found an ideal world, such a world as would exist if all reality were the product of the ego: but this striving remains encumbered with finitude, partly because of the ego itself in its reference to objects (which objects are finite), and partly because the intelligence (the conscious affirming and realizing of itself as itself on the part of the ego), remains perpetually conditioned by an opposing non-ego that checks its action. It is our duty at once, and an impossibility to strive to reach the infinite. Nevertheless just this striving united to this impossibility is the stamp of our destiny for eternity.

And thus, then (so Fichte sums up the results of the *Wissenschaftslehre*), the entire nature of finite rational beings is comprehended and exhausted. An original idea of our absolute being; effort towards reflection on ourselves in accordance with this idea; limitation not of this effort, but of our actual definite existence (which is only realized by this limitation), through an opposing principle, a non-ego, or in general through our own finitude; consciousness of self and in particular of our practical effort; determination of our intelligence, accordingly, and through it of our actions; enlargement of our limits progressively *ad infinitum*.

(2.) *Fichte's Practical Philosophy.*—Fichte applies the principles which he has developed in his *Wissenschaftslehre* to practical life, and particularly to his theory of rights and duties. With methodic rigour here, too, he seeks to deduce all, without accepting from experience (as mere fact so found) anything unproved. Thus, in these practical interests, even a plurality of persons is not presupposed, but first of all deduced; nay that man is possessed of a body is deduced—not certainly stringently.

*The theory of right or rights* (natural law), Fichte founds on the notion of the individual. He first deduces the notion of right as follows. A finite rational being cannot realize himself without ascribing to himself a freedom of action. But this ascription involves the existence of an external world of sense, for a rational being cannot ascribe action to himself without implying the existence of an object to which this action is to be directed. More particularly still, this freedom of action in a rational being presupposes other rational beings; for without them he would be unconscious of it. We have thus a plurality of



free individuals, each possessing a sphere of free action. This co-existence of free individuals is impossible without a relation of right (law). Retaining each his own sphere with freedom, but with limitation of himself, they recognise each other as free and rational beings. This relation of a reciprocity in intelligence and freedom between rational beings—according to which each limits his freedom by leaving possible the freedom of the others, on condition that these others similarly limit themselves in return—is a *relation of right* (natural law). The first principle here then runs thus: Limit your freedom by the notion of that of all the other rational beings (persons) with whom you may come into connexion. After investigation of the applicability of this principle and consequent deduction of the corporeal part or anthropological side of man, Fichte proceeds to the special *theory of right* (jurisprudence). It falls into three parts: (1.) Rights which depend on the mere notion of personality, are *primitive rights*. Primitive right is the absolute right of the person to be only a cause in the world of sense, and no mere means. This gives (*a.*) the right of personal freedom, and (*b.*) the right of property. But still every relation of particular persons is conditioned by the reciprocal recognition of these. Each has to limit the quantum of his freedom in behoof of that of the rest; and only so far as another respects my freedom, have I to respect his. In order to assure the right of the person, then, there must be assumed a mechanical force for application to the case in which the other does not respect my primitive rights, and this is (2.) the *right of coercion*. Coercive or penal laws demand that the volition of every unjust end shall be followed by its own contrary, that every unjust will shall be annihilated, and right restored in its integrity. For the establishment of such penal law, and such universal coercive authority, the free individuals must enter into a mutual contract. But such contract is only possible in a commonweal. Natural law, then, the relation of right (justice) between man and man presupposes (3.) *political rights*, namely (*a.*) a free contract on the part of the political units as a mutual guarantee of rights; (*b.*) positive laws, a political legislature, through which the common will of all becomes law; (*c.*) an executive power, a political authority which realizes the common will, and in which, therefore, the private and the general will are synthetically united. Fichte's conclud-

ing result here is this: on the one side there is the State of reason (philosophical jurisprudence), on the other, the State as it actually exists (positive juristic and political principles). But there arises thus the problem, to make the actual State more and more adequate to the rational State. The science which contemplates this approximation is *politics*. Complete adequacy to the idea is not to be expected on the part of any actual State. Every political constitution is legitimate, provided only it renders not impossible the progress to a better. Wholly illegitimate is only that constitution which would maintain all as it now is.

The absolute ego of the *Wissenschaftslehre* sunders in the *Rechtslehre* (theory of rights) into an infinite number of persons: to restore unity is the problem of the *Sittenlehre* (theory of duties). Rights and morals are essentially different. Right (justice) is the external necessity to do something or to omit something in order not to infringe the liberty of others; the internal necessity to do or to omit something quite independently of external motives constitutes morality. And as the system of rights arose from the conflict of the tendency to freedom in one subject with the tendency to freedom in another subject, so the system of duties arises similarly from a conflict, not however from any external conflict, but, on the contrary, from an internal conflict of different motives in one and the same person. (1.) Every rational being strives to independency, to freedom for the sake of freedom. This is the fundamental and pure spring of action, and it supplies at once the formal principle of morals, the principle of absolute autonomy, of absolute independency of all that is external to the ego. But (2.) as a rational being in actual existence is empirical and finite, as by force of nature he assumes his own self as a corporeal being to which a non-ego opposes itself, there dwells in him beside the pure spring another and empirical spring, the instinct of self-preservation, the instinct of nature, the aim of which is not freedom but enjoyment. This instinct of nature supplies the material, eudæmonistic principle of a striving for enjoyment for the sake of enjoyment. These springs seem mutually contradictory; but from a transcendental point of view they are one and the same primitive spring of human action. For even the instinct of self-preservation is an emanation of the tendency of the ego towards action, and it cannot be destroyed: destruction of the instinct of nature would be followed by the destruction of all definite effort, of all conscious action. The two principles are to be united, then, but in such a manner that the natural shall be subordinated to the pure principle. This union can only occur in an act which in matter looks (in obedience to the natural principle) to the world of sense; but in ultimate end (obeying the pure principle) to an entire emancipation from the world of sense. Neither mere negative withdrawal from the world of objects, in order to be a pure self-subsistent ego, nor yet mere striving to enjoyment is the problem, but a positive action on the world of sense so that the ego shall always become freer, its power over the non-ego greater, and the supremacy of reason over nature more and more realized. This striving to act free in order always to become more free, is, in its combination of the pure and the natural principle, the moral or practical motive. The end of moral action is placed in infinitude, however; it can never be reached, for the ego can never possibly become wholly independent of any limitation, so long as it is destined to remain an intelligence, a self-conscious ego. The nature of the moral act is consequently to be defined thus. All action must consist of a series of acts, in continuing which the ego may be able to regard itself as always approaching to absolute independency. Every act must be a term in this series; no act is indifferent; to be always engaged in an act that lies in this series, this is our moral vocation. The principle of morals therefore is, Fulfil continually your vocation! It belongs, in a formal, subjective reference, to moral action, that it is an intelligent, free action, an action in accordance with ideas; in all that you do, be free, in order to become free. We ought blindly to follow neither the pure nor the natural spring. We ought to act only in the clear conviction of our vocation or duty. We must do our duty only for the sake of duty. The blind impulses of uncorrupted instinct, sympathy, compassion, benevolence, etc., do indeed, in consequence of the original identity of the natural and the pure principle, advance the same interests as the latter. But as natural impulses they are not moral; the moral motive possesses causality as if it possessed none, for it says, Be free! Only through free action according to the notion of his absolute vocation is a rational being absolutely self-dependent; only action on duty is such a manifestation of

a purely rational being. The formal condition of the morality of our acts, therefore, is, Act always up to the conviction of your duty; or, Act according to your conscience. The absolute criterion of the correctness of our conviction is a feeling of truth and assurance. This instinctive feeling never deceives, for it only exists when there is perfect harmony of the empirical with the pure, original ego. Fichte now develops his system of special duties, which, however, we shall here omit.

The religious opinions of Fichte are contained in the above-mentioned essay, *On the ground of our Belief in a Divine Government of the World*, as well as in his written defences which followed. The moral order of the universe, says Fichte, is that Divinity which we assume. By right action this divine element becomes alive and actual in us. Only under presupposition of it, presupposition, that is, of the moral end being capable of realization in the world of sense by means of a higher order, is each of our acts performed. Faith in such order is the complete and perfect faith; for this moral order, actually operative in life, is itself God: we neither require any other god, nor can we comprehend any other. We possess no ground of reason for going beyond this moral order of the universe, and assuming, on the principle of concluding from the derivative to the primitive, that there is also a particular being who is the cause of it. Is this order, then, at all contingent in its nature? It is the absolute *first* of all objective knowledge. But even granting your conclusion, what properly have you assumed in it? This being is to be supposed different from you and the world, it is to be supposed to act in the latter in obedience to ideas; it is to be supposed consequently capable of ideas, possessed of personality, of consciousness? What then do you call personality, consciousness? Without doubt that which you have found in yourself, which you have known only in experience of yourself, and which you have named only from experience of yourself. But that it is absolutely impossible for you to think this being without limitation and finitude, the slightest attention to the construction of the notion will readily show you. By the mere attribution of the predicate you convert it into what is finite, into a being that is the fellow of yourself; and you have not, as you intended, thought God, but only multiplied your own self in thought. The notion of God as a particular substance



is contradictory and impossible. God veritably exists only in the form of a moral order of the universe. All belief in any divine element that involves more than this notion is to me a horror, and utterly unworthy of a rational being. Morality and religion are here, as with Kant, naturally one: both are a grasping to the supersensual, the one by action, the other by belief. This 'religion of a happy right-doing' we find further developed by Fichte in his written defences against the accusation of atheism. He even maintains in these that nothing but the principles of the new philosophy is capable of restoring to men their lost sense of religion, and of revealing the true nature of the teachings of Christ. This he endeavours to demonstrate particularly in his *Appeal* to the public, where he says: To answer the questions, What is good? What is true? this is the aim of my philosophical system. That system maintains first of all that there is something absolutely true and good; there is something that to the free flight of thought is restrictive and authoritative. A voice that may not die proclaims to man that something is his duty, which do he must, and for no other reason. This principle in our nature opens to us an entire new world; we receive from it a higher existence, which, completely independent of nature, has its foundations wholly and solely in ourselves. This absolute self-sufficiency of reason, this perfect emancipation from dependency, I will name it blessedness. As the single but infallible means of blessedness, conscience points out performance of my duty. An immovable conviction is laid within me, therefore, that there exists a law, an established order which renders blessedness a necessary result of the pure moral character. That the man, who would maintain the dignity of his reason, must establish himself on faith in this order of a moral universe, must regard each of his duties as a provision of that order, must consider all their results as good, as blessed, and joyfully submit to it,—this, absolutely necessary, is the essence of religion. Create within you the spirit of duty, and you will know God, and, whilst you appear to others as in the world of sense, you will, in your own self, know yourself to be, even here below, already in the life eternal.

## II.—The Philosophy of Fichte in its Later Form.

All that Fichte has contributed of importance to speculative philosophy is contained in the system which has been just considered. After quitting Jena, however, this system underwent a gradual modification in consequence of several influences. It was naturally difficult to preserve so uncompromising an idealism as that of the *Wissenschaftslehre*; again the intercurrent nature-philosophy of Schelling remained not without effect on Fichte's own mode of thought, although he denied this, and fell into a bitter dispute with Schelling in regard to it; and lastly, his private, not quite easy, external circumstances, may have tended to modify his general views of the world. Fichte's writings of this second period are for the most part of a popular nature, and calculated for a general audience. They bear all of them the stamp of his keen spirit and of his lofty manly moral nature. They want, however, the originality and the scientific rigour of his earlier writings. Even those among them which are more particularly scientific, satisfy not the demands for genetic construction and philosophical method, made earlier by Fichte himself with so much earnestness both on himself and others. His teaching now, indeed, has so much the appearance of a loosely connected intertexture of old subjectivo-idealistic views, and of new objectivo-idealistic ones, that Schelling was justified in characterizing it as the most thorough syncretism and eclecticism. The distinction of his new position, namely, is, that—with points of resemblance to Neo-Platonism in it—he attempts to transform his subjective idealism into objective pantheism, or the ego of his earlier philosophy into the absolute, into the notion of God. God, the idea of whom he had formerly placed only at the end of his system in the equivocal shape of a moral order of the universe, became now the absolute beginning and the single element of his philosophy. This philosophy took on in this manner, then, quite another colour. Religious gentleness assumed the place now of moral severity; instead of the ego and duty, life and love became the principles of his philosophy; in room of the keen dialectic of the *Wissenschaftslehre* a predilection for mystical and figurative modes of expression manifested itself. Especially characteristic of this second period is the leaning to religion and to Christianity, chiefly in the work, *Guidance to a Blessed Life.* Fichte maintains here that his new doctrine is the doctrine of Christianity, and particularly of the Gospel of John. This Gospel Fichte insisted on regarding at that time as the only genuine authority on Christianity, because the other apostles, remaining half Jews, had left standing the fundamental error of Jewry, its doctrine of a creation in time. Fichte attributed special worth to the first part of the prologue of John: in it the creation of the world out of nothing is refuted, and the true conception of a revelation equally eternal with God, and necessarily given with his being, enunciated. What, on the other hand, is said in the prologue of the incarnation of the Logos in the person of Christ, possesses for Fichte only an historical import. The absolute and eternally true position is, that, at all times and in every one without exception, who vitally perceives his unity with God, and who really and in deed devotes his entire individual life to the divine life within him—in him the eternal word, quite in the same manner as in Jesus Christ, becomes flesh and receives a personally sensuous and human form. The entire community of the faithful, the first born as well as the later born, coalesce in the one common vital source of all, the Godhead. And so, then, Christianity, its end attained, coincides once more with absolute truth, and proclaims that all require to come into unity with God. So long as a man wants to become something for himself, God comes not into him, for no man can become God. So soon, however, as he annuls himself perfectly, completely, and to the last root, there remains but God alone, and He is All in All. Man cannot make for himself a God; nevertheless himself, as the negation proper, he can annul, and then he is merged in God.



The result of his advanced philosophizing, Fichte sums up, briefly and clearly, in the following verses, which we take from two of his posthumous sonnets:—

> 'Th' undying One
> Lives as thou liv'st, and sees in all thou see'st,
> Nought is but God; and God is nought but life.
> Quite clear the veil is raised from thee, and lo!
> 'Tis self: let die, then, this destructible;
> And henceforth God will live in all thy strife.
> Consider what survives this strife below;
> Then will the veil as veil be visible,
> And all revealed thou'lt see celestial life.'

## XLII.—*Herbart.*

A PECULIAR, in many respects estimable, continuation of the philosophy of Kant was attempted by *Johann Friedrich Herbart* (b. 1776 at Oldenburg; 1805, Professor of Philosophy at Göttingen; 1808, Kant's successor at Königsberg; 1833, recalled to Göttingen, where, 1841, he died). The philosophy of Herbart distinguishes itself from most of the other systems in this way, that it sets not up an idea of reason as its principle, but, like the Kantian, finds its problem in a critical investigation and construction of subjective experience. It, too, is criticism, but with results that are at once peculiar, and altogether different from the Kantian. For this reason, from its very principle, it occupies, in the history of philosophy, an isolated position: almost all the earlier systems, instead of appearing as moments of the one true philosophy, are to it mistakes. It is particularly characteristic of it that it is eminently hostile to the post-Kantian philosophy of Germany, especially to Schelling's philosophy of nature, in which it can see only a delusion and a cobweb of the brain. In comparison with the philosophy of Schelling, indeed, it would rather declare its agreement with the philosophy of Hegel, although the latter is its polar opposite. We give a brief exposition of its leading ideas.

(1.) *The foundation and starting-point of philosophy* is, to Herbart, the common view of things, knowledge gained by the method of experience. A philosophical system is nothing more than an experimental scheme, by means of which some particular thinker attempts to answer certain questions which he has put to himself. Every question that is to be proposed in philosophy must consider wholly and solely the given facts, or rather must owe to them its suggestion; for the sole basal field of certainty for man, is experience alone. *With it* is every beginning in philosophy to be made. Thought must submit to the notions of experience: they shall lead it, not it them. Thus, then, experience is wholly and solely the object and foundation of philosophy; what is no given fact, that cannot be an object of thought; and it is impossible to realize any knowledge in excess of the limits of experience.

(2.) The facts of experience are certainly the basis of philosophy; but, as simply ready-found, they are still without it. The question occurs, What is the first fact, the beginning of philosophy? Thought has first to free itself from experience, to make clear to itself the difficulties of the investigation. *The beginning of philosophy*, where thought raises itself above the element that is simply given, is therefore deliberative doubt, or *scepsis*. There is a lower and a higher scepticism. The lower doubts only that things are so constituted as they appear to us; the higher transcends the general phenomenal form, and asks whether there be anything at all existent there. It doubts, for example, the succession of time; it asks, in regard to design in natural objects, whether it belongs to them, or is simply thought as in them, etc. And thus we gradually attain to an expression of the problems which constitute the interest of metaphysics. The result of scepticism is thus not negative, but positive. Doubt is nothing but the thinking of the notions of experience, and these are the burthen of philosophy. Scepticism by means of this reflection enables us to perceive that the notions of experience, though referent to a given factum, do not possess, nevertheless, an import that is thinkable, that is free from logical absurdities.

(3.) Metaphysics, to Herbart, is the science of what is intelligible in experience. Thus far, namely, we have reached perception of two truths. On the one side it is seen that the sole basis of philosophy is experience, and on the other that scepsis has shaken the credibility of experience. First of all, then, this scepsis must be converted into a precise knowledge of the metaphysical problems. Notions are obtruded on us by experience which are incogitable; that is to say, they are thought indeed by our ordinary understanding, but this thought is only a confused and obscure thought, that does not distinguish and compare the contradictory attributes (*notæ*, logical significates). Skilled thought, on the contrary, logical analysis, finds in the notions of experience (time, space, origination, motion, etc.), contradictions, contradictory, mutually negating characters (*notæ*). What are we to do then? These notions cannot be rejected, for they are given to us, and we can only hold by what is given; neither can they be accepted, for they are incogitable, logically impracticable. The only measure that is left us is—to transform them. *Transformation of the notions of experience*, the elimination of their contradictions, is

the special act of speculation. Thus it is scepsis that has brought forward the more special problems, and it is the resolution of the contradictions of these that is the business of metaphysics. The most important of these problems are those of inherence, mutation, and the ego.

The relation between Herbart and Hegel is here particularly evident. As regards the contradictory nature of the categories and notions of experience both are agreed. But in the next step they separate. Inherent contradiction, says Hegel, is the very nature of these notions, as of all things in general: becoming, for example, is essentially unity of being and non-being, etc. That, rejoins Herbart, is impossible so long as the principle of contradiction still retains its authority. That the notions of experience present contradictions, that is no fault of the objective world, but of subjective perception, which must redress its erroneous construction by a transformation of these notions and an elimination of their contradictions. Herbart accuses the philosophy of Hegel of empiricism, in that it accepts from experience these contradictory notions unaltered; and, notwithstanding discernment of their contradictory nature, regards them, just because they are empirically given, as justified, and even, on their account, transforms the science of logic itself. Hegel and Herbart are related as Heraclitus and Parmenides (VI. and VII).

(4.) From this point Herbart proceeds in the following manner to his '*reals*.' The discovery, he says, of contradictions in all our notions of experience has that in it to lead to absolute scepticism, to despair of truth. But it is evident at once that if the existence of any basis of reality is to be denied, appearance also (sensation, perception, thought) is sapped and ruined. But that being inadmissible, we must grant this proposition: so much appearance, so much proof of reality. To experience as given we certainly cannot ascribe any true, any absolutely existent reality; it is not independent *per se*, it is in, or through, or by occasion of, another. *True being* (reality) is an absolute being, that, as such, excludes all relativity, all dependency; it is *absolute position*, which we, for our part, have not to produce, but recognise. So far as this position is to be supposed to imply a something, reality belongs to it. What veritably *is*, therefore, is always a *quale*, a something, which is regarded as real. In order, now, that this *real* may correspond to the conditions which are implied



in the notion of the absolute position, its *what* must be thought, (*a.*) as absolutely positive or affirmative, that is to say, as without negation or limitation, which would cancel the absoluteness; (*b.*) as absolutely simple, or as not a plurality and not subjected to inner antitheses; (*c.*) as insusceptible of any quantitative determinations, that is to say, not as a *quantum*, divisible, extended in time and space, nor yet as a *continuum*. It is always to be kept in view, too, that this absolute reality is not merely a reality thought, but one that is self-subsistent, self-dependent, and therefore only for the *recognition* of thought. The notion of this reality constitutes the entire foundation of the metaphysics of Herbart. One example of this. The first problem to be resolved by metaphysics is the problem of inherence—the thing and its qualities. Every object of perception appears to the senses as a complex of several qualities. But all these qualities are relative. We say, sound, for example, is the quality of a body. A body sounds—but not without air; what now is this quality in airless space? A body is heavy, but only on the earth. It is coloured, but not without light; how then about this quality in the dark? Plurality of qualities, again, is incompatible with the unity of the object. If we ask, what is this thing, the answer is, the sum of its qualities: it is soft, white, sonorous, heavy, but the question was of a one, not of a many. The answer tells what it has, not what it is. The catalogue of qualities, moreover, is always incomplete. The what of a thing, therefore, can consist neither in the several qualities, nor in their combination. The only answer that remains is: a thing is that unknown $x$, whose *position* is represented by the *positions* implied in the various qualities; in short, it is substance. For if we abstract from the qualities of a thing in order to see what the thing quite in its own self is, we find nothing left at last, and we perceive that it was only the complex of qualities, only their combination into a whole, that we regarded as the particular thing. But inasmuch as every appearance points to a particular reality, and we must assume, consequently, as many realities as there are appearances, the obvious conclusion is that we have to regard the basis of reality that underlies a thing and its qualities, as a complex of realities, a complex of many simple substances or monads, of which monads the quality besides is different in the different (monads). The grouping of these monads repeated in

experience is considered by us as a thing. Let us briefly consider now what modification this conception of position (reality) entails on the main metaphysical notions. The notion of causality, in the first place, for example, is evidently no longer able to maintain its usual form. In its regard, in point of fact, we perceive at most the succession in time, but not the necessary connexion of the cause with the effect. The cause itself can neither be transcendent, nor immanent; for, in the first case, real actions of one real upon another real contradict the notion of absolute reality, and, in the other case, substance would require to be thought as one with its qualities, which contradicts the conclusions relative to a thing and its qualities. As little can the reason why particular natures are found together be expected from the notion of the real, for the real is absolutely unalterable. Causality it is impossible to explain otherwise, then, than by conceiving the many reals (which underlie the qualities) to be an equal number of causes of an equal number of appearances, each independently. With causality the problem of change coheres. As, however, there exists to Herbart no inner change, no self-determination, no becoming or life,—as the monads are and remain unchangeable in themselves, they do not *become* different in quality, they *are* different the one from the other, from the first, and each of them preserves its own quality without alteration. A solution for the problem of change, then, can only be sought in a theory of the disturbances and self-preservations of the monads. But if all that can be called, not merely apparent, but actual change, in the monads is to be reduced to 'self-preservation,' as the last glimmer of action and life, the question still is, how will you explain at least the appearance of change? For an answer it is necessary to have recourse to two expedients, first, that of contingent aspects, and, second, that of intellectual space. The contingent aspects, a conception borrowed from mathematics, import, and in reference to the special problem, that the same notion may, without the least alteration in itself, take on in relation to others a variety of values; thus the same straight line may be regarded as radius or as tangent, the same note as in harmony or not in harmony. By help of this conception, then, it is possible so to regard what actually takes place in the case of a monad brought into contact with others opposed to it in quality, that an actual change shall on



the one hand appear to be affirmed, while on the other the monad itself shall remain absolutely unaltered. (A grey colour, for example, beside black is white, beside white, black, without any change of its quality.) The expedient of intellectual space, again, originates in the necessity to think the monads as well together as not together. Through its application elimination is accomplished particularly of the contradictions in the notion of motion. Lastly, it is evident that the notions of matter and the ego (the transformation or psychological explanation of which is the remaining business of metaphysics) are, like the preceding, no less self-contradictory than incompatible with the fundamental real; for it is impossible to derive material extension from inextended monads, and with the loss of matter there follows that also of the usual (apparent) notions of time and space, while as regards the ego, it is not possible for its notion either, representing as it does that of a thing with many changeable qualities (states, powers, faculties), to be admitted without transformation.

Herbart's 'reals' remind of the atoms of Democritus (IX. 2), the 'one' of Parmenides (VI.), and the monads of Leibnitz. As penetrable, however, they are distinguished from the atoms. Herbart's reals are as capable of being conceived in the same space, as mathematical points of being thought in the same spot. In this respect they have a greater resemblance to the Eleatic One: both are simple, and occupy an intellectual space. But then the reals differ from the one, not only as many, but as various, and even opposed. The resemblance of the reals to the monads of Leibnitz has been already alluded to; the latter, however, are essentially intelligent (percipient, concipient, ideating); they are beings with inner states; whereas to Herbart intelligence belongs as little as every other state to the fundamental real itself.

(5.) The *physics* and *psychology* connect with the metaphysics. The first explains, in accordance with the third, such matters as repulsion, attraction, affinity, etc. The second relates to the soul, the ego. The ego is firstly a metaphysical problem, as involving contradictions. Again, it is a psychological problem, explanation of its genesis being required. Firstly, then, those contradictions come to be considered which lie in the identity of the subject and the object. The ego affirms itself and is consequently an object to itself. The object affirmed, however, is iden-

tical with the subject affirming. The ego consequently is, as Fichte says, a subject-object, and as such full of the most perplexing contradictions; for the subject and the object can never be thought as identical without contradiction. The ego, however, is once for all given; we cannot turn our backs upon it; what is left then is to free it from contradiction. This is possible by regarding the ego as intelligence, and the various sensations, thoughts, etc., as the various appearances. The solution here, then, is the same as in the case of inherence. The thing was regarded in that case as a complex of as many reals as there are qualities; and, inner being substituted for outer qualities, the ego is not differently situated. What we call ego, therefore, is nothing but the soul. As a monad, as an absolute real, the soul is simple, eternal, indissoluble, indestructible, and, consequently, immortal in duration. From this position Herbart directs his polemic against the ordinary psychology that attributes certain powers and faculties to the soul. What takes place in the soul is nothing but self-preservation, a process that differs and varies only in reference to the difference and variety of the other reals. These reals, coming into conflict with the monad that is soul, are the causes of the various states of the latter—of all that apparently infinite multiplicity of sensations, ideas, affections. This theory of self-preservation is the entire basis of the psychology of Herbart. What ordinary psychology calls feeling, thinking, perceiving, are but specific varieties in the self-preservation of the soul; they represent no special conditions of the inner real, but only relations of the reals generally, relations which, pressing in at once from a variety of directions, partly neutralize, partly intensify, and partly modify one another. Consciousness is the sum of these relations, borne by the soul to the other monads. Neither the relations nor the correspondent ideas, however, are equally definite; as said, neutralizations, intensifications, modifications take place, and a general interaction results, which admits of being calculated by the principles of statics. The neutralized ideas are not conceived wholly to disappear either; they remain as it were at the door of consciousness, till, through combination with others like themselves, they attain the due intensity and are enabled to enter with recognition. This movement of the ideas, which is excellently described



by Herbart, is capable of being submitted to the principles of mechanics; and we may form a conception now of what is known as Herbart's application of mathematics to empirical psychology. The repressed ideas, of which, darkly operative at the door of consciousness, we are only half aware, are the feelings. These announce themselves, according as their tendency inwards has more or less success, as desires. Increased by the hope of fruition the desires are will. Will is not any special faculty of the soul, but depends on the relation of the predominant ideas to the rest. Energetic decision, the character of the man, results from the duration in consciousness of a certain mass of ideas to the weakening of others, or their repulsion to the door of consciousness.

(6.) The value of the philosophy of Herbart lies in its psychology and metaphysics. The other spheres of the spirit of man, law, morals, politics, art, religion, are for the most part in its case but very poorly furnished. Not that excellent relative remarks are altogether wanting, but they cohere ill with the speculative principles of the system. Herbart expressly isolates the particular philosophical sciences, and rigorously separates, in especial, theoretical and practical philosophy. He censures the attempts at unity in philosophy, and ascribes to them a variety of errors; for logical, metaphysical, and æsthetical forms are to him essentially disparate. The objects of ethics and of æsthetics as a whole, concern an immediate evidence, while to metaphysics, in which all knowledge is gained only by the elimination of error, any such evidence is, in its very nature, alien. The æsthetical principles, on which practical philosophy founds, are to Herbart independent of the reality of any object, and come forward of themselves, even in the greatest metaphysical darkness, with intuitive certainty. The moral elements, he says, are pleasing and displeasing relations of will. He thus establishes practical philosophy entirely on æsthetic judgments. These are involuntary and intuitive, and attach to objects the predicate of approvableness or disapprovableness without proof. It is in this conclusion that the difference between Herbart and Kant is seen at its greatest.

On the whole the philosophy of Herbart may be described as an extension of the monadology of Leibnitz, full of patient ingenuity, but devoid of inward fertility, or any germ of movement.

## XLIII.—*Schelling.*

SCHELLING originates in *Fichte*; and without further introduction we may proceed at once to an exposition of his philosophy, inasmuch as its derivation from the Fichtian forms part of the history of its growth, and is characterized there.

*Friedrich Wilhelm Joseph Schelling* was born at Leonberg in Würtemberg, on the 27th of January 1775. Endowed with unusual precocity, he entered the theological seminary of Tübingen in his fifteenth year, and applied himself partly to the study of philology and mythology, partly and especially to that of the philosophy of Kant. During this period he was in personal relations with *Hölderlin* and *Hegel*. He appeared very early as an author: first on taking his degree of master of arts, namely, in 1792, with a dissertation on the third chapter of Genesis, in which he gives an interesting philosophical interpretation of the Mosaic account of the Fall. In the following year, 1793, he contributed to the *Memorabilien* of Paulus his essay of a kindred nature, *Myths and Philosophemes of the Earliest Times*. In the last year of his stay at Tübingen (1794-95) we have his two philosophical works: *On the Possibility of a Form of Philosophy in general*, and *Of the Ego as Principle of Philosophy, or of the Unconditioned in Human Knowledge*. On completing his university course, Schelling went to Leipzig in the capacity of tutor to the Barons von Riedesel, and shortly afterwards to Jena, where he became Fichte's disciple and fellow-labourer. On Fichte's removal from Jena, he was appointed in his place as teacher of philosophy, and began, gradually abandoning the position of Fichte, to develop more and more his own ideas. At Jena he edited the Journal of Speculative Physics, and, in conjunction with Hegel, the Critical Journal of Philosophy. In 1803 he was removed as Professor of Philosophy to Würzburg, and in 1807 to Munich, in the capacity of ordinary member of the newly instituted Academy of Sciences there. A year later he became General Secretary of the Plastic Arts, and, later still, on the establishment of the university of Munich, one of its professors. After Jacobi's death, he was made President of the Academy at Munich, but removed in 1841 to Berlin, where he gave several courses of lectures, particularly on



the 'Philosophy of Mythology,' and on that of 'Revelation.' For many years Schelling published nothing of importance, and only after his death, which took place at Ragaz on the 20th of August 1854, did the publication (completed in 1861) of his later works commence. Ten volumes comprise his earlier writings (some of them unpublished in his lifetime), and four others his concluding lectures. The philosophy of Schelling is no finished and completed system to which his various works are but as component parts: like the philosophy of Plato, it is essentially a history of development, a series of progressive stages, through which the philosopher himself passed. Instead of systematically completing the various sciences in agreement with his general principle, Schelling seemed always beginning again with the beginning, always labouring at new positions, new foundations, mostly, like Plato, in connexion with earlier philosophemes (Fichte, Spinoza, Neo-Platonism, Leibnitz, Jacob Böhm, Gnosticism), which he endeavoured to assimilate, one after the other, into his own system. An exposition of his philosophy, therefore, has to guide itself accordingly, and to take up its several periods singly, pursuant to the succession of the various groups of his writings.

### 1.—First Period:

### *Schelling's Derivation from Fichte.*

Schelling's starting-point was Fichte, to whom, in his earliest writings, he openly adhered. His work *On the Possibility of a Form of Philosophy* is intended to demonstrate the necessity of an ultimate principle, as first proclaimed by Fichte. His other work, *On the Ego*, again, shows how the ultimate ground of our knowledge lies only in the ego, and how every true philosophy consequently must be idealism. If our cognition is to have any reality, there must be a point possible in which ideality and reality, thought and being, shall coincide and be identical; and if cognition, in consequence of the existence of a higher principle that conditioned it, were not itself highest, it could not possibly be absolute. Fichte regarded this work as a commentary on his *Wissenschaftslehre*; it contains hints, nevertheless, of Schelling's own later position, especially in the accent laid on the unity of knowledge, on the necessity of the various sciences becoming in the end one. The *Letters on Dog-*

*matism and Criticism*, 1795, are a polemic against those followers of Kant, who lapse from the critico-idealistic position of the master back into the ancient dogmatism again. In a series of articles in the journal of Niethammer and Fichte, Schelling gave, 1797-98, a general view of the latest philosophical literature—also from Fichte's position. But still he begins here to direct his attention to a philosophical deduction of nature, if as yet, Fichte-like, only from the nature of the ego. The same views were further developed in his *Ideas towards a Philosophy of Nature*, 1797, and in his work *On the World-Soul*, 1798. The leading thoughts of the last three works are as follows. The origin of the notion of matter lies in the nature and action of the mind. Mind, namely, is the unity of a limiting and an unlimited force. Limitlessness would render consciousness as impossible as an absolute limitedness. Feeling, perception, cognition is conceivable only if the force that tends into limitlessness become limited by an opposing force, and this latter in turn be relieved of its limits. Mind is but the antagonism of these two forces, or the perpetual process of their relative unity. Nature is similarly situated. Matter as such is not the *prius*, but the forces of which it is the unity. It is to be conceived only as continual product of attraction and repulsion, the primitive forces, and not as inert mass. But force is as it were what is immaterial in matter. It is that which may be compared to the mind. Matter and mind, then, exhibiting the same conflict of opposed forces, must themselves be capable of union in a higher identity. But the mental organ for the apprehension of nature is perception, which possesses itself of space—space limited and filled by the forces of attraction and repulsion—as object of outer sense. Thus the inference was necessary for Schelling, that there is *the same absolute* in nature as in mind, and that their harmony is no mere reflexion of thought. 'Or if you maintain that it is we who only *transfer* this idea to nature, then never upon your soul has any dream dawned of what for us nature is and should be. For we will not allow nature only to agree contingently (as it were through interposition of a third something), with the laws of intellect, but necessarily and originally, and maintain her, not only to express, but to realize these laws, and to be nature and to be called nature, only in so far as she accomplishes this.' 'Nature shall be the visible soul, soul



the invisible nature. And here, then, in the absolute identity of soul *within* us and of nature *without* us, must lie resolution of the problem as to the possibility of an external nature.' This thought that nature, matter, is the actuose unity of attraction and repulsion, in the same manner as mind is the unity of tendencies limiting and unlimited, that the repulsive force of matter corresponds to the positive unlimited element of mind, and the attractive to the negative or limiting one—this idealistic deduction of matter from the nature of the ego prevails throughout the writings of this period. Nature appears thus as the counterpart of the mind, and produced by the mind, only that the mind may, through its agency, attain to a pure perception of itself, to self-consciousness. Hence the series of grades in nature, in which all the stations of intellect on its way to self-consciousness are externally stereotyped. In the organized world especially, it is that intellect contemplates its own self-production. For this reason there is something symbolical in everything organic; every plant is a corporealized throb of the soul. The main peculiarities of organic growth, self-formation from within outwards, adaptation of means to ends, variety of interpenetration of form and matter, are all so many leading features of the mind. As in the mind there is an infinite effort towards self-organization, so also on the part of the external world must a similar tendency display itself. The entire system of the universe, therefore, is a species of organization, formed from a centre outwards, and rising ever from lower to higher stages. In accordance with this point of view, then, the great endeavour of the philosophy of nature must be to construe into unity the life of nature which has been sundered and dislocated by natural philosophy into an innumerable variety of forces. 'It is needless pains, taken by many people, to prove how wholly different in their actions fire and electricity are. Everybody knows that who has ever seen or heard anything of either. But in our inmost soul we strive to unity of system in knowledge; we are impatient of the importunity that obtrudes a special principle for every special phenomenon; and we believe ourselves only there to catch a sight of nature, where, in the greatest complexity of phenomena, we discover at the same time the greatest simplicity of law, and in the most lavish prodigality of effects the strictest economy of means. There-

fore attention is due to every thought, even though still crude and incomplete, that tends to the simplification of principles: if for nothing else, it at least serves for impulsion to inquiry, and to exploration of the hidden tracks of nature.' The scientific investigation of nature showed a particular bias during this period, to the adoption of a duality of forces as dominant there. In mechanics, Kant had given a theory of the antithesis of attraction and repulsion; in chemistry, the phenomena of electricity, abstractly conceived as positive and negative, were assimilated to magnetism; in physiology, there was the antagonism of irritability and sensibility, etc. etc. As against these dualities, now, Schelling pressed forward to the unity of all opposites, of all dualities, not to the abstract unity, but to the concrete identity, the harmonious concert and co-operation of the whole heterogeneous variety. 'The world is the actuose unity of a positive and a negative principle, 'and these two opposing forces, in conflict or in coalition, lead to the idea of a world-organizing, world-systematizing principle, the soul of the universe.'

In the work on the *World-Soul*, Schelling made great progress towards an autonomic conception of nature. In such soul nature possesses a special, immanent, intelligible principle. The objectivity, the independent life of nature is recognised thereby in a manner that is impossible to the consistent idealism of Fichte. In this direction Schelling continued to advance, and distinguished presently with perfect consciousness transcendental philosophy and nature-philosophy as the two sides of philosophy in general. The addition to idealism of a complementary philosophy of nature was a decided advance on the part of Schelling beyond the position of the *Wissenschaftslehre*. With it, then,—though Schelling still continued to employ the method, and to believe himself true to the spirit, of Fichte,—we pass into a second stadium of his philosophizing.

### 2.—Second Period:

### *Distinction of Philosophy into Philosophies of Nature and of Mind (Spirit).*

This position is principally represented in the following works: *First Sketch of a System of Nature-Philosophy*, 1799; Introduction to this work, 1799; articles in the



Journal of Speculative Physics, 2 vols., 1800-1801; *System of Transcendental Idealism*, 1800. The two parts of philosophy Schelling distinguishes thus. All knowledge rests on the agreement of a subject with an object. Nature is the sum of objectivity, as the ego, or intelligence, is the sum of what is subjective. There are two ways of joining the two sides. Either assuming nature to be the *prius*, we ask, how does intelligence come to be added to it (that is, we resolve nature into pure determinations of thought—philosophy of nature); or assuming the subject to be the *prius*, we ask, how are the objects produced from the subject—transcendental philosophy. All philosophy must endeavour to construct either intelligence out of nature, or nature out of intelligence. As transcendental philosophy subordinates the real to the ideal, so the philosophy of nature endeavours to deduce the ideal from the real. Both, however, are but the poles of one and the same knowledge, and they mutually seek each other: hence the one leads necessarily only to the other.

(*a.*) *Philosophy of Nature.*—To philosophize on nature is as much as to create nature, to raise it out of the dead mechanism in which it appears sunk, to animate it as it were with freedom, and render possible for it its own spontaneous evolution. And what then is matter but the extinguished spirit? Nature, accordingly, being but the visible organism of our minds, will be able to produce nothing but what follows reason and law. But it is to destroy all idea of nature from the first, to assume the design exhibited by it to result from without, in consequence of the understanding of some other being acting on it. A perfect demonstration of the intelligible world as present in the laws and forms of the sensible world, and again a perfect comprehension of these laws and forms by means of the intelligible world, a demonstration, consequently, of the identity of the worlds of nature and of thought—this it is the business of the philosophy of nature to accomplish. Its beginning, indeed, is immediate experience; primarily we know nothing but from experience; so soon, however, as I perceive the inner necessity of a proposition of experience, this proposition is already *a priori*. Empiricism enlarged into unconditionedness is the philosophy of nature. The leading ideas of this philosophy Schelling enunciates thus:—Nature is an oscillation between productivity and product,

continually passing into definite forms and products, but equally also productively passing beyond these. This oscillation points to a duplicity of the principles by which nature is maintained in constant activity and preserved from exhausting itself, and coming to term in precise products. Universal duality, then, must be the principle of all interpretation of nature. The first principle of a philosophical theory of nature is, to look for polarity and dualism everywhere. On the other hand, again, all consideration of nature must end in recognition of the absolute unity of the whole, a unity, however, which is to be discerned in nature only on one of its sides. Nature is, as it were, the instrument by which absolute unity eternally makes real all that has been pre-formed in the absolute mind. The absolute, then, is completely to be perceived in nature, although the world of externality produces only in series, only successively and in infinite gradation, what is at once and eternally in the world of truth. Schelling treats the philosophy of nature in three sections: (1.) Proof is to be given that, in its original products, nature is *organic*; (2.) the conditions of an *inorganic* nature are to be deduced; and (3.) the *reciprocity* of organic and inorganic nature is to be demonstrated. (1.) *Organic nature* is deduced thus: In an absolute sense nature is nothing but infinite activity, infinite productivity. Were this to realize itself unchecked, there were produced at once with infinite velocity an absolute product, whereby empirical nature were unexpressed. But if the latter is to be expressed, if there are to be finite products, then it will be necessary to assume that the productive activity of nature is checked by an opposed retarding activity, also existent in nature. A series of finite products is the consequent result. But the absolute productivity of nature aiming at an absolute product, these several products are only apparent products, each is immediately transcended again by nature in order, through an infinite series of finite products, to satisfy the absoluteness of the inner productivity. In this eternal production of the finite, then, nature appears as a living antagonism of two opposed forces, one promoting and the other retarding. The latter acts also in infinite multiplicity; the original productive force has to contend, not merely with a simple checking action, but with an infinity of reactions, which may be named the primitive qualities. Thus then every organic being is a



permanent expression of the conflict of the mutually disturbing and limiting actions of nature. And this, namely the primal limitedness and obstructedness of the formative actions of nature, explains why each organization, instead of attaining to an absolute product, continues only to reproduce itself *ad infinitum*. Here, too, lies the importance of the relation of sex in the organic world. It fixes the products of the latter, it compels them ever to return to their own grade, and reproduce it only. In such reproduction, nature considers not individuals but the genus. The individual is repugnant to nature, whose desire is the absolute, and whose endeavour is ever to express it. The individual products, therefore, which exhibit the activity of nature as stationary, may be regarded only as unsuccessful attempts to express the absolute. The genus is the end of nature, then, the individual but the means. So soon as the former is secure, nature abandons the latter, and works for its destruction. The dynamical gradation of organic nature is divided and classified by Schelling according to the three fundamental functions of organized existences:—(*a.*) power of reproduction; (*b.*) irritability; (*c.*) sensibility. Those organisms stand highest in which sensibility is highest; those lower in which irritability predominates; lastly, reproduction appears in its greatest perfection where sensibility and irritability are almost lost. Nevertheless, these forces are woven into each other throughout the whole of nature, and consequently it is only a single organization which ascends there from plants to men. (2.) *Inorganic nature* is opposed to organic. The nature of the inorganic world is conditioned by that of the organic. If the constituents of the latter are productive, those of the former are unproductive. If in the one, it is only the genus that is fixed, in the other it is the individual, to which there belongs no reproduction of the genus. Inorganic nature, as opposed to organic, is necessarily a multiplicity of materials which are not related together otherwise than as being at once apart from and beside each other. In short, inorganic nature is mere mass—mass held together by a cause that is without,—gravity. Like organic nature, it has its grades nevertheless. What in organic nature is process of reproduction, is in inorganic nature process of chemistry (as, for example, combustion); what is there irritability is here electricity; what in the one is sensibility, the

highest organic grade, is in the other magnetism, or the highest inorganic grade. And thus we have already (3.) *the reciprocity of the organic and the inorganic worlds.* The result to which every true philosophy of nature must come is, that the difference between organic and inorganic nature exists in nature only as an object, while nature again as originally productive soars over both. If the functions of organization are only possible under presupposition of an inorganic world without, the two worlds must have a common origin. We can only explain this by assuming the existence of inorganic nature to imply a higher dynamic order of things to which it is subjected. There must be a third something that connects again organic with inorganic nature, a medium that supports the continuity of both. The identity of an ultimate cause must be assumed, by which, as by a common soul (world-soul), universal nature, organic and inorganic, is animated; a single principle which, fluctuating between organic and inorganic nature, and preserving the continuity of both, constitutes the first cause of all alteration in the one, and the ultimate ground of all activity in the other. We have here the idea of a universal organism. That it is a single organization which unites the organic and inorganic worlds we saw above in the parallelism of the gradations of both worlds. What in inorganic nature is the cause of magnetism, causes in organic nature sensibility; and this latter is but a higher potence of the former. Duplicity from identity, as it appears in the organic world in the form of sensibility, so in the inorganic world it appears in the form of magnetism. The organic world, then, is in this manner but a higher stage of the inorganic; it is one and the same dualism which, from magnetic polarity up through the phenomena of electricity, and the differences of chemistry, presents itself also in the organic world.

(*b.*) *Transcendental Philosophy.*—Transcendental philosophy is nature-philosophy made inward. The entire series, which we have described as it presents itself in the object, repeats itself as a successive development in the perceiving subject. The peculiarity of transcendental idealism, we are told in the preface, is, that it necessitates, so soon as it is accepted, a reproduction, as it were, of all knowledge from the beginning. What has long passed for established truth must submit to proof anew, and issue from it, in the event of success, at



least in a quite other shape and form. The various parts of philosophy, and philosophy itself, must be exhibited in a single continuity as the advancing history of consciousness to which the deposits of experience serve for memorial and document. Exposition of this consists in a gradation of intellectual forms, by means of which the ego rises to consciousness in its highest potence. Exact statement of the parallelism between nature and intelligence is possible neither to transcendental philosophy nor to the philosophy of nature apart, but to both united: the one is to be regarded as the necessary counterpart of the other. The principle of the subdivisions of transcendental philosophy results from its problem, to reproduce anew all knowledge, and to test anew all prejudices and established opinions. The prejudices of ordinary opinion are, in general, two:—(1.) That there exists without us, and independent of us, a world of things which is perceived as it is. To elucidate this prejudice is the problem of the first part of the transcendental philosophy (theoretical philosophy). (2.) That we can at will affect the objective world in accordance with ideas originating freely in us. The solution of this problem is practical philosophy. But these two problems involve us (3.) in a contradiction. How is mastery of the world of sense possible to thought, if intelligence, in its very origin, is but the slave of the objects? And, conversely, How is agreement possible between intelligence and things, if the latter are to be determined according to the former? The solution of this problem, the highest in transcendental philosophy, is the answer to the question, How are we at once to think intelligence as in subjection to objects, and objects as in subjection to intelligence? This it is impossible to think, unless the faculty which produced the objective world be originally identical with that which expresses itself in will; unless, therefore, the same faculty which in will is consciously productive, be in the production of the world, unconsciously productive. To prove this identity of the conscious and unconscious energies is the problem of the third part of the transcendental philosophy, or of the science of natural design and art. The three parts named completely correspond, consequently, to the three *Kritiken* of Kant—(1.) *Theoretical philosophy*, beginning with the highest principle of knowledge, consciousness, develops thence the history of the latter in its

principal epochs and stations, namely, sensation, perception, productive perception (as producing matter), external and internal perception (with deduction of space, time, and the Kantian categories), abstraction (distinction of intelligence from its own products), absolute abstraction or absolute will. The absolute act of will introduces us into (2.) *Practical philosophy.* Here the ego is no longer merely perceptive or unconscious, but it is consciously productive, or it realizes. As an entire nature originated in the primitive act of self-consciousness, a second nature will now be found to spring out of the second, or that of the free determination of self, and this second nature it is the object of practical philosophy to deduce. Schelling follows in the sequel almost entirely the doctrine of Fichte, but concludes with such admirable remarks on the philosophy of history as demonstrate an advance on Fichte. The moral order of the universe is not enough to insure the free action of intelligence its return. For this order is itself the product of the various subjects acting, and exists not where these act contrary to the moral law. It can neither be anything merely subjective, like the moral order of the universe, nor yet any mere submission to law on the part of objective nature, that insures free action its return, and brings it about that, from the completely lawless play of the freedom of the individuals, there issues at last, for the entire family of free beings, an objective, rational, and harmonious result. A principle superior at once to subject and object must be the invisible root of this harmony of both which action demands: this principle is the absolute which is neither subject nor object, but the common root and the uniting identity of both. The free action of the genus of rational beings, realizing itself in that element of subjective and objective harmony which is the eternal production of the absolute, is history. History, consequently, is nothing but the realization of that perpetually progressive harmony of subject and object, the gradual manifestation and revelation of the absolute. In this revelation there are three periods. The first is that in which power reveals itself only as destiny, blindly holds down freedom, and destroys, coldly and unconsciously, all that is greatest and noblest. This is the tragic historical period, a period of brilliancy, but of the disappearance as well of the marvels of the old world and of its dynasties, of the noblest humanity that ever flourished. The second historical



period is that in which the former blind power manifests itself now as nature, and the obscure law of necessity appears transformed into an open natural law, which compels the unbridled caprice of individual will to obey a plan of universal culture conducting in the end to a union of the peoples, to a universal state. This period begins with the advance of the mighty Roman republic. The third period will be that in which what was fate and nature in the former periods will manifest itself as providence, while the dominion of fate and nature will be seen to have been but the imperfect beginning of the gradual revelation of providence. When this period will begin it is impossible for us to say. But when it is, God is. (3.) *Philosophy of Art.*—The problem of transcendental philosophy is the concord of object and subject. This concord was realized in history (with which practical philosophy closed) either not at all, or only as infinite progress. But now the ego must succeed in actually perceiving this concord or identity, which constitutes its deepest self. If now, then, all conscious action is designful, coalescence on its part with unconscious action is only possible in what, being designful in itself, has been without designfulness produced. Such a product is nature; we have here the principle of all *Teleology* in which alone it is possible to find a solution of the given problem. What is distinctive of nature is that, though but blind mechanism, it is still designful, that it exhibits an identity of conscious subjective and of conscious objective action: in it the ego beholds its own innermost self, which indeed only consists in this identity. But in nature the ego regards that identity as only objective and external to itself: it must be enabled to perceive it also as such that its principle lies in the ego itself. Such perception is artistic perception. As the product of nature is an unconscious product that is like to a conscious one, so the product of art is a conscious product that is like to an unconscious one. To teleology, then, we must add *æsthetics.* The contradiction of the conscious and the unconscious, which without cessation perpetuates itself in history, and which is unconsciously resolved in nature, finds conscious resolution in the work of art. Here at last intelligence reaches a perfect perception of its own self. The feeling that accompanies this perception is a feeling of infinite satisfaction: all contradictions are removed, all mysteries revealed. The unknown

something that brings the objective and the conscious action into unexpected harmony, is nothing else than that absolute, that immutable identity which upholds existence. The veil, with which it obscures itself for others, it lays aside for the artist, and impels him involuntarily to the production of his works. Thus art is the one and eternal revelation; there is no other; it is the miracle that must convince us of the absolute reality of that supreme principle which never becomes objective itself, but is the cause nevertheless of all that is objective. And so it is that art stands higher than philosophy, for only in art does the intellectual perception attain objectivity. Art is what is highest for the philosopher, for it opens as it were the holy of holies to him, where in eternal and primeval union there burns as in a flame what in nature and history is separated, and what in life and action as well as in thought must be eternally divided. From this we are enabled to understand too, that philosophy, as philosophy, can never acquire a universal authority. The single recipient of absolute objectivity is art, and with art consciously productive nature perfects and completes itself.

The 'transcendental idealism' is Schelling's last work written in the method of Fichte. Its principle is a decided advance on the position of Fichte. What to Fichte was an inconceivable limit of the ego, becomes for Schelling a necessary duplicity dependent on the simple nature of the ego. If Fichte contemplated the union of subject and object as only infinite asymptotical progress, Schelling contemplates its actual present realization in the work of art. God, whom Fichte conceived only as object of a moral belief, has become for Schelling a direct object of æsthetic intuition. This his difference from Fichte could not long escape Schelling. It was impossible for him to remain unconscious of the fact that he stood no longer on the level of subjective, but had passed to that of objective idealism. Having then advanced beyond Fichte in his antithesis of transcendental philosophy and the philosophy of nature, it was only consequent that he should proceed a step further and place himself on the indifference-point of both, that he should, now adopt for principle the identity of ideality and reality, of thought and existence. This was the principle of Spinoza before him, and to this philosopher of identity, consequently, he felt himself powerfully attracted. Instead now of the method of Fichte, he adopted Spinoza's



mathematical one, to which he ascribed the greatest evidence of demonstration.

### 3.—Third Period:

*The Period of Spinozism or of the Indifference of the Ideal and Real.*

The principal writings of this period are: *An Exposition of my System of Philosophy* (Journal of Speculative Physics, II. 2); the second and enlarged edition of the *Ideas towards a Philosophy of Nature*, 1803; the dialogue *Bruno, or on the Divine and Natural Principle of Things*, 1802; *Lectures on the Method of Academical Study*, 1803; *New Journal of Speculative Physics*, 1802-3, three parts. Schelling's new position is perfectly characterized in the definition of reason, which he has placed at the beginning of the treatise first named: 'I call reason absolute reason, or reason so far as it is thought as total *indifference* of *subjective* and *objective*. The ability to think reason is to be presumed in every one; to think it as absolute, or to reach the position required, the thinking subject must be abstracted from. For him who accomplishes this abstraction reason immediately ceases to be something subjective as it is generally conceived to be. Nay, it cannot be any longer thought even as something objective, for something objective, or something thought is only possible in relation to a thinker. The abstraction, then, converts it into that true *in-itself* (virtuality, or absolute), which precisely coincides with the indifference-point of subjective and objective. The position of philosophy is the position of reason; the cognition of philosophy is a cognition of things as they are in themselves, that is to say, as they are in reason. It is the nature of philosophy wholly to eliminate all succession in time and separation in space, all difference generally, imported into thought by imagination, and to see in things only that by which they express absolute reason, not, however, so far as they are objects for such reflection as merely follows the laws of mechanism and in time. All is in reason, and besides reason there is nothing. Reason is the absolute. Any objections to this allegation can derive only from our being accustomed to see things not as they are in reason, but as they appear. Everything, that is, is essentially identical, and one with reason. It is not reason that makes an externality to itself, but

only the false use of reason, which is conjoined with the inability to forget the subjective element within ourselves. Reason is absolutely *one* and self-identical. The supreme law for the being of reason, and, as there is nothing but reason, for all being, is the law of identity. Between subject and object, then, one and the same absolute identity expressing itself in both, there is possible, not a qualitative, but only a quantitative difference (a distinction of more or less), so that nothing is either simply object or simply subject, but in all things subject and object are united, although in various proportions with preponderance now of the one and now of the other. But the absolute being pure identity of subject and object, quantitative difference must fall outside of this identity, that is, into the finite. As the fundamental form of the infinite is A = A, so that of the finite is A = B (combinations, that is, of subject and object in various proportions). But *in itself* nothing is finite, for identity is the single *in-itself*. So far as there is difference in individual things, identity exists in the form of indifference. Were we able to take in at a glance all that is, we should perceive in all a perfect quantitative equipoise of subjectivity and objectivity, or pure identity. In individual things, no doubt, there is a preponderance now on the one side and now on the other, but on the whole this is compensated. The absolute identity is absolute totality, the universe itself. *In itself* there is no individual existence or individual thing. Without totality there is nothing *in itself;* and if anything is perceived outside of totality, this is possible only as result of an arbitrary separation of the individual from the whole, the product of reflection and the source of all errors. Essentially, there is the same absolute identity in every part of the universe. The universe consequently is to be conceived as a line, the centre of which is $A = A$, the one end $A = B$ (that is a preponderance of subjectivity), and the other end $A = B$ (or a preponderance of objectivity), so, nevertheless, that even in the extremes there is still relative identity. The one side is reality or nature, the other ideality. The real side develops three potences (a potence is a definite quantitative difference of subjectivity and objectivity). (1.) The first potence is matter and gravity—the greatest overweight of the object. (2.) The second potence is light ($A^2$)—an inward (as gravity was an outward) perception of nature. Light is a higher movement of subjectivity. It is the absolute identity itself. (3.) The third potence is the common product of light and gravity, organization ($A^3$). Organization is as original as matter. Inorganic nature as such does not exist: it is actually organized, and for the organization which proceeds from it as from the original seed. Each body's organization is this body's interior become outward; earth itself becomes plant and animal. Organic does not form itself out of inorganic, but is from the first at least potential in it. What lies now before us apparently as inorganic matter is the residuum of the organic metamorphosis, what was unable to become organic. The brain of man is the highest result of the entire organic metamorphosis of the earth. From the preceding, Schelling continues, it will have been seen as well that we maintain the internal identity of all things, and the potential presence of all in all, as that we regard so-called dead matter as only a plant-world and an animal-world asleep—a world, however, that animated by the being of absolute identity may still possibly awake at some future time. Schelling breaks off here, leaving the correspondent potences of the ideal sphere undeveloped. Elsewhere, however, we have these latter stated thus: (1.) Knowledge, the potence of reflection; (2.) Action, the potence of subsumption; (3.) Reason, the unity of reflection and subsumption. These three potences represent: (1.) As the true, the assimilation of matter into form; (2.) As the good, the assimilation of form into matter; (3.) As the beautiful, or the work of art, the absolute assimilation and unification of form and matter.



In order to attain cognition of the absolute identity, Schelling even attempts to construct a new method. Neither the analytic nor the synthetic method appeared to him applicable for this purpose, both concerning finite cognition. Even the mathematical method he left off by degrees. The logical forms of common acceptation, nay, even the usual metaphysical categories, appeared to him now, too, as insufficient. As initial point of true cognition, Schelling indicated intellectual perception. Perception generally is an identifying of thought and being. When I perceive an object, the being of this object and my thought of it are for me absolutely the same thing. But in ordinary perception unity is assumed between

thought and some particular sensuous existence. In the preception of reason, intellectual perception, on the contrary, it is the absolute subject-object, that is perceived, or identity is assumed between thought and being in general, all being. Intellectual perception is absolute cognition, and absolute cognition must be thought as such that in it thinking and being are no longer opposed. Intellectually to perceive directly within yourself the same indifference of ideality and reality which you perceive, as it were, projected out of you in time and space, this is the beginning and the first step in philosophy This veritably absolute cognition is wholly and solely in the absolute itself. That it cannot be taught is evident. We do not see, either, why philosophy should be under any obligation to concern itself with this inability. It is advisable, rather, on all sides, to isolate from common consciousness the approach to philosophy, and to leave open neither footpath nor highroad from the one to the other. Absolute cognition, like the truth it contains, has no true contrariety without itself, and admits not of being demonstrated to any intelligence ; neither does it admit of being contradicted by any. It was the endeavour of Schelling, then, to reduce intellectual perception to a method, and this method he named construction. Of this method, the possibility and necessity depended on this, that the absolute is in all, and all is the absolute. The construction itself was nothing else than a demonstration of how, in every particular relation or object, the whole is absolutely expressed. Philosophically to construe an object, then, is to point out that in it the entire inner structure of the absolute repeats itself.

In accordance with the position of identity or indifference, Schelling attempted an encyclopædic construction of all the philosophical disciplines in his *Lectures on the Method of Academical Study* (delivered 1802, appeared 1803). Under the form of a critical review of the university curriculum, they afford a summary and connected but popular statement of his philosophy. The part most worthy of remark in them is the attempt at an historical construction of Christianity. The incarnation of God is an eternal incarnation. The eternal Son of God, born of the being of the father of all things, is the finite itself, as it is in the eternal perception of God. Christ is only the historical, sensuously-seen pinnacle of the incarnation ; as an individual he is quite intelligible from the circumstances of the period. God being eternally independent of all time, it is inconceivable that he should have assumed human nature in any specific moment of time. Christianity, as it is in time, exoteric Christianity, corresponds not to its idea, and has only to expect its completion. A main obstacle to this completion was and is the so-called Bible, which besides, as regards true religious substance, is inferior to some other religious writings. (!) A new birth of esoteric Christianity, or a new and higher religion, in which philosophy, religion, and poetry shall be fused into unity, this must be the product of the future. The last statement contains already a hint of the 'revelation-philosophy,' and of the Johannine era announced in it. Similar other allusions occur also in the same work. Thus Schelling places in the beginning of history a sort of golden age. It is inconceivable, he says, that man as he now appears, should have been of himself able to raise himself from instinct to consciousness, from animality to rationality. The present race of men must have been preceded, then, by another, immortalized in the ancient legend under the figure of gods and heroes. An origin for religion and civilisation is intelligible only in the lessons of superior natures. I hold civilisation to have been the primal condition of mankind, and the institution of states, of sciences, of religion, and of arts, to have been contemporaneous, or rather one and the same : these things, indeed, were not then veritably sundered, but in perfect interpenetration, as they will be again in the last days. Schelling is only consistent, then, when he regards the symbols of mythology, which we find to be historically first, as revelations of supreme cognition—and here, again, we have a step to the subsequent 'philosophy of mythology.'



The mystical element, which we find expressed in these historical views, asserts itself henceforward more and more in Schelling. This mystical tendency was partly the result of his unsuccessful attempt to find an appropriate form, an absolute method, for the expression of his philosophical ideas. All nobler mysticism depends on the impossibility of adequately expressing infinite matter in a logical form. And so it was that Schelling, after he had restlessly flung himself into every method, soon sickened of that of construction also, and henceforth completely abandoned himself to the boundless course of his own phantasy. Partly, again, his

philosophical views had gradually undergone a transformation. From the speculative science of nature he turned more and more to the philosophy of mind, and his definition of the absolute changed accordingly. If the absolute had hitherto been to him the indifference of ideality and reality, preference was now given to the former in reference to the latter, and ideality became the fundamental attribute of the absolute. Ideality is the *prius*, ideality, secondly, determines itself within itself to reality, which as such consequently is only third. The former harmony of spirit and nature is broken up, and matter appears as the negative of spirit. In thus distinguishing from the absolute the universe as its antitype, Schelling has decidedly abandoned the position of Spinozism and passed to another.

### 4.—Fourth Period:

### *The Mystic or Neo-Platonic Form of the Philosophy of Schelling.*

The writings of this period are:—*Philosophy and Religion*, 1804; *Exposition of the True Relation of Nature-Philosophy to the amended Fichtian Views*, 1806; *Annals of Medicine* (co-edited with *Marcus*), 1805–1808. From the position of indifference, as has been said, the absolute and the universe were identical, nature and history were immediate manifestations of the absolute. But now Schelling accentuates the difference between them, and in order most strikingly to express the separatedness of the world, he quite neo-Platonically represents it, in the first work named, as originating in a rupture, in a downfall from the absolute. From the absolute to the actual there is no continuous transition; the origin of the material world is only conceivable as a complete break-off from the absolute by direct separation. The absolute is the only reality; finite things are not real. The existence of the latter, then, cannot depend on a communication of reality made to them by the absolute, but on their very distance, on their very downfall from the absolute. The reconciliation of this downfall, God's completed realization, is the goal of history. To this idea, there are then added some other conceptions of a neo-Platonic complexion. Thus we have the myth of Psyche falling from intellectuality to sense, and this fall even Platonically described as the punishment of selfness. Then we have the kindred myth of a palingenesia and migration of souls, which souls, according as they have more or less laid aside self here below, and purified themselves into identity with the infinite, either begin a higher life on better stars, or, saturated with matter, are driven down into still lower regions. Particularly neo-Platonic are the high estimation and mystico-symbolical interpretation of the Greek mysteries (begun even in the *Bruno*), as well as the opinion that religion, if it would preserve uninjured its pure ideality, can never exist otherwise than esoterically or in the form of mysteries. The same thought of a loftier unification of religion and philosophy pervades the whole of the writings of this period. All true experience, says Schelling, is religious. The existence of God is an empirical truth, nay, the ground of all experience. Religion, indeed, is not philosophy; but a philosophy which should not unite in holy harmony religion with science, were certainly none. Something higher than science I certainly do know. And if to science there are only two ways open, that of analysis or abstraction and that of synthetic deduction, then all science of the absolute is denied. Speculation is the whole—vision, contemplation of everything, that is, in God. Science itself is valuable only so far as it is speculative, so far as it is contemplation of God as he is. A time will come, however, when the sciences will more and more disappear, and immediate cognition assert itself. Only in the highest science does the mortal eye close, and then it is no longer man that sees, but eternal sight itself that has come to see in him.



With such theosophical views, Schelling was naturally directed to the older mystics, whose writings he now began to study. In his polemic against Fichte, Schelling replies to the reproach of mysticism as follows:—Among the learned of one or two centuries past, there was a tacit understanding not to go beyond a certain point, where the genuine spirit of science was left to the unlearned. These, because they were unlearned, and had incurred the envy of the learned, were styled visionaries. But many a professed philosopher might be glad to exchange his entire rhetoric for the fulness of heart and soul that is present in the writings of these very visionaries. I, then, would not be ashamed of the name of such a visionary. Nay, I will endeavour to give a foun-

dation to the reproach: hitherto I have not properly studied the writings of these men, negligence has been the cause. Schelling failed not to make good these words. And it was especially to the kindred Jacob Böhm that he henceforward more and more directed himself. Study of Böhm, indeed, is already apparent in the writings before us. One of Schelling's most celebrated works (and which appeared soon afterwards), that on free-will (*Philosophical Inquiries into the Nature of Human Free-will*, 1809), is altogether built on Böhm. With it begins the last period of Schelling's philosophizing.

### 5.—Fifth Period:

*Attempt at a Theogony and Cosmogony in agreement with Jacob Böhm.*

With Böhm, Schelling had much in common. To both speculative cognition was a sort of immediate perception. Both employed a mixture of abstract and sensuous forms, a medley of logical precision and phantastic colouring. Both were alike, finally, in a speculative relation. A leading thought with Böhm was the self-diremption of the absolute. Taking the divine substance as at first the formless unqualified infinite and incomprehensible, that which was foundationless, Böhm conceived it further, in the feeling of its own abstract infinite being, to shrink into finitude, into the ground or centre of nature, where in their dark torture-chamber, the qualities separate from each other, where at last from the hard contrition of these qualities the lightening springs, which then, as spirit, or principle of light, dominates and illuminates the struggling powers of nature, until God, raised by the basis from his unbasedness, or by the ground from his ungroundedness, into the light of the spirit, lives and moves in an eternal realm of bliss. This theogony of Böhm's is strikingly in harmony with the present views of Schelling. As Böhm conceived the absolute to be the primal formless baselessness, or groundlessness, Schelling, as we have seen already, figured it as indifference. As Böhm too proceeded to distinguish this all-unbasedness from the basis or nature, and from God as the light of the spirit, so Schelling apprehends the absolute now as what, externalizing itself, returns from this self-externalization into a higher unity with its own self again. We have thus already indicated the three moments in the



history of God which constitutes the interest of the work on free-will already named:—(1.) God as indifference, or as primal baselessness, foundationlessness, groundlessness, the unfounded void; (2.) God as diremption into existence and ground (basis), ideal and real; (3.) Conciliation of this diremption and transformation of the original indifference into identity. The first moment in the divine life is that of pure indifference or distinctionlessness. This that precedes all existence may be named the primal ground or unground (groundlessness, foundationlessness). The unground is no product of the antitheses, nor are these implicit in it, but it is a special being devoid of all antithesis, and therefore such that it possesses no predicate but predicatelessness. Real and ideal, darkness and light, can never as antitheses be predicated of the unground: only as non-antitheses, in a neither the one nor the other, is it possible to enunciate them of it. From this indifference now duality breaks forth: the unground parts into two equally eternal beginnings, in order that ground and existence may become one in love, or in order that the lifeless and indefinite indifference may rise into the living and definite identity. As there is nothing before or besides God, God must have the ground of his existence within himself. But this ground is not merely logical as a notion, but real, as a something actual and to be distinguished from existence in God: this ground is nature in God, distinguishable from God, but inseparable from God. In it, then, is neither understanding nor will, but only the craving for them; it is the longing to give birth to itself. But the ground longingly moving thus, like a heaving sea, in obedience to some dark and indefinite law, there arises in God himself, correspondent to this first stirring of the divine existentiality in the ground, an inner reflexive perception in which—no object being possible for it but God himself—God beholds himself in his own image. This perception is God born in God himself, the eternal Word in God (Gospel of John, i.), which rises on the night of the ground like light, and bestows understanding on its dark longing. This understanding united with the ground becomes free creative will. Its work is the setting in order of nature, the previously lawless ground; and from this transformation of the real by the ideal there comes the creation of the world. In the evolution of the world there are two stadia:—(1.) The birth of light,

or the gradual development of nature up to man; (2.) The birth of spirit, or man's development in history. (1.) The development of nature in grades depends on a conflict of the ground with the understanding. Originally the ground endeavoured to shut itself in to its own self, and independently to produce all from its own self alone; but its products without understanding were without stability and fell again to the ground, a creation which we still behold in the extinct plants and animals of the prehistoric world. But even in the sequel the ground yields only gradually to the understanding, and every such step towards light is marked by a new class of beings. In every natural existence there are, therefore, two principles to be distinguished: first, the dark principle, through which natural existences are separated from God, and possess a particular will; secondly, the divine principle of understanding, or of the universal will. In irrational natural existences, these two principles, however, are not yet moulded together into unity, but the particular will is mere rage and greed in them, whilst the universal will, quite apart from the individual will, is operative as mere external natural power, as controlling instinct. Only (2.) in man are the two principles united as they are united in the absolute. But in God they are inseparable, while in man they are not only separable, but must separate, in order that there may be a difference of man from God, and that God, as opposed to man, may be revealed as that which he is, as unity of both principles, as spirit that subdues the difference, as love. Just this separableness of the universal and particular wills is the possibility of good and evil. The good is the subordination of the particular to the universal will, and the inversion of this the true relation is evil. In this possibility of good and evil, man's free will consists. Empirical man, however, is not free; his whole empirical condition is determined by an intelligible act antecedent to time. As man acts now, he must act; but nevertheless he is free in act, because from eternity he has freely made himself what he now necessarily is. From the very beginning of creation, the will of the self-substantiating ground has brought along with it the self-will of the creature for the production of the antithesis, in the subjugation of which God may realize himself as the reconciling unity. In this universal excitation of evil, man has involved himself in self-will and selfishness;



hence in all men evil as nature, and yet in each as his own free act. The history of man depends, on the great scale, on this conflict of self-will and universal will, as the history of nature on the conflict of the ground and the understanding. The various stages which evil as historical power describes in battle with love, constitute the periods of universal history. Christianity is the middle-point of history. In Christ the principle of love became personally opposed to evil in the person of man. Christ was the mediator in order to restore to its highest position the connexion of creation with God; for only the personal can be the saviour of the personal. The end of the world is the reconciliation of self-will and love, the dominion of universal will, so that God is all in all. The indifference of the beginning is then raised into the absolute identity.

In his reply to Jacobi (1812), Schelling gave a further justification of this his idea of God. He endeavours to repel Jacobi's accusation of naturalism, by demonstrating that the true idea of God is a union of naturalism and theism. Naturalism would think God as ground (immanent); theism as cause of the world (transcendent): the truth is the union of both characters. God is at once cause and ground. It nowise contradicts the notion of God that he should be conceived, so far as he reveals himself, to proceed out of himself from imperfection to perfection, to develop himself: imperfection is perfection itself, but as in process of becoming. The stages of the process are necessary, in order to exhibit on all sides the fulness of perfection. Unless there be a dark ground, a nature, a negative principle in God, there can be no talk of a consciousness of God. As long as the God of modern theism remains a simply single being, that is to be supposed purely essential, but is in fact only essenceless; as long as there is not recognised in God an actual duality, and a limitative and negative power that is opposed to the expansive and affirmative one, so long will the denial of a personal God be but scientific candour. It is universally and absolutely impossible to think a being possessed of consciousness who has not been brought into limitation by a negative power within himself—as universally and absolutely impossible as to think a circle without a centre.

Schelling's letter to Eschenmayer, in the *Universal Journal by Germans for Germans*, may be regarded as an elucidation of the views contained in the work on free

will, and in the reply to Jacobi. In this letter he expresses himself more plainly than he had previously done as to what is to be understood by *ground*, and as to his justification for speaking of a ground in God. After this communication, there occurred a pause in the literary activity of Schelling. It was publicly rumoured, indeed, that the printing of an unusually great work, entitled *The Ages of the World*, had begun; but also again that Schelling had recalled and destroyed the proofs. The title had seemed to give promise of a philosophy of history; and the description of the short essay *On the Gods of Samothrace* (1815), as supplementary to the work itself, made it seem likely, at the same time, that in it great stress would be laid on the development of the religious consciousness. Now, indeed, that in Schelling's collected works we have the printed treatise itself, we see that the Past, that is to say, what is to be thought as previous to nature, constitutes the theme of the first book (existent in the eighth volume of the collected works, in the form which Schelling may have given to it about the year 1815); that it is nature itself that, under the title of the 'Present,' is to be considered the subject of the second book; and that, lastly, surmises of the Future were the material of the third book. For the rest, it is evident that at least the main features of the later doctrine of potences had even then taken fixed shape in the mind of Schelling. A quite extraordinary sensation was produced — Stahl and Sengler having called public attention to the new turn in the views of Schelling—by the preface which he prefixed in the year 1834 to H. Becker's translation of a work of Cousin's. This not only because he spoke in it so bitterly of Hegel, who, he said, had quite misunderstood the sense of the *Identitätssystem*, but because he now openly declared that, while his entire earlier system formed but one half, and that the negative one, of philosophy, there required to be added, as complement to it, the second or positive half, in which the method should not be any longer one of pure *a priori* construction, but should adopt in part the process so exclusively applied by empiricism. In a similar manner, but with somewhat less bitterness to Hegel, he expressed himself in the address with which he opened his lectures at Berlin in 1841. And as a conviction soon obtained that Schelling would hardly bring himself to lay his Berlin discourses before a wider circle,



attempts were made—after publication of the extracts of Frauenstädt and others, but especially of the report of Dr. Paulus, which latter Schelling's own action for piracy seemed to authenticate—partly to expound and partly critically to judge the new doctrine. That these were only partially correct appeared, when, after Schelling's death, his sons made public, as well the introduction to the *Philosophy of Mythology* as the *Philosophy of Revelation*. These works enable us to form a pretty complete conception of the latest shape which philosophy assumed with Schelling. Quite, namely, as in the work on free-will, and the other works immediately subsequent, that, which in his third period had been named the absolute indifference, is designated as the *prius* of nature and mind, nay as the *prius* of God, so far as it is that in God which is not (yet) God. Then it is shown how from this pre-notion of God, substituted by pantheism for the usual notion, the true notion of God is reached, the notion, that is, of true monotheism, which supplants pantheism by rendering pantheism latent within it. In this progression of the notion of God, there are distinguished now three moments, or, as Schelling, in his earlier manner, prefers to name them, potences: first, the ability-to-be (*das Sein-können*), which, as it not yet *is*, is characterized by the sign *minus*, and usually named −A. It is ground or even nature in God, the dark that awaits illumination, what was called in the work on free-will the hunger for existence, nameable also the subject of being or potential being (*Ansichsein*). To this mere ability to be there stands opposed as its pure contrary (consequently, +A), pure being which is without all potentiality (*Können*); which, as the former was mere subject, is not even subject, but only predicate and object; which, too, as the former was a self and within itself, is rather what is without itself or external to itself, and not what denies (or withdraws) itself. Both constitute the presupposition to—what is excluded by them—the third, ± A, in which the in-itself and the without-itself (potentiality and actuality), or subjectivity and objectivity, unite, so that it may be named what is by itself (what is at home with itself), what is master of itself. This third now, which, as — A has the *first*, has itself the *highest* claim to the predicate of being, is most appropriately designated spirit.[1]

[1] That the non-being — A should now be alluded to as specially being is sufficiently perplexing; but, in addition, the sentence itself

God, as unity of these three, is still far from being triune, but is as yet only the all-one, in which notion there lies but the root of the Trinity. The progress to the Trinity, at the same time also to the universe that is distinguished from God, proceeds in this way that − A, which was non-being, is made explicit as such. To this, however,—because only what is as non-being is capable of being made explicit,—it is necessary to presuppose that − A was previously explicit as being, but was overmastered by the opposing + A. The appearance of this contradiction (*Spannung*), which follows not from the nature, but from the will of God, has—as in it properly the relation of the two potences has reversed itself (− A having become being, and + A potentiality, or ability to be, or power)—for its product the conversion of the original relation, and so of the *unum versum* (universe); but just so it serves also to this, that, above both as now transformed, ±A is God as self-possessing actual spirit: theogonic and cosmogonic processes here fall together. The latter manifests a series of stages in which the various relations of the two potences are demonstrated by the philosophy of nature. In the human consciousness, which is the last term of the series, the contention of the potences reaches its end. The powers from whose conflict the world arose, repose in the inner of the human spirit, which for this very reason is really the microcosm. Through the Promethean deed of the apprehension of self as ego, the hitherto only ideal world becomes, in externality to God, a real one, the vocation of which is to subordinate itself to what it left; whereby naturally this latter, previously transmundane, becomes now supramundane. The path to this consummation describes the various progressive relations of the ego, which, referring itself theoretically to the natural, and practically to the moral law, and, freed by the latter, elevates itself into an artistic and contemplative enjoyment, in which that becomes object for it that is characterized by Aristotle as the thinking of thinking, and by later philosophy as the subject-object, —the final cause of the world, or God as first principle of the world.

The course here is designated by Schelling as the

is, either in pointing or otherwise, ungrammatical. As the smallest emendation possible, a comma has been added.—The reader will observe that the text is now corrected from Schelling's work. See *Annotation.—T.*



progress towards God. Beginning with the first conditions of all-being, passing to the action of the potences in production of a divided and in itself graduated being, proceeding to the self-assertion of the ego. that thereby isolates itself from God, the result of the doctrine is that the ego declares itself as not the first principle, and subordinates itself to the isolated God, whom, in the end, it acknowledges as this principle. In the end: hitherto, then, we have philosophized towards God, and therefore without God; it has been shown that none of the stages hitherto considered, neither knowledge of nature, nor life in the state, nor contemplative absorption, yields an ultimate satisfaction; philosophy, therefore, can be named, because of this negative result, only negative philosophy. As hitherto wholly conditioned by thought too, it may be fitly named rational philosophy. But thought being without power to create reality, to bestow existence, the end of rational philosophy is only God as idea. But the power that fails thought is possessed by will. Will postulates an active God, lord of all being, who will practically resist the schism that has actually appeared. This longing for an actual God is religion, and philosophy, in receiving religion for its object, assumes quite a new character: it is become positive philosophy. It has no longer its previous rational character, when it considered only how the problem was possibly to be thought; but as religion roots in the action of free-will its aim now is to explain religion as it actually occurs, and to show how all relates itself when God, conceived as only found at the end of the negative philosophy, is made principle with derivation of all from him, whereas previously the course had been to him. The philosophy of religion, which is not to be confounded with a so-called religion of reason, has for object partly the incomplete, partly the completed religion. It is first, then, Philosophy of Mythology, and then Philosophy of Revelation. In the former Schelling attempts to show, how it is to be explained that men, not otherwise insane, should have submitted themselves to ideas which represented the sacrifice of a son, for example, as duty; and, again, how it is possible that such ideas should appear, even from a Christian point of view, preferable to complete irreligiousness. Schelling intimates that the forces dominating these men and people, and regarded by them as God, must, from the point of view of the highest religion, be re-

cognised as at least moments in God. The primitive form of religion, namely, which may, because no polytheism is yet present, and humanity is pervaded by God, be called Monotheism (but an abstract one) is followed by the crisis which is one with the progression of the nations, and in which there repeats itself in the consciousness of man, the same process of the potences which (in externality and priority to consciousness), gave rise to the natural stages. Hence the parallelism between these latter and the mythological stages, which has led many to see in mythology only a disguised physical philosophy. Philosophy shows now that the mythological process consists in the individual potences taking possession of consciousness, instead of the all-one as previously in primitive monotheism, and the *first step* is that where consciousness knows itself as under dominion of the revolutions of the heavens, a form which may be named astral religion or Sabeism. Mythology, reaching, as Greek, its flourishing point, we find there again all the notions of the earlier stages. Thus Uranus is the god of the consciousness, which appears first in the process. The second stage, on which the first potence (— A) is reduced to passivity by the second (+ A), is represented in Greek mythology by the emasculation of Uranus. In this reference it is characteristic that the Greek Herodotus, where he mentions this moment of the mythological process (a moment stereotyped among the Babylonians and Arabians) introduces Urania and her son Dionysus. On this second stage stand now very various religions, as well those which wholly merge themselves in the mythological process (Phœnician, Egyptian, Indian, etc.), as also those, like Budhism and the dualism of the Persians), which would fix the process on certain points. The Greek displays the *highest stage* of mythology : nay, in the mysteries, in which it begins to make its peculiar nature clear to itself, it properly transcends itself, and so it is that the consideration of the mysteries is the best introduction to the philosophy of revelation. The special problem of the latter is to explain from its premises the person of Christ which is the matter proper of all Christianity. The action of Christ before his becoming man, his incarnation, and, lastly, the mediation so accomplished, are considered, the point of view being always held fast, however, that the mythological process is the presupposition and in the end the presage of what



in Christ becomes actual. The completion of his work prepares the way for the third potence, spirit, through the action of which the Church, as explication of Christ, exists. The three periods of the Church are prefigured by the principal apostles, Peter, Paul, and John. The two first periods, Catholicism and Protestantism, have already elapsed : the third, the Christianity of John, is now approaching.

There is indisputably something grandiose in this attempt to comprehend the whole process of the world, and of its inner and outer history, as the self-mediation of God with himself, and to unite pantheism and theism in the higher notion of God as at once free and in subjection to development ('monotheism'). How closely this last phase of the philosophy of Schelling approaches the Hegelian which in its way also adopts for principle the notion of a process of the absolute through mediation of negation, will appear at once from the statement of Hegel, to which we proceed.

## XLIV.—*Transition to Hegel.*

THE radical defect of the philosophy of Schelling, as seen in its development with relation to Fichte, is the abstractly objective manner in which it conceived the absolute. This was pure indifference, identity; there was (1.) no possibility of transition from it to the definite, the real; and hence Schelling afterwards fell into a complete dualism between the absolute and the world of reality. In it (2.) mind had been obliged to yield its supremacy to nature; or the one was equated with the other, and the pure objective indifference of ideality and reality was placed above both, that is, then, above the former. From reflection on this one-sidedness, the Hegelian philosophy arose. Hegel, in opposition to Fichte and agreement with the position of Schelling, held that it is not anything individual, not the ego, that is the *prius* of all reality, but, on the contrary, something universal, a universal which comprehends within it every individual. But then he conceived this universal not as indifference, but rather as development, as a universal in which the principle of difference is immanent, and which uncloses itself into the entire wealth of the actuality exhibited by the worlds of mind and of matter. Nor is the

absolute to Hegel merely something objective, as it were the negative extinction of being and of thinking, of reality and ideality, in a neutral third: the universal, that underlies all, is rather only one of the terms of this disjunction, the ideal one. The idea is the absolute, and all actuality is only a realization of the idea. Above there is nothing higher than the idea, and without there is nothing further: it is the idea that actualizes itself in every individual of the total whole. The universe is no indifference of ideality and reality; rather it is that reality into the infinite forms of which the idea (in order not to be a mere unreal *abstraction*), unfolds itself, without, however, losing itself in them, but, on the contrary, with return from them back into its own self in the form of a rational soul, and so, as conscious, self-thinking idea, to exist in its true form, in a form adequate to its own inner and essential being. Thus Hegel restores to thought its own right. Thought is not one existential form of the absolute beside others; it is the absolute itself in its concrete unity of self; it is the idea come back to itself—the idea that knows itself to be the truth of nature and the power in it. The Hegelian philosophy constitutes thus, then, the diametrical opposite to the philosophy of Schelling that preceded it. If the latter became ever more and more realistic, more and more Spinozistic, more and more mystic, more and more dualistic, the former, on the contrary, was again idealistic, rationalistic, a pure monism of thought, a pure reconciliation of the actual and the intellectual. If Schelling substituted objective for subjective idealism, Hegel supersedes both by an absolute idealism, that is again to subordinate the natural to the intellectual element, but equally at the same time to embrace both as inwardly one and identical.

As regards form, the Hegelian philosophy is in its *method* equally essentially distinguished from its predecessor. The absolute is to Hegel not being (a definite, fixed something), but process, explicitation of differences and antitheses, which, however, are not independent, or self-subsistently opposed to the absolute, but constitute, individually and collectively, only moments within the self-evolution of the absolute. This necessitates a demonstration, then, that the absolute is possessed within itself of a principle of progress from difference to difference, which differences still form only moments within



it. It is not we who are to bring differences into the absolute, but it is the absolute itself which must produce them; whilst they, for their parts, must again resolve themselves into the whole, or demonstrate themselves as mere moments. This it is the object of the Hegelian method to make good. Its position is: every notion has in itself its own opposite, its own negation; is one-sided, and pushes on into a second, which second, the opposite of the first, is as *per se* equally one-sided with the first. In this way it is seen that both are only moments of a third notion, which, the higher unity of its two predecessors, contains in itself both, but in a higher form that combines them into unity. This new notion, again, once assumed as established, similarly demonstrates itself as but a one-sided moment, that also pushes forward to negation, and through negation to a higher unity, and so on. This self-negation of the notion is to Hegel the genesis of all differences and antitheses, which, for their parts, are never anything fixed or self-subsistent, as the reflecting understanding supposes, but only fluent moments of the immanent movement of the notion. And so it is also with the absolute itself. The universal, which is the ground of everything particular, is such only in this way, that it (the universal), as such, is only something one-sided, and is of itself impelled into negation of its abstract universality by means of concreter particularity (definiteness). The absolute is not a simple one something, but a system of notions which owe their origin just to this self-negation of the original universal. This system of notions is then collectively in itself again an *abstractum*, that is impelled forward into negation of its merely notional (ideal) being, into reality, into the real self-subsistence of the differences (nature). But here again, in nature, there is the same one-sidedness of being but moment and not itself the whole, and thus, therefore, the self subsistence of the real element also resolves itself, and this element is resumed into the universality of the notion in the form of self-consciousness, of thinking spirit, which comprehends and unites within itself both notional (logical) and real (natural) being, in a higher ideal unity of the universal and the particular. This immanent spontaneous evolution of the notion is the method of Hegel. It will not, like the method of Fichte, merely subjectively propose a thesis, antithesis, and synthesis, but it will follow and watch the course of the thing itself.

It will not produce being (existence), but what in itself already is, that it will reproduce for thought and consciousness. It will understand all in its own immanent connexion, which connexion is but a consequence of the inner necessity, by virtue of which there is manifested everywhere this production of difference from identity, and of identity from difference, this living pulse of the coming and the going of the antitheses.

The clearest expression of his difference from Schelling is given by Hegel in his Phenomenology of the Mind (spirit), the first work in which he appeared (1807) as philosophizing on his own account, his place previously having been that of an adherent of Schelling. In sum he brings it together into the following three *mots:* In Schelling's philosophy the absolute appears as if it had been shot out of a pistol; it is but the night in which all cows are black; its expansion into a system again is no more than the proceeding of a painter who has on his palette two colours only, red and green, the one to be used on demand of historical pieces, the other on that of landscapes. The first hit here refers to the manner in which the idea of the absolute is attained, instantaneously, that is, by means of intellectual perception,—a spring which in the phenomenology became under the hands of Hegel a graduated and methodic progress. The second hit concerns the mode of conceiving and expressing the absolute thus attained, wholly as absence of all finite differences, namely, but not at the same time as within itself the immanent production of a system of differences. Another expression of Hegel for this is, that all turns on thinking and enunciating the absolute (the true), not as substance (negation of all determinateness), but as subject (excitation and production of finite differences). The third hit is meant for the way in which Schelling carried out his principle in practical reference to the concrete matter of natural and spiritual fact, by applying to objects, namely, a ready-made schema (to wit, the antithesis real and ideal), instead of allowing the thing itself spontaneously to unfold and particularize itself. The school, particularly of Schelling, was conspicuous for its activity in this schematizing formalism, and to it specially applies what Hegel further remarks in the preface to the Phenomenology: 'When this formalism intimates, let us say, that mind is electricity, or an animal azote, it is natural that the uninitiated should gape with wonder, and admire in



the intimation the profundity of genius. But the trick of such sagacity is as soon learned, as it is easy to practise; and its repetition becomes as insupportable as the repetition of a detected juggling trick. This method of labelling everything in heaven and in earth, in nature and in man, with the couple of terms of the general schema, converts the universe into a huckster's shop, with its tiers and its rows of closed ticketed boxes.'

The special object of the phenomenology was, by a development of consciousness in its essential principle, to establish what was to Hegel the absolute cognition,—to demonstrate this cognition, indeed, to be but the highest step and stage of consciousness. Hegel gives in this work a history of consciousness as it appears in time (hence the title), an evolution of the epochs of the growth of consciousness on its way to philosophical knowledge. The inner development of consciousness is realized by the particular state, in which it may at any time exist, becoming always objective (known) to it, and by this knowledge of its own being raising it always into a higher and higher state. The phenomenology attempts to show how and by what necessity consciousness ascends from stage to stage, from in-itself to for-itself (from implicitness to explicitness), from being to knowing. The beginning is taken with the lowest stage, with immediate (intuitive, natural) consciousness. Hegel has entitled this chapter, 'Sensible certainty, or opinion and the *this*.' On this stage, to the questions of What is the *this* or the *here?* and, What is the *now?* the answer of the ego is—*Here* is a tree; *now*, it is night. Let us but turn round, however, and the *here* is not a tree, but a house, while if we lay aside the second answer, in order to look at it later, the *now* is found to be no longer night, but noon. The *this*, then, becomes a not-this, that is, a universal, a general notion. And necessarily so, for when I say 'this bit of paper,' I say something universal and not particular, as each and every bit of paper is a 'this bit of paper.' In this inner dialectic lies the transition of direct sensible certainty into perception. And so each stage in the consciousness of the philosophizing subject involving itself in contradictions, and through this immanent dialectic rising ever into a higher one, the evolution continues, till, with the complete elimination of contradiction, all strangeness between subject and object disappears, and the soul comes to perfect self-

cognition, and perfect self-certainty. Briefly to name the several stages, consciousness first appears as sensuous certainty; then as perception, the object of which is a thing with its qualities; further, again, as understanding, apprehension of objects as principles reflected into themselves, or as discrimination between force and manifestation of force, noumenon and phenomenon, outer and inner. Next, consciousness,—which in the object and its qualities has now recognised its own self, its own pure essential nature, for which consequently the other as other is eliminated—becomes the self-identical ego, the truth and certainty of itself, self-consciousness. Self-consciousness then, as universal self-consciousness or reason describes another series of successive stages, until it appears as spirit, reason that, filled and identified with the rationality of existence and the outer world, dominates the natural and spiritual universe as *its* kingdom, in which it knows itself at home. Spirit rises through the stadia of instinctive observance, information and enlightenment, morality and general moral views, to religion; and religion itself, lastly, terminates, in its consummation as revealed religion, in the absolute cognition. On this last stage being and thinking are no longer apart, being is no longer the object of thinking, but the object of thinking is now thinking itself. Science is nothing but intelligence truly cognising its own self. In the closing words of the Phenomenology, Hegel thus glances back on the road that has been travelled: 'The goal, absolute cognition, or spirit (intelligence) that knows itself as spirit, has for its path the inward assimilation and conservation of spirits (the subordinate stages), as they are in themselves, and achieve the organization of their empire. Their conservation, on the side of their free actual manifestation in the form of contingency, is history, while on the side of their logically understood organization, it is the science of cognition as it phenomenally presents itself in time. Both together, history logically understood, form the record and the Calvary of the absolute spirit, the reality, truth, and certainty of its throne, without which it were the sole and lifeless eremite; only—

> "From the goblet of this spirit-empire,
> Foams for it its infinitude."'

For the rest, the march of the Phenomenology is not



yet a strictly scientific one; it is the first genial application of the 'absolute method,' interesting and suggestive in its critique of the forms of 'phenomenal cognition,' but, in the disposal and arrangement of the opulent dialectical and historical material on which it operates, it is arbitrary.

## XLV.—*Hegel.*

GEORG WILHELM FRIEDRICH HEGEL was born at Stuttgart on the 27th of August 1770. In his eighteenth year he entered the university of Tübingen, with a view ultimately to the study of theology. As student he attracted no particular attention: it was the youthful Schelling who here at that time outshone all his contemporaries. After having been a domestic tutor successively in Switzerland and at Frankfort-on-the-Maine, he qualified himself for the academical career at Jena in 1801. He ranked at first as an adherent and supporter of the philosophy of Schelling. And in this sense we find written his tractate of the same year, on the 'Difference between the Philosophical Systems of Fichte and Schelling.' Soon afterwards, indeed, he openly joined Schelling in the editing of the *Critical Journal of Philosophy* (1802-3) to which he contributed a variety of important articles. He had but small success at first as an academic teacher, and though appointed to a professorship in 1805, the political catastrophe that presently burst over Germany soon deprived him of it again. On the day of the battle of Jena, amid the thunder of the artillery, he wrote the last words of the *Phenomenology of the Spirit*, his first great, original book, the crown of his Jena career. Some time afterwards he was wont to speak of this work (which appeared in 1807) as his voyage of discovery. From Jena, Hegel went to Bamberg; and there—being in want of all other means of subsistence—he edited for two years the local political journal. In the autumn of 1808 he became rector of the academy at Nürnberg. It was in this capacity that—slowly maturing all his works, and only properly beginning his literary career when Schelling had already ended his—he composed (1812–16) his *Logic*. In the year last named, he received a call to a chair of philosophy at Heidelberg, where, in 1817, he published his *Encyclopædia of the Philosophical Sciences*, in which he expounded

for the first time the whole of his system. The fulness of his fame and activity, however, properly dates only from his call to Berlin in 1818. Here there rose up around him a numerous, widely-extended, and, in a scientific point of view, exceedingly active school; here, too, he acquired, from his connexion with the Prussian bureaucracy, as well political influence for himself as the credit for his system of a state-philosophy: not always to the advantage of the inner freedom of his philosophy, or of its moral worth. Still, in his *Moral and Political Philosophy*, published in 1821, Hegel rejects not the fundamental principles of the modern political system; he demands popular representation, liberty of the press, open law-courts, trial by jury, and administrative independency of corporations. In Berlin, Hegel prelected on almost all the branches of philosophy. His various courses of lectures were published after his death, by his friends and disciples. His delivery as a lecturer was hesitating, embarrassed, and without ornament, but not without a peculiar charm as the immediate expression of deep and labouring thought. The relaxation of social intercourse he sought rather among plain and unofficial people than in the company of the great; he had no liking to shine in *salons*. In the year 1830, he was made rector of the university, and fulfilled the duties of the office in a more practical manner than previously Fichte. Hegel died of cholera on the 14th November 1831, the anniversary of the death of Leibnitz. He lies in the same graveyard as Solger and Fichte, close beside the latter, and not far from the former. The publication of his collected writings and lectures was commenced in 1832:—Vol. 1. The Smaller Treatises; 2. The Phenomenology; 3-5. Logic; 6-7. The Encyclopædia; 8. The Moral and Political Philosophy; 9. The Philosophy of History; 10. The Lectures on Æsthetics; 11-12. The Philosophy of Religion; 13-15. The History of Philosophy; 16-18. The Miscellaneous Works. Rosenkranz has written his Life.

The internal classification of the Hegelian system is, in consequence of the course taken by thought in it, a tripartite one:—(1.) The development of those pure universal notions, or thought-determinations which, as it were a timeless *prius*, underlie and form the foundation of all natural and spiritual life, the logical evolution of the absolute—*the Science of Logic;* (2.) The development of the real world, nature, in its particularizedness and externalizedness—*the Philosophy of Nature;* (3.) The development of the ideal world, or of the concrete spirit that is actualized in Rights, Morals, Politics, Art, Religion, Science—*the Philosophy of the Spirit.* These three parts of the system represent at the same time the three moments of the absolute method, Position, Negation, and Unity of both. The Absolute is, firstly, pure immaterial thought; secondly, it is heterization of pure thought, disruption of thought into the infinite atomism of time and space—nature; thirdly, it returns out of this its self-externalization and self-alienation back into its own self, it resolves the heterization of nature, and only in this way becomes at last actual, self-cognisant thought, Spirit.



### I. *The Science of Logic.*

The logic of Hegel is the scientific exposition and development of the pure notions of reason,—of those notions or categories which underlie all thought and all being, and which are as well the fundamental factors of subjective cognition, as the indwelling soul of objective reality,—of those ideas in which the spiritual and the natural have their point of coincidence. The realm of logic, says Hegel, is truth as it is in its own self, and without veil. It is, as he also figuratively says, the exposition of God as he is in his eternal essence before the creation of the world or of a single finite being. It is thus, no doubt, a realm of shadows; but these shadows are—in freedom from all material crassitude—the simple ultimate principles, into the diamond net of which the entire universe is built.

For a beginning of the collection and discussion of these pure notions, we have to thank several philosophers, as Aristotle in his Categories, Wolff in his Ontology, Kant in his Transcendental Analytic. But by these they were neither completely enumerated, nor critically tested, nor yet derived from a principle, but only empirically taken up and lexicologically treated. In contrast to this procedure, Hegel sought (1.) completely to collect these notions; (2.) critically to test them (that is, to exclude all but pure, unsensuous thought); and (3.)—what is the most characteristic peculiarity of the Hegelian logic—dialectically to deduce them the one from the other, and develop them into an internally articulated system of pure reason. Fichte, before Hegel,

had accentuated the necessity of a deduction on the part of reason,—purely out of its own self, and perfectly free from any pre-supposition,—of the entire system of knowledge. This thought Hegel seizes, but in an objective fashion. His beginning is not with certain highest axioms in which all further development is already implicitly contained, and serves consequently simply for their more particular characterization; but, taking stand on what requires no further support of proof, on the simplest notion of reason, that of pure being, he deduces thence, in a progress from abstracter to concreter notions, the complete system of pure, rational knowledge. The spring of this evolution is the dialectical method that advances from notion to notion through negation.

All position, says Hegel, is negation; every notion has *in it* the opposite of itself, in which it passes forward to its own negation. But, again, all negation is position, affirmation. When a notion is negated, the result is not forthwith a mere nothing, a pure negative, but on the contrary a concrete positive; there results, in fact, a new notion, and one, too, that is enriched by the negation of the preceding one. The negation of the unit, for example, is the notion of plurality. In this manner, negation is made by Hegel the vehicle of the dialectic progress. Each notion is no sooner affirmed than it is again negated, and of this negation the product is a higher and a richer notion. This method, at once analytic and synthetic, Hegel uses throughout the entire system of knowledge.

We proceed to a brief summary of the Hegelian logic. It separates into three parts,—the *doctrine of Being*, the *doctrine of Essence* (essential nature), and the *doctrine of the Notion*.

### 1. *The Doctrine of Being.*

(*a.*) *Quality.*—The beginning of scientific cognition is the direct, immediate, indeterminate notion of *Being*. In its entire want of *logical comprehension*, complete vacancy, it stands before thought with precisely the same meaning as simple negation, *Nothing*. These two notions, consequently, are not more absolutely opposed than absolutely identical; each of them disappears immediately into the other. This oscillation, or disappearance of the one into the other, is pure *Becoming*, which more



specially is *Origination*, as transition from Nothing to Being, while, as transition from Being to Nothing, it is *Decease*. The precipitation of this process of coming to be and ceasing to be into a simple unity at rest, is recognisable *State* (*Daseyn*, Thereness, So-ness). State is Being, with an element of definiteness, or it is *Quality*, and more specially still *Reality*, Limited State. Limited State excludes other (or others) from itself. This reference to self which is conditioned by negative relation to other (or others), is named *Being-for-self* (independent, self-contained individuality). This Being-for-self, that refers itself only to its own self, and is repellent to aught else, is *One* (the unit). But through this repulsion, the One directly affirms (implies) *Many* ones. But the many ones are not different the one from the other. The one is what the other is. The Many are, therefore, One. But the One is equally the Many. For its exclusion is affirmation of its opposite, or it thereby virtually affirms itself as plurality. Quality, through this dialectic of *Attraction* and *Repulsion*, passes into Quantity; for indifference to the qualitative speciality, indifference to difference, is *Quantity*.

(*b.*) *Quantity.*—Quantity concerns magnitude, and as such is indifferent to Quality. So far as the *Magnitude* contains many distinguishable units in it, it is *Discrete*, or exhibits the moment of *Discretion*; so far, again, as the many units are homogeneous, the Magnitude, as without distinction, is *Continuous*, or it exhibits the moment of *Continuity*. Each of these two characters is at the same time identical with the other; discretion cannot be thought without continuity, continuity not without discretion. Actuality of quantity, or limited quantity, is the *Quantum*. In the quantum the moments of unity and plurality are also contained; it is an amount of units,—that is, *Number*. Opposed to quantum or extensive magnitude stands intensive magnitude or *Degree*. In the notion of degree, which implies always a certain singleness of power, virtue, or determinateness, Quantity returns to Quality. The union of Quantity and Quality is *Measure*.

(*c.*) *Measure* (proportion) is a qualitative quantum, a quantum on which the quality depends. An example of this quantitative force, on which the actual so-ness of the particular object wholly rests, is temperature, which, in relation to water, decides whether this latter shall

remain water or become either ice or steam. Here the *quantum* of the heat actually constitutes the *quality* of the water. Quality and quantity, consequently, are perpetually interchanging characters, and *in* a being, a *third* something, which is itself different from its own directly-apparent *what* and *how much*. This negation of the directness and immediacy, this quality (or something) which is independent of the directly-present existential form, is *Essence*. Essence is Being-within-self, a being in internality to self, and so self-diremption of being, being that is reflected into itself. Hence the duplicity of all the distinctive characters of essence.

### 2. *The Doctrine of Essence.*

(*a.*) *Essence as such.*—Essence, as reflected being, is reference to self only in that it is reference to other. This being is called reflected in analogy with the reflexion of light, which impinging in its rectilinear course on the surface of a mirror, is thrown back from it. In the same way, then, as reflected light is something mediated or affirmed (posited) by its reference to other (that is, to something else), reflected being is such an entity as is shown to be mediated by, or founded on, another. When philosophy proposes for its problem, consequently, cognition of the essence of things, the immediate (directly presentant) being of these things is thereby assumed to be mere rind or veil behind which the essence is concealed. In the very speaking of the essence of an object, therefore, we necessarily reduce its immediate being (that is in contrast to the essence, but without which it were impossible to think the essence), to something merely negative, to *appearance* (*Schein*). Being shines, shows, or appears by (*an*) essence. Essence, consequently, is being (the outward being) shining, showing, or appearing away into its own self. Essence, as against the Appearance, yields the notion of the *Essential;* what only shines or appears by (*an*) essence is the *Inessential.* But inasmuch as the Essential only *is* as in relation to the Inessential, the Inessential is itself Essential; the Essential is quite as much in want of the Inessential, as the Inessential of the Essential. The consequence is, then, that each appears by (*an*) the other; or there takes place between them that mutual relation which we name *reflexion.* In this whole sphere, then, we have to



do with determinations of reflexion, with characters such that either indicates the other, and is incogitable without the other (for example, positive and negative, antecedent and consequent, thing and quality, matter and form, force and operation of force). We have thus again in the evolution of Essence the same characters as in the evolution of Being, but now they are in a reflected form, and no longer direct or immediate. For Being and Nothing, we have now Positive and Negative, for State (*Dasein*) Existence (*Existenz*), etc.

Essence is reflected Being, reference to self, which is through a medium of reference to other, another which *appears* by (*an*) it. This reflected reference to self we term *Identity* (which, in the so-called first law of thought, the axiom of identity A = A, is only incompetently and abstractly expressed). As reference to self, which is equally distinction of it from itself, Identity essentially contains and implies the character of *Difference.* Direct, external difference is *Diversity.* Difference as such, the essential difference, is *Contrariety* (*Positive* and *Negative*). The self-contrariety of essence is *Contradiction.* The contrariety of identity and difference is reconciled in the notion of *Ground.* In distinguishing itself from itself, namely, essence is firstly the essence that is identical with itself, Ground, and, secondly, the essence that is distinguished or ejected from itself, the *Consequent.* In the category of ground and consequent, then, the same thing, the essence, is twice put: the ground and what it grounds are the same matter, and so it is a hard problem to define the ground otherwise than by the consequent, and conversely. Their separation, then, is merely an arbitrary abstraction, but just for this reason also (the identity of both), any application of this category is properly a formalism. A reflection that demands grounds, would simply see the same thing twice, now in its immediate, direct appearance, and again in its positiitiousness, affirmedness, through the ground.

(*b.*) *Essence and Manifestation.*—The Manifestation is no longer essence-less appearance, but appearance that is filled-up, full-filled, implemented by essence. There is no appearance without an essence, and no essence that passes not into manifestation. It is one and the same matter that is taken now as essence and now as manifestation. In reference to essence in manifestation, the positive moment that was previously termed ground is

now called *Matter*, the negative one *Form*. Every essence is unity of matter and form, that is, it *exists*. *Existence*, namely, in contradistinction to immediate (unreflected) Being, is the term which we give to that being which is produced by the ground,—that is, to grounded, or founded, being (being that is reflected to an antecedent source). Essence as *existent* is called *Thing*. In the relation of the Thing to its *Properties*, the relation of form and matter is repeated. The Properties exhibit the thing on its formal side: in matter it is Thing. The relation between the Thing and its Properties is usually designated by the verb *Have* (the thing *has* properties), in contradistinction to immediate oneness of being. Essence as negative reference to itself and repelling itself from itself into Reflexion-into-other is *Force* and *Exertion* (its operation). This category has it in common with the other categories of essence, that in it one and the same matter is twice put. The Force can be explained only by the Exertion, the exertion only by the force, and hence any explanation that resorts to this category is but a movement in tautologies. To consider force as incognisable is but a self-deception of the understanding in regard to its own act. The category of force and exertion finds higher expression in the category of *Inner* and *Outer*. The latter stands higher, for Force to exert itself requires a *solicitation*, whereas the Inner is Essence of itself (spontaneously) manifesting itself. These two co-efficients, Inner and Outer, are also identical; neither is without the other. What a man, for example, is inwardly in his character, that is he also outwardly in his action. The truth of this relation, consequently, is rather the identity of Inner and Outer, of Essence and Manifestation, that is:

(c.) *Actuality*.—Besides (unreflected) Being and Existence we have Actuality, then, as a third stage of being. In Actuality, the Manifestation of Essence is adequate and complete. Veritable Actuality, therefore (as distinguished from *Possibility* and *Contingency*), is necessary being, rational *Necessity*. The notorious *propos* of Hegel, —All that is actual is rational, and all that is rational is actual,—is seen, with such a meaning as is given here to 'Actuality,' to be simple tautology. What is necessary, regarded as its own ground (a ground or origin, then, that is identical with itself), is *Substance*. The side of manifestation, what is inessential in the case of Substance,



contingent in the case of the Necessary, is constituted by the *Accidents*. The Accidents are no longer to Substance, as Manifestation to Essence or Outer to Inner, an adequate representation; they are only transitory affections of Substance, contingent and mutable phenomenal forms, like waves of the sea in relation to the water of the sea. They are not produced by substance, but rather disappear in it as their ground. The relation of Substantiality passes into the relation of *Causality*. In this relation one and the same matter is twice put, once as *Cause* and again as *Effect*. The cause of heat is heat, and its effect is again heat. Effect is a higher notion than the accident of substantiality, for it is actually contraposed to the cause, and the cause itself, passes over into the effect. So far, however, as in the relation of causality, either side presupposes the other, the truth is rather a relation such that in it either side is cause and effect at once—*Reciprocity*. Reciprocity is a higher relation than causality, inasmuch as there is no such thing as a true causality: there is no effect without counter-effect, no action without counter-action (reaction).

With the category of Reciprocity we quit the sphere of Essence. All the categories of essence have displayed a duplicity; but in reciprocity the duplicity of cause and effect has collapsed to unity. Now, then, instead of duplicity we have again unity, identity with self. Or we have again a Being (or a sort of being) that exhibits diremption into several self-subsistent factors, which factors, however, are immediately identical with the being itself. This Unity of the Immediacy (the self-subsistency) of Being with the self-diremption of Essence is the *Notion*.

### 3. *The Doctrine of the Notion.*

*Notion* is that in the other that is identical with itself; it is substantial totality, the moments of which (*Singular*, *Particular*), are themselves the whole (the *Universal*),—a totality which no less gives free scope to the difference than it resumes it again into unity within itself. The Notion is (*a.*) Subjective notion, the unity of the many in its own self, expressed as in the moment of Form, and in abstraction from the Matter. It is (*b.*) Objectivity, notion in the shape of Immediacy, as external unity of self-dependent existences. It is (*c.*) Idea, the notion that is no

less objective itself than it reduces the objectivity of sense into unity with itself,—that is no less immanent in the object, than independently existent as punctual unity of all reality.

(*a.*) *The subjective notion* contains the moments of *Universality* (identity with itself in the difference), *Particularity* (the differencedness that remains in identity with the universal) and *Singularity* (the independent individuality that unites within itself the universal and the particular, the genus and the species). The universal independently expressed is the notion as such. This one-sidedness is remedied by statement of the universal as inherent in a singular, or as predicate of a subject; that is, by the *Judgment*. The judgment enunciates the identity of the singular with the universal, and by consequence, the sundering of the universal into independent individuals that are identical with it,—the self-diremption of the notion. In the judgment the notion expresses itself in that aspect of itself, by virtue of which it is not something abstract (like substance, cause, force), but concrete and definite, immanent in individual existences, and continuing itself far and wide into a world of such. The one-sidedness of the judgment—the expression of the singular as immediately identical with the universal, and the consequent veritable sundering of both (the universal has more extension than the singular, the singular is concreter than the universal)—is relieved in the *Syllogism* (the close, or taking-together). In it universal and singular become commediated (united) by the particular, which steps between both as mediate notion. The syllogism, consequently, exhibits the universal as, through its particularization, it realizes itself in the singular; or otherwise expressed, it exhibits the singular as, through mediation of the particular, it is in the universal. In short, the syllogism first perfectly demonstrates the nature of the notion to be distinction of itself in itself into a maniness of being, within which the singular is through virtue of its particularity, as well self-substantially opposed to the universal, as closed together into identity with it. From what precedes, then, the notion is not something merely subjective, but something that, in the totality of being comprehended under it, is possessed of reality: so considered the notion is the objective notion.

(*b.*) *Objectivity* is not outward being as such, but an outward being complete within itself, and intelligibly conditioned. Its first form is *Mechanism*, the co-existence of independent individuals which, mutually indifferent, are kept together in the unity of a whole (aggregate) only by a common bond. This indifference eliminates itself in *Chemism*, the mutual attraction, interpenetration, and neutralization of independent individuals which unite to a whole. But the unity here is only the negative one of the resolution of units into a whole; the third form of objectivity is, therefore, *Teleology*, the End (correspondent to the syllogism viewed as close), the notion that realizes itself, that subordinates being into means for itself, and that preserves and fulfils itself in this process of the sublation of the independency of things. The defect in the notion of End is, that it has objectivity still opposed to it as something alien; but this defect corrected, we have the notion of End as immanent in objectivity,—the notion that pervades objectivity, that fulfils and realizes itself in it,—in a word, the *Idea*.



(*c.*) *The Idea* is the highest logical definition of the absolute. It is neither the merely subjective, nor the merely objective notion, but the notion that, immanent in the object, releases it into its complete independency, but equally retains it in unity with itself. Its immediate form is *Life*, organism, the immediate unity of the object with the notion, which latter pervades the former as its soul, as principle of vitality. But the notion is at the same time not expressed in its own form here. The idea as such, then, opposing itself to the object, is *Cognition*, the finding of itself again on the part of the notion in objectivity (Idea of the True), the realizing of itself into objectivity, in order to resolve the independency of the object, and raise reality into intelligibility (Idea of the Good). This *over-against* each other of the Idea and the Object is, however, one-sided; cognition and action necessarily presuppose the identity of subjective and objective being. The highest notion, consequently, is the *Absolute Idea*, the unity of Life and Cognition, the universal that thinks itself, and thinkingly realizes itself in an infinite actuality, from which, as its immediacy, it no less distinguishes itself again.

The Idea, releasing itself accordingly into this immediate actuality, is *Nature*, from which returning into itself, and consciously closing itself together with itself, it is *Spirit*.

## II.—The Philosophy of Nature.

Nature is the idea in the form of hetereity (otherwiseness)—the notion that has issued from its logical abstraction into real particularization, and that so, consequently, has become external to its own self. The unity of the notion, then, has become concealed in nature; and, in assuming for problem the following up of intelligence as concealed in nature, or the self-development of nature into spirit, philosophy must not forget that self-externalization, sunderedness, out-of-itself-ness, constitutes the character of nature as such; that the products of nature possess not yet any reference to themselves, or are not yet correspondent to the notion, but riot in unrestricted and unbridled contingency. Nature is a Bacchantic God, uncontrolled by, and unconscious of, himself. It offers, then, no example of an intelligibly articulated, continuously ascendant gradation. On the contrary, it everywhere mingles and confounds the essential limits by intermediate and spurious products which perpetually furnish instances in contradiction of every fixed classification. In consequence of this impotence on the part of nature to hold fast the moments of the notion, the philosophy of nature is constantly compelled, as it were, to capitulate between the world of the concrete individual products and the regulative of the speculative idea.

Its beginning, middle, and end are prescribed for the philosophy of nature. Its beginning is the first or immediate characteristic of nature, the abstract universality of its self-externality,—Space and Matter. Its end is the disimprisonment of spirit from nature, in the form of rational, conscious individuality,—Man. To demonstrate the connecting middle-terms between the two, to follow up step by step the ever more and more successful attempts of nature to rise in humanity to self-consciousness—this is the problem which the philosophy of nature has to resolve. In this process nature describes three stadia. It (nature) is:—

(1.) Matter and the ideal system of matter: *Mechanics.* Matter is nature's self-externality in its most universal form. In it, nevertheless, we have already manifested that tendency to individuality which constitutes the red strand in the philosophy of nature,—the *nisus* of gravitation. Gravity is the self-internality (the being within self) of matter, its longing to come to itself, the first trace of subjectivity. The centre of gravity of a body is the oneness which it seeks. The same tendency towards reduction of multiplicity into individuality is the fundamental principle of universal gravitation, of the whole solar system. Centrality, the constituent notion of gravity, is here a system, and that, too,—so far as the form of the orbits, the velocity of the movements, or the revolutionary periods are reducible to mathematical laws,—a system of real rationality.



(2.) Matter, however, is not yet possessed of individuality. Even in astronomy, it is not the bodies as such that interest us, but their geometrical relations. Everywhere here it is quantitative, not qualitative conditions that are considered. Matter, nevertheless, has in the solar system, found its centre, its self. Its abstract, dead, dull self-includedness has resolved itself to form. Matter, as qualified matter, then, is the object of *Physics.* In physics we have to do with matter which has particularized itself into a body, into individuality. Under this head we consider inorganic nature, its forms and their reciprocal relations.

(3.) *Organics.*—Inorganic nature, the subject of physics, destroys itself in the chemical process. In this process, namely, losing all its properties (cohesion, colour, lustre, resonance, transparency, etc.), the inorganic body demonstrates the fleetingness of its existence and this relativity constitutes its being. The sublation of the chemical process is organism and life. The animate body is always in act, indeed, to relapse into the chemical process. Oxygen, hydrogen, salts, tend ever to appear, but are always again eliminated. The animate body resists the chemical process till it dies: life is self-preservation, self-end (its own object). Nature, then, attaining to individuality in physics, advances to subjectivity in organics. As life the idea describes three stages:—

(*a.*) The first, as *geological* organism, or as *mineral* kingdom, is the universal *effigies* of life. Still the mineral kingdom is rather the result and residuum of a past life and process of formation. The primitive mountain is the arrested crystal of life; the earth of geology is a gigantic corpse. The life of the present, the life that recreates itself eternally afresh, the first stir of subjectivity breaks forth only.

(*b.*) in the *vegetable* organism, the world of *plants*. The plant has attained to the processes of growth, assimilation, and generation. But it is not yet a totality co-articulated into its own self. Every part of the plant is the entire individual, every branch the whole tree. The parts are indifferent in regard to each other: the corolla may be the radix, the radix corolla. In the case of the plant, then, the true self-involution of individuality is not yet attained to: to that there is necessary the absolute unity of an individuum. This unity,—singular, or individual, concrete subjectivity,—we have first of all only

(*c.*) in the *animal* organism, the animal kingdom. The animal organism alone possesses uninterrupted intussusception, spontaneous movement, sensation, and, in its higher types, voice and internal warmth. In its highest type, lastly, in man, nature, or rather the spirit that works in nature, has taken itself together into conscious unity in an ego. And so spirit now, become a free rational self, completes its deliverance from Nature.

### III.—The Philosophy of Spirit (Mind).

#### 1. *The Subjective Spirit.*

Spirit is the truth of nature, the resolution of its alienated outwardness, the attainment to identity with self. Its nature, then, is: formally, freedom, or the capability of abstracting from everything; materially, the power to reveal itself *as* spirit, as conscious reason, to erect a structure of objective rationality, to assume for its domain the universe of mind. But, in order to know itself as reason and all reason, in order to render nature more and more negative, spirit has at the same time, in a similar way to nature, a series of grades to describe, a series of liberating acts to perform. Proceeding from nature, from the externality of which it wrests itself into independency, it is in the first instance *Soul*, or natural spirit, and, as such, the object of *Anthropology* in the narrower sense. As this natural spirit it lives the universal planetary life that is the common condition; and is in subjection, consequently, to the difference of climates, to the vicissitudes of the seasons, and the changes of the day. It is submitted also to the influence of geographical position, and must accept the peculiarities of race. Again, it undergoes the modification of national type, and is affected by



the way of living and the bodily form. These natural conditions, moreover, exercise a control also over the intellectual and moral character. Lastly, there must be considered here the natural peculiarity of the individual subject, in disposition, temperament, character, family idiosyncrasy, etc. To these we must add, too, the natural variations of age, sex, sleep, etc. Spirit everywhere here is still absorbed in nature, and this intermediate condition between sleep in nature and individuality is Sensation, the blind groping of the spirit in its unconscious and unintelligent individuality. A higher stage of sensation is Feeling, sensibility, as it were sensation into self, in which the individuality of self appears. Feeling, in its perfected form, is the feeling of self (self-possession). The feeling of self, inasmuch as the subject of it is at once absorbed into the speciality of his own sensations, and collected within himself as subjective unit, constitutes the first step to Consciousness. The ego appears now as the pit in which the various sensations, perceptions, conceptions, ideas, are put away—the ego that is present with them all, that is the centre in which they all concur. Spirit, as conscious, as conscious individuality, as ego, is the object of the *Phenomenology* of consciousness (which, in smaller compass, reappears here as intermediate between anthropology and psychology).

Spirit was an individuum so long as it was interwoven with nature; when it has stripped off nature it is consciousness, or an ego. Distinguishing itself from nature, it has retired consequently into its own self; and that with which it was previously identified, what was its own (telluric, national, etc.) speciality, confronts it now as its external world (earth, nation, etc.) The awakening of the ego, therefore, is the creative act of objectivity as such; and, conversely, only by reference to objectivity, and as opposed to objectivity, is it that the ego, in conscious subjectivity, does awake. The ego, thus in front of objectivity, is consciousness in the narrower sense of the word. Consciousness becomes Self-consciousness by rising through the successive steps of immediate sensuous Opinion, Perception (*Wahrnehmung*), and Understanding, to the pure thought of personality, to knowledge of itself as the free ego. Self-consciousness, again, becomes the Universal or Rational Self-consciousness in this way, that in consequence of its

endeavours to appropriate objectivity and obtain recognition as a free subject, it falls into conflict with other self-consciousnesses, enters thus into a war of extermination with them, but, out of this *bellum omnium contra omnes* (the violent beginning of the State), emerges in the end as a common consciousness that has found the due mean between despotism and servitude, that is to say, as the veritably universal, rational self-consciousness. Rational self-consciousness, no longer negatively selfish towards its neighbour, but acknowledging the identity of this neighbour with itself, is actually free; it has itself in its neighbour present to itself, and has burst asunder the limitation to its own natural egoism. Now that it has subdued the nature and subjectivity in its ownself, we have spirit as spirit; and as such it is the object of *Psychology*.

Spirit here is first of all Theoretical spirit or Intelligence, and then Practical spirit or Will. It is theoretical, as relating itself to the rational object as something given, and as exhibiting it as *its*; practical, as freeing from the one-sided form of subjectivity, and converting into objectivity, the subjectivized theoretical matter (truth) which it now holds and directly wills as its own. The practical, so far, is the truth of the theoretical spirit. The theoretical on its way to the practical spirit describes the stages of Perception (*Anschauung*), Conception, and Thought. Will, for its part, again, through Appetite, Desire, and Passion, reaches Free-will. The existence of free-will is *Objective Spirit*,—civil and political institutes, the State. In rights, morals, politics, freedom is realized —the rational will brought into external objectivity, into existence in real universal forms of life (institutions),—reason or the idea of the Good made actual. All the instincts and motives of nature return now moralized and established as ethical institutes, as Rights and Duties (the sexual instinct as Marriage and Family, the instinct of revenge as legal Penalty, etc.).

### 2. *The Objective Spirit.*

(*a.*) The immediate existence of free-will, free-will as actual and as actually and universally (legally) recognised in its freedom, is *Legal Right*. The individual, so far as he is capable of rights, so far as he possesses and exercises rights, is a Person. The rule of right,



then, is, Be a person and respect others as persons. As a person man gives himself an external sphere of freedom, a substrate in regard to which he may realize his will: *Property*, Possession. As a person I have the right of property, the absolute right of appropriation, the right to set my will on everything, which thereby becomes mine. But I have equally the right to dispossess myself of my property in favour of another person. This is effected in the sphere of right by *Contract*, and in it is freedom, liberty of disposal in regard to property, first perfectly realized. The relation of contract is the first step to the State, only the *first* step, however; for to define the State as a contract of all with all is to degrade it into the category of private right and private property. It depends not on the will of the individual whether he shall live in the State or not. The relation of contract concerns private property. In contract as voluntary agreement there lies the possibility of the subjective will individualizing itself against right in itself or the universal will, the division of the two wills is Wrong (civil wrong—delinquency, fraud, crime). This division demands a reconciliation, a restoration of right or of the universal will as against its temporary sublation or negation occasioned by the particular will. The right that thus restores itself as against the particular will, the negation of wrong, is penalty (punishment). Theories that found the right of penalty on purposes to prevent, deter, intimidate, or correct, mistake the nature of penalty. Prevention, intimidation, etc., are finite ends, *i.e.*, mere means, and these, too, uncertain means. But an act of justice cannot be degraded into any mere means: justice is not exercised, in order that anything but itself be attained and realized. The fulfilment and self-manifestation of justice is an absolute end, an end unto its own self. The special considerations which have been mentioned can come to be discussed only in reference to the modality of the penalty. The penalty which is realized in the person of a criminal is *his* right, *his* reason, *his* law, under which, then, he is justly subsumed. His act falls on his own head. Hegel defends even capital punishments, then, the repeal of which appears to him untimely sentimentality.

(*b.*) The antithesis of the universal and the particular will transferred within the subject, constitutes *Morality*. In morality the freedom of the will develops itself into the spontaneity of the subject; it is the negation of the

externality of the legal element; it is will gone into its own self, and determining its own acts by reference to specific purposes, and its own conviction in regard to right and duty. The position of morality is the right of subjective will, of free ethical decision, the position of conscience. In right proper the consideration was not of my principle or design, but now there occurs question of the motive of will, of the intention. Hegel calls this position of moral reflection, of action conditioned by a reference to motives and duty,—*Morality*, in contradistinction to *Sittlichkeit*, or substantial observance. This position has three moments: (1.) The moment of the Purpose, so far as only the internal state of knowledge and will on the part of the agent comes into consideration,—so far as I accept the responsibility of an act only to the extent that the result is chargeable to my knowledge and will (imputation); (2.) The moment of Motive and the gratification of one's own subjective sense of the right, so far as I recognise as mine not only the purpose but the motive of the purpose, and so far as I possess the right to realize my convictions, and to insist on consideration for my own well-being (this last is not simply to be sacrificed to abstract justice); (3.) The moment of the Good, so far as it is to be expected that the subjective will (for the very reason that, reflected into itself, it is the deciding will) shall maintain its subjective ends in unity with the universal will. The Good is the union of the particular subjective will with the universal objective will, or with the notion of will; it is willed reason. Opposed to it is the Bad, the resistance of the subjective will to the universal, the attempt to make absolute its own individual self and self-will; it is willed unreason.

(*c.*) In the sphere of morality, will and the good are still only abstractly related; the will as free is still possibility of the bad; the good, therefore, is as yet only a something that is or ought to be, it is not yet actual. Morality consequently is but a one-sided position. A higher position is that of established observance (*Sittlichkeit*), which is the concrete identity of will and the good. In it the good becomes a something actual: it obtains the form of ethical institutions within which the will dwells: in this manner the good becomes to consciousness a second nature, and morality is converted into character, into living principle, into the ethical spirit.



The ethical spirit is first immediate or existent in natural form, as Marriage and the Family. Three moments enter into marriage, which ought not to be separated, but which, nevertheless, are very often erroneously isolated. Marriage is: (1.) A relation of sex, and rests on the difference of the sexes; the societary or institutional element in it is, that the subject, instead of being isolated, has his being in his natural universality, in his relation to the genus. (2.) It is a relation of Right, particularly in the community of property. (3.) It is a spiritual communion of love and confidence. Hegel, however, lays no great weight on this subjective moment of sentiment in the concluding of a marriage: in the life of matrimony mutual inclination will soon grow. It is more ethical that the intention to marry should constitute the beginning, and that the personal inclination should be allowed to follow. For marriage is proximately a duty. Hegel, therefore, would have divorce made as difficult as possible. For the rest Hegel develops and describes the being of the family with deep ethical feeling.

The family in enlarging into a plurality of families grows into civil society, the members of which, although independent and individual, are associated into unity by their wants, by the external ordinances of police, and by the establishment of law and authority generally for the protection of person and property. Hegel distinguishes civil society from the State in disagreement with the majority of Publicists, who, in regarding the security of property and personal freedom as the principal purpose of the State, reduce the latter to a mere municipality. But from the principle of municipal association (civil society), union from mutual necessities, and for the preservation of natural rights, war is not intelligible. On the platform of municipal (civil) society, each is for himself, independent, an end unto himself. All else is for him means only. The State, on the contrary, knows not independent individuals, each of whom contemplates and pursues only his own advantage: in the State the whole is the end, and the individual the means. For the administration of justice, Hegel, in contrast to those who refuse to our days the function of legislation, demands written, intelligible, and universally accessible laws; and, in addition, as regards the exercise of judicial authority, open courts and trial by jury. As concerns the organi-

zation of civil society, Hegel manifests a decided preference for corporate life. Marriage-sanctity, and honour in the corporations—these, he says, are the two moments, with which the disorganization of society connects itself.

The interests of the individual sublating themselves into the idea of an ethical whole, the muncipality passes into the *State*. The State is the actuality of the Ethical Idea, the Ethical Spirit as it controls the action and knowledge of the individuals that are contained in it. The various States themselves finally, entering as individuals into a mutual relation of attraction or repulsion, display in their destiny, in their rise and in their fall, the process of *Universal History*.

In his conception of the State, Hegel has a decided leaning to the ancient political idea which completely subordinates the individual, the right of subjectivity, to the will of the State. The omnipotence of the State in its antique sense—this, before all, is held fast by Hegel. Hence his aversion to modern liberalism, to the claims, criticisms, and pretensions to know better on the part of individuals. The State to him is the rational ethical substance, within which the life of the individual must find itself,—it is existent reason to which the subject must with free vision adapt himself. The best constitutional form Hegel holds to be a limited monarchy, as exemplified in the English constitution; to which Hegel especially leant, and which he doubtless had in view in his famous phrase The king is the dot on the *i*. An individual is required, thought Hegel, who shall say yes, who shall prefix an 'I will' to the decrees of the State, who shall be, as it were, the point of formal decision. 'The personality of the State,' he says, 'is only actual as a person, a monarch.' Hegel advocated, therefore, the hereditary monarchy. But he places at its side, as mediating element between the people and the prince, the various orders of the privileged classes,—not indeed for the control or restriction of the government, not for the preservation of the rights of the people, but only in order that the people may understand that the government is being well carried on, that the consciousness of the people may participate in it, that the State may enter into the subjective consciousness of the people.

The various states and the individual national spirits lapse into the flood of *Universal History*. The conflict, the triumph and defeat of the various national spirits,



the transition of the universal spirit from one people to another—this is the thesis of Universal History. The evolution of universal history is usually connected with a dominant people, in whom dwells the universal spirit, correspondently developed, and as against which the spirits of the other peoples are without right. Thus the spirits of the peoples encompass the throne of the absolute Spirit as witnesses and ornaments of the glory, and as co-operating to the realization, of the latter.

### 3. *The Absolute Spirit.*

Spirit is *absolute*, so far as it has returned from the sphere of objectivity into itself, into the ideality of cognition, into the perception of the absolute idea as the truth of all being. The subjugation of natural subjectivity by means of ethical and political observance is the path by which spirit ascends to this pure freedom, to the knowledge of its ideal substance as the Absolute. The first stage of the absolute spirit is *Art*, the immediate view of the idea in objective actuality; the second, *Religion*, the certainty of the idea as what is above all immediate reality, as the absolute power of being, predominant over all that is individual and finite; the third, *Philosophy*, the unity of the two first, the knowing of the idea as the absolute that is no less pure thought than immediately all-existent reality.

(*a.*) *Art.*—The absolute is immediately present to sensuous perception in the beautiful or in art. The beautiful is the shining of the idea through a sensuous medium (stone, colour, sound, verse), the realization of the idea in the form of a finite manifestation. To the beautiful (and its sub-species the beautiful as such, the sublime, and the ludicrous) there always belong two factors, the thought and the material; but both are inseparably together; the material expresses nothing but the thought that animates and illuminates it, and of this thought it is only the external manifestation. The various forms of art depend on the various combinations that take place between the matter and the form. In the *symbolical* form of art, matter predominates; the thought struggles through it only with pain and difficulty in order to bring the ideal into manifestation. In the *classical* form of art, the ideal has conquered its adequate existence in the material: form and matter are mutually absolutely com-

mensurate. Where finally spirit predominates, and the matter is reduced to a mere sign and show, through and beyond which the spirit ever breaks and struggles further —here we have the *romantic* form of art. The system of the individual arts coheres also with these varieties of form in art generally, but difference in the former is proximately conditioned by difference in the material. (1.) The beginning of art is *Architecture*. It belongs essentially to the symbolical form, the sensuous material being greatly in excess in its case, and the true adequacy of form and matter being still to seek. Its material is stone arranged in obedience to the laws of gravitation. Hence the character that belongs to it of mass and massiveness, of silent gravity, of oriental sublimity. After Architecture comes (2.) *Sculpture*, still in subjection, indeed, to a stiff and unyielding material, but an advance, nevertheless, from the inorganic to the organic. Forming it into body, it converts the matter into a mere vehicle simply ancillary. In representing body, this building of the soul, in its beauty and purity, the material completely disappears into the ideal; not a remnant of the crasser element is left that is not in service to the idea. Nevertheless the life of the soul, feeling, mood, glance—these are beyond sculpture. The romantic art, κατ' ἐξοχήν, (3.) *Painting* is alone equal to them. Its medium is no longer a coarse material substrate but the coloured plane, the spiritual play of light; it produces only the show of solid dimension. Hence it is capable of expressing the whole scala of feelings, moods, and actions—actions full of dramatical movement. The perfect sublation of space, however, is (4.) *Music*. Its material is tone, the inner trembling of a sonorous body. Music quits consequently the world of sensuous perceptions and acts exclusively on inner emotion. Its seat is the womb and the well of the emotional soul whose movement is within itself. Music is the most subjective of arts. But the tongue of art is loosened at last only in (5.) *Poetry* or the literary art; poetry has the privilege of universal expression. Its material is no longer sound simply, but sound as speech, sound as the word, the sign of an idea, the expression of reason. Poetry shapes not this material, however, in complete freedom, but in obedience to certain rhythmico-musical laws of verse. All the other arts return in poetry: the plastic arts in the epos which is the large complacent narrative of picturesque national events; music in the ode which is the lyrical expression of the inmost soul; the unity of both in the drama, which exhibits the conflict of individuals, absorbed in the interests of opposing sides.



(*b.*) *Religion.*—Poetry forms the transition of art into religion. In art the idea was present for perception, in religion it is present for conception. The burthen of all religion is the inward exaltation of the soul to the Absolute as the all-comprehending, all-reconciling substance of existence, the knowing of himself on the part of the subject as in unity with God. All religions seek unity of the divine and human. The rudest attempts in this direction occur (1.) in the natural religions of the East. God in them is still natural power, natural substance, before which the finite, the individual, disappears as a nullity. A loftier idea of God we find (2.) in the religions of spiritual individuality, in which the divine is regarded as subject,—as sublime subjectivity full of wisdom and might in Judaism, the religion of sublimity; as galaxy of plastic divine forms in the Greek religion, the religion of beauty; as absolute political purpose in the Roman religion, the religion of the understanding or of expediency (means to an end). Positive reconciliation of God and the world is only attained at last, however, (3.) in the Revealed or Christian religion, which, in the person of Christ, contemplates the God-Man, the realized unity of the Divine and the human, and apprehends God as the self-externalizing (self-incarnating) idea that from this externalization eternally returns into itself,—that is to say, as the Tri-une God. The spiritual import, therefore, of the Revealed or Christian Religion is the same as that of the Speculative Philosophy, only that it is expressed there in the mode of conception, in the form of a history, here in the mode of the notion. But with abstraction from the form of religious conception, we have the position of the

(*c.*) *Absolute Philosophy*, of thought that knows itself as all truth, that reproduces from itself the entire natural and spiritual universe,—that thought the evolution of which is precisely the system of Philosophy—a sphere of spheres self-closed.

With Schelling and Hegel the history of philosophy ends. The succeeding efforts, partly to advance the previous idealism, partly to find new principles, belong to the present, and not yet to history.

# ANNOTATIONS.

The general purpose of these notes in the first instance was to complete the information of the student. To that end they were to have been guided by considerations: 1. Explanatory; 2. Critical; and 3. Supplementary. The first consideration, naturally, would concern whatever terms or doctrines seemed to require a word of illustration; while the last would refer, evidently, to any additions to the statements of Schwegler that might appear eligible. *Critically*, again, the intention was, as regards statement, to have compared the text of Schwegler, 1, with the original philosophers; 2, with Hegel; and 3, with the German Zeller, Erdmann, and Ueberweg, with the English Maurice, Butler, Lewes, Grote, Ferrier, and with the European Brandis. It presently appeared, however, that this scheme was out of all proportion to the nature and dimensions of Schwegler's, or any other, compend. Nay, what has been done will show that, in the end, even much more moderate views proved impracticable – so far, that is, as concerns a *complete* annotation of the text of Schwegler. As, however, works that are intended to exhaust the alphabet, have generally achieved the bulk of their labour with the first half-dozen letters, so, here, notes that terminate with the Sophists, may prove serviceable even in the very latest sections.[1] The result of my critical comparison is, that Schwegler's is at once the fullest and the shortest, the deepest and the easiest, the most trustworthy and the most elegant, compendium that exists in either language. (Of any French compendium up to the date I know not.) Hegel's interpretation of the history of philosophy, which, if the darkest, is also the most valuable in existence, is of course the backbone of all the others that are of any importance,

[1] The reference is to the first edition. The notes are now completed.

and will, in all probability, remain such for several generations to come, or until a new philosophy has removed another seal from the vision of Humanity into its own past. Brandis, Ueberweg, Zeller, Erdmann have, with Schwegler, worthily done their parts in expanding into the necessary breadth, or contracting into the necessary point, whether for intelligibleness or comprehensiveness. Nor are these the only Germans who have laboured in the same service. Others, also historians of philosophy, some before, some since Hegel, such as Brucker, Buhle, Tennemann, Wendt, Ast, Rixner, Schleiermacher, Ritter, Marbach, Braniss, Sigwart, Reinhold, Fries, Trendelenburg, Chalybaeus, Michelet (and these are not all), may be at least named. In this connexion the Germans, indeed, are so exhaustive and complete, whether as regards intelligence or research, that they have left the English absolutely nothing to do but translate their text and copy their erudition into notes, so that of the latter those are the best who are the faithfulest to the former. Would only that the faithfulness of any of them were always a satisfactory faithfulness! This I may say, however, that, had Ferrier lived, he had it in him—possibly with one exception—infinitely to outshine them all. The others have each his own merit, nevertheless. Butler's Lectures are eloquent and interesting, and the Notes of their most accomplished and competent Editor are accurate and valuable. The work of Professor Maurice ought to be read by every one, as well for the extensive reading it indicates, as for the admirable spirit and fascinating facility in which it is written. (During this annotation, I have had all the parts of the 'Moral and Metaphysical Philosophy' beside me, only, unfortunately, not the *First*.) It were superfluous to praise the writing, the erudition, or the labour of Mr. Grote. As regards his German guides, however, I could have wished that he had been always as true to their insight as he is to their erudition; I confess, indeed, that it was a particular pain to me to perceive that Mr. Grote's philosophy extended only to what of *Aufklärung* the Germans contained, and not to—the last lesson—their correction of it. In availing myself, for the supplementary note on Comte, of Mr. Mill's first essay on that writer in the *Westminster Review*, I have enjoyed the guidance of his cool, judicial faculty. One can always praise the 'History' of Mr. Lewes for its clearness and intelligibleness. It is uneven, however—probably from the circumstances of its genesis—and reminds of the lumpy glass that we see in cottage-windows. Be the book as it may, it is always a pleasure to recognise the kindly and candid nature of the man. Mr. Lewes,[1] as regards Hegel, professes to be unchanged in opinion, and to have expressed in his last edition the same views as in his earlier ones. One can see, however, both an improved interest in, and an improved understanding of, Hegelian dicta—Being and Nothing, for example,—and one would like to believe, notwithstanding his intimations to the contrary, that some recent English works on German philosophy have not been quite wholly in vain for Mr. Lewes, whether as regards Hegel or as regards Kant.



### I.—*General Idea of the History of Philosophy.*

As regards expression there does not seem much in this section that requires explanation. The phrase *what is given*, or what is *given in experience*, refers to what is usually expressed in English by *what is just found*, or *what we just find to be so and so*: that is, then, the direct fact that stands before sense. Philosophy, like the sciences usually so called, is dependent for an object of consideration, in the first place, on what the senses supply. Philosophy, however, is not to be understood as a result of ordinary induction. Philosophy has, in a general reference to the whole vast universe, to do simply with the *connective tissue*, so to speak, that not only supports, but even in a measure constitutes, the various organs: this connective tissue may be viewed as a '*diamond net*' sunk into the empirical body or mass. Now to arrive at this supporting (or even constitutive) diamond tree or net, philosophy is not dependent on induction, but has a method of its own. This must be always borne in mind, even when the connexion of philosophy with the sciences is insisted on.

Zeller will be found to support Schwegler in disputing the Hegelian correlation of philosophy and the history of philosophy. This is possible to neither, however, in the state of his convictions, without an involuntary contradiction, as is seen at once when we find that both, despite what they say, would still reduce the history of

[1] *History of Philosophy*, Pref., p. vii. and vol. ii. p. 556, last note (3d edn.)

philosophy to organization,—that is, to reason,—or, in other words, to philosophy. If history, indeed, were to be regarded as mere contingency, which, consequently, conditioned thought, and were not conditioned by it, then the fundamental principle of the Hegelian philosophy, and that philosophy itself, would require to be abandoned. Rather than this, surely it is better to account for *lacunæ* by the unavoidable imperfections both of philosophy and the history of philosophy as yet. It is perfectly well known to Zeller, as it was to Schwegler, that externality, as externality, is to Hegel, in its very nature, notion and necessity, contingent and fortuitous. Hegel could not expect, therefore, either nature (which is externality in space), or history (which is externality in time), to constitute, *in its own form*, a system or a progress that should present a single intellectual scheme. Nay, his own express words are (*Gesch. d. Phil.* i. p. 326):—'Although the evolution of philosophy in history must correspond to the evolution of logical philosophy, there will still be *loci* in the latter, which disappear in the historical movement.' Nevertheless, he held nature and history to be *substantially* or *at bottom* but the one the exemplification and the other the evolution of thought; and he called to his students, as they would be 'serious with the belief of a divine government of the world,' to trust in the possibility of philosophy demonstrating this. Without presupposition, indeed, of a progressive organic idea to underlie all history, whether political, religious, or philosophical, what *meaning* were there in the universe at all? And without presupposition of this *meaning*, what were philosophy? It were absurd to try to think what has no thought in it. That Hegel's chain of logical categories can only partially and interruptedly be demonstrated to underlie the phenomenal contingency, whether of nature or of history—it is patent that this must have been as evident to Hegel himself as to his two critics, and it follows from his own principles that he would not have claimed more. The idea, if not *constitutively*, or even in strictness, *regulatively*, is at least *substantively* present in history. Distortion in time Hegel himself admits. That Zeller should demand the 'logical *Gerippe*,' the 'red strand of necessity,' and Schwegler the conception of the philosophy of history as 'unity of a single process,' which Hegel demands, and yet that both should make



believe to reject Hegel—this, plainly, is but gratuitous contradiction. In Schwegler, indeed, this contradiction is a contradiction in terms; for how can that which is 'true in principle' be also 'unjustifiable in principle'? It is to miss Hegel not to see everywhere the single necessity of reason. The (philosophically) perfectly ripe Erdmann maintains in his historical *Grundriss* that 'in all philosophies only the one philosophy unfolds itself.' To Ferrier, too, the history of philosophy is but 'philosophy itself taking its *time*.'

## II. AND III.—*Division and Preliminary View.*

ANY terms in these sections for which illustration may be desirable will find a more suitable place again. The exclusion of all the preliminary discussions that usually precede Thales, will be felt a boon by most readers, as will also the elimination of Scholasticism. What is known of Oriental philosophy is best studied in the works specially occupied with it. I would earnestly recommend all students, if possible, however, to read the introduction to Zeller's comprehensive work on the history of philosophy among the Greeks. Of this work, Ferrier says that 'it is too much pervaded, particularly in those places where clearness is most required, by that obscurity, indeed, I may say, unintelligibility, which seems to be inseparable from the philosophical lucubrations of our Teutonic neighbours.' With this opinion I cannot at all agree; he who runs may read the section in question, or, indeed, any section in the whole book, and with perfect intelligence. As for Scholasticism, when one considers that the printed writings of Albertus Magnus, Thomas Aquinas, and Duns Scotus alone occupy fifty-one folio volumes, one feels glad to be delivered from it, and for so good a reason as that of Schwegler. The reader ought to know, however, that the study of Scholasticism has now come into full *mode*, not only in Germany but also in France. In this country, too, we see the same tendency in the Patristic studies of Dr. Donaldson and others. The most complete students here seem to be Prantl, Hauréau, Erdmann, Ueberweg, Huber, Stöckl, and others: in Erdmann's admirable *Grundriss* there is an ample original study. It is obvious, indeed, that the union at once of oriental and occidental

principles in the principle of Christianity, and then the gradual evolution of the last during so many ages of seclusion to the supersensual world will constitute a study of great interest. Erdmann views the Theosophy of the middle ages as a necessary complement to the Cosmosophy of the ancients, and both as equally necessary for the completion of modern philosophy. More on this subject cannot well be said here. As for the *preliminary view*, the reader will gain by a return to it after he has gone through the whole of pre-Socratic philosophy. At the beginning of 4, we read that the 'first or analytic,' is now to give place to the 'second or synthetic period,' and yet we are told, at the end of it, that the first principle of the new period is *analytically* acquired and, in its application, the *first* of the sort! One is apt to replace *analytically* by *synthetically* here; but we find from p. 107 that to Schwegler that is analytic which is obtained from observation of nature. Now Heraclitus was probably led to his principle so, and his was certainly a first attempt to explain 'the *movement* of existence.' Yet the attempt itself was a synthesis (of being and non-being).

## IV.—*The Earlier Ionic Philosophers.*

I HAVE compared the brief statements of Schwegler here with the longer ones of Hegel, Zeller, Grote, Lewes, etc., and can assure the reader that they contain all that in my view of it is worth knowing on the subject. In Hegel, for example, though Schwegler's five paragraphs are represented by twenty-four pages, this result is, for the most part, attained by a wider extension rather than by a greater fulness, in the matter of dates, events, authorities, quotations, and what is called in general the literature of the subject. There is certainly in Hegel as well a fuller and freer discussion of the pertinent doctrines; but even so Schwegler's reader has little to gain, unless as regards interesting glimpses into Hegel's own philosophy, to which, perhaps, we shall refer again.

The recently published 'Lectures on Greek Philosophy,' by the late lamented Professor Ferrier, will well reward perusal by the British reader here, so far as perfect lucidity and general charm of statement are concerned. A similar praise can always be extended to Mr.



Lewes, and the relative paragraphs of Mr. Grote's Plato constitute an exceedingly able compend. Zeller is quite complete, as usual, in details and references; and Erdmann reflective and exact. Mr. Grote seems oftenest to differ from the rest in the matter of dates: his date for Thales, for example, is 620-560, B.C., while Hegel and Erdmann agree with Schwegler, to whom the others also come nearer though differing somewhat among themselves.

The most important difference, however, is that of Ritter as regards the place of Anaximander, a difference which is adopted by Mr. Lewes and Professor Butler. Of this difference, it is enough to remark, perhaps, that it seems universally abandoned now, and that the reasons alleged by Zeller and Erdmann are surely quite sufficient.

Schwegler and Hegel appear less complete than the others only in reference to Diogenes of Apollonia. Mr. Lewes remarks (vol. i. p. 10) that 'Hegel, by a strange oversight, says that we know nothing of Diogenes but the name.' Now (for his part, Schwegler says nothing at all of Diogenes), what Hegel does say is this:—'Diogenes of Apollonia, Hippasus, Archelaus are also named as Ionic philosophers; we know only their names, however, *and that they adhered to one or other of the principles.*' If any one will examine the state of the case as regards Diogenes in what is said of his age and opinions, and in the manner in which, as a philosopher, he is characterized by the two main authorities, Diogenes Laertius and Aristotle, he will have no dificulty in perceiving that there was no 'oversight' with Hegel; that, on the contrary, he was quite aware both of what he did and of his reasons for what he did. Schleiermacher it was who had called particular attention to this Diogenes; it is explanation, but not justification, to say that Hegel, while averse to disturb his Ionic cycle of three, would not be apt to feel less averse in a case where Schleiermacher was concerned. Full justification, however, is extended by this, that whatever additional knowledge Diogenes may seem to possess in consequence of living as late as Anaxagoras, he really was, philosophically, no more than an adherent of Anaximenes. Any philosophical advance attributed to Diogenes over Anaximenes, the latter, according to Hegel, already possessed. Erdmann will be found not to dissent from this

view; and even Schleiermacher in the end came to regard Diogenes as a '*principlosen* Eklektiker,' whose place was among the Sophists and Atomists. In fact, to interpose this Diogenes between Anaximenes and the Pythagoreans is to produce on the history of philosophy the effect of a disturbing upthrow. This being the case, and as he contains no principle of his own, but only mixes up those of Anaximenes, Anaxagoras, etc., I hold Schwegler to be perfectly right in not even naming him. Diogenes certainly refers to many physical details that may prove peculiarly interesting to Mr. Grote and Mr. Lewes; but these details belong not to philosophy proper; and if Diogenes is to be admitted, why not also Hippo, Idæus, etc.? Contrary to the opinion of Mr. Lewes, then, it is for critical, and not 'uncritical,' reasons, that Diogenes of Apollonia should be 'made to represent no epoch whatever.' Referring to the unsuccess of the earlier Greek philosophers, Mr. Lewes observes, 'but, as Mr. Grote remarks, the memorable fact is that they made the attempt.' The remark belongs to Zeller (see vol. i. p. 156).

In connexion with the Ionics, Hegel names Pherecydes, of whom it is enough to know, however, that he is said to have been the teacher of Pythagoras.

## V.—*The Pythagoreans.*

AFTER due comparison of the various authorities, I am disposed to claim for Schwegler here also complete presentation of the *fruit*. Zeller, who has 150 pages for Schwegler's 3, runs out in them into great breadth of reference and discussion; but, after all, there is the same result. Erdmann passes from the Physiologists to the Mathematicians by a transition that is very ingenious:—'If all multiplicity,' he says, 'is explained by *thickening* and *thinning*, the mind that reflects and reasons with itself, must pass to the result, that all differences of nature have become distinctions for it of the simpler and the more manifold, the less and the more, that is, distinctions of number.' This he equally ingeniously connects with Plato's one and many. Ferrier's statement of the Pythagoreans,—well-written, as usual, like the other English statements,—is inferior to his previous one on the Ionics. Some of his remarks



are incorrect, and his illustrations out of place. Hegel opposes, more than once, Aristotle and Sextus Empiricus, as the genuine students of, and authorities on, Pythagoras, to his neo-Platonic biographers as the spurious ones; Ferrier opposes Aristotle as the genuine to Sextus Empiricus as the neo-Platonic and the spurious. Ferrier has probably found Hegel even more than usually unyielding here. Here, indeed, Hegel is both unyielding and diffuse (46 pages), but of the greatest value both as regards the Pythagorean philosophy and his own. What a world of living reality we are in when we read an original writer, a *princeps!* One feels this when one passes from the rest, however genuine each may be in his way, to Hegel. (It is pleasant to see Mr. Lewes contrive to extract an occasional little edge from amid the impracticable blocks of this Sphinx,—as when he speaks of an Egypt unable to measure its own pyramids by help of their shadows, as having little to teach a so-skilled Thales, or of how we are to understand Pythagoras' new term of *philosopher*.)

Of the Thaletic proposition, that water is the principle or absolute, Hegel—to go back a step or two—remarks, that it is the beginning of philosophy. His reasons for this are two: 1, that water (so regarded) is a universal; and, 2, that it is *real*, or exists *in rerum natura*. It is a universal, for all other things are referred to, or resolved into it; and, in such a position, it only is, and can only be, a *Gedanke* (which is not only a thought, but as a thought truly is, a *Ge-danke*, a putting or bringing *together* of *things*). Philosophy, then, has, in the conception of Thales, at last found its beginning; for the principle of philosophy must not be abstract, but concrete,—that is, at once universal and particular. Such evidently would be the nature of water, *could* all things be demonstrably reduced to it. This will render intelligible, perhaps, some of Hegel's apparently impenetrable utterances under Thales: as when in reference to the formlessness of the principle (and water is formless) he says, 'While to the senses each thing stands there in its own individuality, now (according to Thales, that is) objective actuality is to be placed in the notion that reflects itself into itself, or is itself to be put as notion: water is *in its notion* (*Begriff*—what it implies) life, and so appears in mental (spiritual) wise.' The last point refers plainly to water as process. It throws light on the word *speculative* to be told that

water (in the present reference, that is) has not sensuous but only speculative universality; the latter because it is now in the form of notion, and the elements of sense are as it were sublated into it. It is evident, too, that, as water is here regarded as at once universal and real, the Thaletic proposition expresses the absolute as unity of thought and being (*Einheit des Gedankens und Seyns*). Again, it is instructive to be told that the principle, if true, cannot remain an idle *universal* but must possess capacity of transition into the *particular*. There is *form* as well as *matter;* there must be provision for the *difference*, or there must be an *absolute difference*. Here however, the only difference, the only expression of form, being *thickening and thinning*, distinction is merely quantitative, merely external and inessential, and *set up by another*, or produced from without; 'it is not the inner difference of the notion in its own self.' These remarks may be regarded as hints towards Hegel's own purposes: when *he* explains the world to us, it will be by a principle that is real, that is universal, and that possesses within itself capacity of difference into all that is. We understand him then, when he finds the principle of Anaximander an advance on that of Thales, for it is no longer 'a certain finite something, but a universality that negates the finite.' Hegel enables us to regard Anaximander as the earliest Darwinian: he conceives man to *develop* from a fish, etc., 'Develop (*Hervorgehen*),' says Hegel, 'comes forward in recent times also; it is a mere *after one another* in time—a form, with which a man often believes himself to say something brilliant; but for all that there is no necessity, no thought, no notion in it.' Would not one think Hegel had read Darwin?

As regards Anaximenes also, Hegel notices the advance from the material to the true or spiritual element. But it is here (under the Pythagoreans), probably, that we shall find the most *enlightening* remarks of any yet. Matter, which even before was, as reflexion into consciousness, a thing of consciousness, is now wholly withdrawn. With much that the Pythagorean numbers *represent* Hegel agrees; but numbers are still external, stiff, immovable, without process in themselves, and he demonstrates them to be incapable of expressing the absolute form. Such symbols are to Hegel *hard*, and he exclaims that 'nothing has the *softness* of thought but thought itself.' 'Short in his own way,' then, as he says himself



of Aristotle, he 'demolishes' the cheap profundity that lies in the symbolism of numbers. 'Numbers,' he says, 'have been much used as expressions of ideas. This on one side has a look of depth. For that another meaning is implied in them than they immediately present, is seen at once; but how much is implied in them is known neither by him who proposes, nor by him who tries to understand, as, for instance, in the case of the witches' rhyme (one time one) in Goethe's Faust. The more obscure the thoughts, the deeper they seem; the thing is that what is most essential, but also what is hardest, namely, the expression of one's-self in definite notions, precisely that the proposer spares himself.' It is impossible to tell, he says again of the latter Pythagoreans, 'how much they toiled, as well to express philosophical thoughts in a numerical system, as to understand those expressions which they received from others, and to discover in them every possible meaning.' But the curious point is that Hegel himself adopts this very numerical symbolism, so far as it suits *the system!* It is only, indeed, when that agreement fails, that the agreement of Hegel fails also. The moment it does fail, however, his impatience breaks out. The one, the two, the three, he contentedly, even warmly and admiringly, accepts, nay, 'as far as five,' he says, 'there may well be something like a thought in numbers, *but* on from six there are simply arbitrary determinations!'

Hegel is quite consistent with himself, however, and believes numbers, to the extent he says, applicable in expression of the absolute relation. 'Everything,' he says, 'is essentially only this, that it has in it oneness and twoness, and as well their antithesis as their connexion,' and this is intelligible to every one who perceives that oneness stands for identity, and twoness for difference. He points out that the Trinity is only unintelligible when conceived as three separate numerical units, while speculatively it involves an absolute and divine sense: 'it would be a strange thing if there were no sense in what for two thousand years has been the holiest Christian idea.' But people do not know what they themselves say. When they say *matter*, they perceive not that they have named what can exist in thought alone, and what, therefore, is *immaterial*.

I cannot resist extracting further one or two exoteric passages that are in Hegel's best manner. In regard to

the Pythagorean injunction to review morning and evening our actions of the past day, etc., he says, 'True discipline is not this vanity of directing so much attention to itself, and of occupying itself with itself as an individual; but that self-forgettingness that absorbs itself in the thing itself, and in the interest of the universal: it is only this considerateness in regard to the thing in hand that is necessary, while that dangerous, useless anxiousness destroys freedom.' Hegel naturally is better pleased with the Pythagorean prescript to 'stop chatter and take to learning;' he says, 'This duty, to keep-in one's talk can be named an essential condition of all culture and all learning; one must begin by becoming capable of taking up the thoughts of others, and of renouncing one's own fancies. It is usually said that the understanding is developed by questions, objections, answers, etc.; in effect, however, it is not thus *formed*, but externally *made*. Man's inwardness is what is won and widened in true culture; he grows not poorer in thoughts or in quickness of mind by silently containing himself. He learns rather thereby ability to take up, and acquires perception of the worthlessness of his own conceits and objections; and as the perception of the worthlessness of such conceits grows, he breaks himself of the having of them.' The hecatomb sacrificed by Pythagoras on discovery of the theorem that bears his name is highly relished by Hegel: 'it was a feast of spiritual cognition — at cost of the oxen!' He never thinks of the mathematicians quoting Ovid in proof of Pythagoras' prohibition of animal slaughter, and in consequent disproof of the possibility of the sacrifice.

In reference to the peculiar external habits and dress of Pythagoras, he says very sensibly, 'These are no longer of any consequence; we allow ourselves to be guided by the general custom and fashion, because it is quite indifferent not to have a will of one's own here: we give the contingent a prize to the contingent, and obey that external rationality that just consists in identity and universality.'

A tolerable instance of Hegelian ingenuity occurs also, in a previous section, with reference to Aristotle's collation of the water of Thales with the oath of the gods by the Styx:—'This ancient tradition is susceptible of a speculative interpretation. When something cannot be proved,—that is, when objective monstration fails, as in reference to a payment the receipt, or in reference to an act the witnesses of it,—then the oath, this certification of myself, must, as an object, declare that my evidence is absolute truth. As now, by way of confirmation, one swears by what is best, by what is absolutely sure, and as the gods swore by the subterranean water, there seems to be implied here this, that the essential principle of pure thought, the innermost being, the reality in which consciousness has its truth, is water; I declare, as it were, this pure certainty of my own self as object, as God.' This (without mention of Hegel) is found exceedingly well rendered by Ferrier.



## VI.—*The Eleatics.*

A WORD on Melissus will complete the list of these. Melissus, a Samian like Pythagoras, a friend of Heraclitus and probably a disciple of Parmenides, a statesman, an admiral, etc., flourished about 444 B.C. He wrote a book in prose on nature, fragments of which have been preserved by Simplicius, and collected by Brandis. Melissus appears to have reached considerably more definiteness than Parmenides; but, on the whole, the import is in both the same. Hegel says, 'What Xenophanes began, Parmenides and Melissus improved, and what these taught Zeno completed.' The Editor of Butler's *Lectures* objects that 'Melissus rather corrupted than "completed" the Eleatic system.' Corrupted contrasts with Hegel's 'improved (*weiter ausgebildet*),' and is not justified by the very reference in support. Aristotle's reproach of 'a little more rough' in the metaphysics (or the word 'coarse' elsewhere) probably applies, as Hegel thinks, to the manner rather than to the matter of Melissus. Zeller and Erdmann, both implying a certain advance on the part of Melissus, seem to admit to his prejudice only a colour, so to speak, caught by him from simple contact with his adversaries the Physicists. Zeller holds him essentially to agree both with Parmenides and Zeno, though he refers at the same time to his 'not quite insignificant deviation from Parmenides.' This deviation, however, is limited to the doctrine of the infinitude of the One, and does not extend to the materiality of the One, which latter is no doctrine of Melissus.

but simply an inference of Aristotle. Zeller, it is true, even while quoting Melissus himself on the One being without body, extension, or parts, seems to justify Aristotle in this very inference, as well as to conceive the reproach of Aristotle to relate both to the assumption of the infinitude of the One on the part of Melissus and to his relative reasoning in support. Hegel, however, as we have seen, evidently thinks very highly of Melissus, and is at pains to defend him. He says that the fragments of Melissus contain the same thoughts and arguments as those of Parmenides, only 'in part something more developed (*etwas ausgeführter*).' Of the pseudo-Aristotelian work, further, he says with reference to that part of it that is now universally held to concern Melissus, 'There is in it more reflection and a dialectic more finished in form than—judging by their verses—we might expect not only from Xenophanes but even from Parmenides.' He talks of its 'cultured ratiocination,' its 'order,' its 'precision.' But what is more to the purpose, he points out that, with reference to the pure principle, Being or One, the distinction of matter and thought falls away, while, as regards the unlimitedness of Melissus and the limitedness of Parmenides, it is Parmenides and not Melissus who is in fault: 'This limitedness of the One would, in effect, directly contradict the philosophy of Parmenides' . . . 'but the poetical diction of Parmenides is not always exact' . . . 'and his doctrine of opinion was more against Being as principle of thought than was the case with Melissus.' In general, indeed, Hegel finds reconciliation in thought for much that is contradictory in expression to Zeller. Thus Hegel takes no offence at the pseudo-Aristotle describing the Eleatic One as 'globe-shaped,' 'neither limited nor unlimited,' 'neither moved nor unmoved,' etc., whereas Zeller cannot wrest himself free from the contradictions implied. Mr. Lewes finds it 'difficult to understand the Rational unity as limited by itself;' but, unlike Zeller, he finds the idea of a sphere to resolve the contradiction. The ego, too, it is worth pointing out, is such a sphere, it is the absolute limit; and yet it is absolute unlimitedness.

We pass to a word on the Eleatic argumentation, and the terms it involves. As for the former (the argumentation), it is shortly this:—What is, can neither originate in that which it is, nor in that which it is not; for in the one case, movement there were none, and in the



other, movement were impossible. This is the problem of origination in general, and concerns difficulties which, apart from Hegel, still exist. In ultimate abstraction, it may (suggestively, perhaps) stand thus:—Neither identity can issue from identity, nor difference from difference; for in the first case there were no difference, and in the second no identity. The one-sided conclusion of the Eleatics here was that there is only identity (Being), and that difference (Non-being) there is none. As regards terms now, then, the meaning of *beënt* and *non-beënt* will perhaps present no difficulty. *Beënt* with its Saxon root and its Latin termination, to say nothing of the diæresis, is an ugly mongrel, and *non-beënt* is still worse. Both have been avoided as much as possible, and would gladly have been dispensed with. It may be said, why not have adopted existent and non-existent? But when it is considered that the beënt is, strictly, the non-existent, and the existent the non-beënt, it will be readily seen that this could not have been always possible. That which truly is in the life of this great universe could not, the Eleatics thought, be existent, for the existent, as an ever-changeful becoming, contains an element of difference or negation. It must, then, be described as only beënt, as possessed of identity or affirmation alone. This distinction was identified by Plato with that which separates the ideas from the world of sense. The *genera* of things, the ideas, as unchangeable, replaced for him the pure being of the Eleatics, while things themselves, as mere becoming and perpetual change, were but the non-beënt, the simply *existent*. We may illustrate this by referring to astronomy. The sun, planets, comets, etc., are *existent* astronomy, they are in continual change, they never return twice the same; but their science, their laws, are *beënt* astronomy. And as it was to Plato, so it is to Hegel. The main principle in the physiology of Virchow is the connective tissue (the *Bindegewebe*). This tissue so runs through the anatomical frame that the rest of it (organs and all) are but contained in, or even constituted by it. Philosophy—in priority to Virchow—had endeavoured to demonstrate the sustentation of the whole crass universe in even such a diamond net of connective tissue under the name of 'Logic.' The meaning of the terms in question will now, then, be completely plain. No object is exposed to the senses that is not a process. The same sun never shone twice. Leibnitz says of things:

*semper generantur, et nunquam sunt.* The Eleatics, then, simply refused to believe in this changeableness as the principle of the world: they assumed a One in the universe, beside which all change (difference, negation, non-being) must be but appearance and subjective mistake. The signification indicated as assigned to *being* here in contradistinction from *becoming* is held fast by Schwegler pretty well throughout. Opposed to the element of thought, however, being takes on a sense of palpable, tangible, durable breadth. Examples of such sense of the word will be found especially in the sections on Fichte and Herbart. Professor Ferrier gives very felicitous expression (vol. i. p. 82) to the distinction between being and non-being:—'This antithesis is merely a variety of expression for the antithesis between reason and sense: or if we may distinguish between the two forms of the opposition, we may say that the one expression, the permanent and the changeable, or the ἕν and the πολλά, denotes the antithesis in its objective form; the other expression, reason and sense, denotes the antithesis in its subjective form.' The ἕν and πολλά are Platonic (firstly Pythagorean) forms, but what is said perfectly applies. Another excellent glance of Mr. Ferrier is this (p. 85):—'Whatever epithet or predicate is applied to one of the terms of the antithesis, the counter-predicate must be applied to the other term.' At page 87 also we have some felicitous illustration. It may be well, at the same time, to place a remark here in reference to Ferrier's test of philosophical truth, that it is truth, namely, 'for all and not for some,' truth for all intelligence, not truth for such only as is accompanied by senses like our own. This appears everywhere in Ferrier as the criterion he has derived from the Germans in regard to necessary thought. This is not to name the distinction concerned rightly, however, which is that of being (the necessary, permanent, underlying and pervading, connective tissue of ideas) and of non-being or becoming (the contingent vicissitude of sensuous things). Hegel knows only one kind of thought, and believes that that thought can only have these senses. Ferrier seems to accept the possibility, not only of senses, but even of an intelligence, different from ours.

Mr. Lewes, when he says (vol. i. p. 55) that the assertion non-being is impossible, 'amounts to saying that non-existence cannot exist: a position which may appear



extremely trivial to the reader not versed in metaphysical pursuits,' etc., would seem not to have the true distinction between being and non-being very clearly before him. The same author, alone mentioning Hegel's apparently well-founded doubts as to the proofs of Xenophanes' connexion with Elea, disagrees very widely with Hegel as regards interpretation of the text of Aristotle that (Metaph. i. 5) represents Xenophanes as looking εἰς τὸν ὅλον οὐρανόν. 'The state of his (Xenophanes') mind (says Mr. Lewes, vol. i. p. 44) is graphically painted in that one phrase of Aristotle's: "casting his eyes upwards at the immensity of heaven, he declared that the One is God." Overarching him was the deep blue, infinite vault, immoveable, unchangeable, embracing him and all things; *that* he proclaimed to be God.' Mr. Lewes then proceeds to strengthen and widen this position by further poetic hypostasis of the physical sky. Hegel, on the other hand, who also indeed talks of a *Blaue*, translates the passage thus:—'but, looking into the whole heaven — as we say into the air (*ins Blaue hinein*)—he said, God is the One.' Hegel's reading of the whole passage, indeed, may be represented as running thus. Parmenides having said that the One was limited, and Melissus that it was unlimited, Xenophanes, for his part (in Aristotle's words) οὐθὲν διεσαφήνισεν, nowise declared or determined, nor seemed to tend to either opinion, but, looking round him generally, said, the One is God. Compared with the context which concerns a comparison of opinions, this interpretation of Hegel seems reasonable. Zeller, also (vol. i. p. 372, 1, and p. 385, 1), appears to support the same view, though he speaks of the vault of heaven in the text of the latter page. Mr. Lewes differs (vol. i. p. 53) from other critics in his translation of a celebrated text of Parmenides. Perhaps it may be well, however, to refer to Zeller's note (vol. i. p. 414), since, though probably settling the matter, it is not mentioned by Mr. Lewes.* Aristotle, no doubt, quotes the text in question as relevant to the subject of the relativity of judgments of sensation: and it is certainly very natural to quote an Eleatic as arguing against sense or non-being. But surely Mr. Lewes introduces quite a new idea when he conceives Parmenides to have in mind the *dependence of thought on organization.* Referring to the varying opinions of mankind, Parmenides says, as is the mixture of the two ele-

* But see now Edn. 4, p. 54, vol. i. of his book.

ments (the warm and the cold) in men, so is their thought (knowledge), with the obvious inference that δόξα, sensuous opinion, is not trustworthy. It is not the modern conception of organization then that Parmenides has in mind, but simply the variety of our actual states, and as explained by variety of intermixture in his two elements. With this interpretation it is quite in harmony that Parmenides should have conceived, even after disappearance of the warm element, sensation to remain in the corpse, though only of the cold and dark; but will such conception harmonize with the idea of organization, with the idea of thought as resultant from organization? It is a bold statement, then, this, that Parmenides 'had as distinct a conception of this celebrated theory as any of his successors,' and it seems unnatural to propose for the simple words τὸ γὰρ πλέον ἐστὶ νόημα (for the more is the thought), a translation so cumbrous as this, 'the highest degree of organization gives the highest degree of thought.' It is very improbable that any such conception ever occurred to Parmenides. Zeller accepts (and Hegel, by quoting and translating the whole passage, already countenanced him in advance) the equivalent of Theophrastus for τὸ πλέον, τὸ ὑπερβάλλον namely, and interprets the clause itself thus:—'The preponderating element of the two is thought, occasions and determines the ideas;' that is, as is the preponderating element (the warm or the cold) so is the state of mind. In short, *the more is the thought* is the linguistic equivalent of the time, for *according to the more* is the thought.[1] Mr. Lewes, further, in prosecution of the same view, translates and explains in his own way (vol. i. p. 56), the celebrated verses of Parmenides that seem to assert the identity of being and thought. (They will be found at page 346, vol. i. of Butler's *Lectures*, translated by the Editor.) Hegel, too, (*Gesch. d. Phil.* P. I. p. 274), translates the same verses, and adds *his* interpretation. It is almost amusing to see the difference: while Mr. Lewes conceives that what is referred to is 'the identity of human thought and sensation, both of these being merely transitory modes of existence,' Hegel boldly exclaims, 'That is the main thought: thought produces itself, and what is produced is a thought; thought is therefore identical with its being, for there is nothing besides being, that grand affirmation.' Hegel also adds from Plotinus,—'Parmenides adopted this conception inasmuch as he placed not Being in sensuous

[1] See Preface, p. xi.



things; for identifying being with thought, he maintained it to be immutable.' In this view of the identity in question, thought plainly is no mere transitory mode of existence, but, like Being itself, immutable. As we have seen, indeed, to Plato and to Hegel it *is* Being. Mr. Grote, too, is worth quoting on this identity of being and thought. At p. 23, vol. i. of his 'Plato,' he says: 'Though he and others talk of this Something as an Absolute (*i.e.* apart from or independent of his own thinking mind), yet he also uses some juster language (τὸ γὰρ αὐτὸ νοεῖν ἐστίν τε καὶ εἶναι), showing that it is really relative.' Mr. Grote implies here that the meaning of Parmenides is, not that being and thinking are identical, but that the εἶναι, the object, depends on, or is relative to, the νοεῖν, the subject. The bold nonchalant air of a matter of course with which, though knowing all the relative opinions, he thus assumes his own as the only one, is striking, and reminds of Mr. Buckle.

The learned Editor of Professor Butler's *Lectures* (vol. i. p. 348, note) is disposed to assert for Xenophanes not Pantheism, but pure Monotheism; and no one who gives the interpretation to the words of Xenophanes, which is natural to *us*, can fail to sympathize with him. But the other opinion must, I apprehend, be deferred to. The notion of Xenophanes was doubtless developed from the object of perception before him; it was a reduction of the phenomenal world, as it were, to a *vis naturæ*, to a natural power, not to an extra-mundane spirit in relation to whom that phenomenal world were but as accident of his might. Then the natural character of the Greek gods, and the physical nature of all preceding philosophy must be considered. This view, indeed, seems to have been that of the various ancient authorities. Hegel says (*Op. cit.* p. 263), '*We* know of God as a spirit;' and he proceeds to designate the position of Xenophanes 'as an immense step in advance . . . for Greeks who had before them only the world of the senses, and these gods of phantasy.'

Schwegler's statement of the Zenonic antinomies is easy and sufficient. Mr. Lewes, while vindicating its own fairness for the third argument of Zeno in reference to motion, pronounces it nevertheless a fallacy, and even indeed supposes himself to demonstrate it as no less. 'The original fallacy,' he says, 'is in the supposition that Motion is a thing superadded, whereas, as Zeno clearly

saw, it is only a *condition*. In a falling stone there is not the "stone," and a thing called "motion;" otherwise there would be also another thing called "rest." But both motion and rest are names given to express conditions of the stone.' And what of that? It is not probable that Zeno could have blinded himself to the problem that pressed by so simple an expedient as 'motion is a *condition*, not a thing.' Call it a condition if you like, he might have said, all that I say is, that it is a condition, the notion of which involves a contradiction. And certainly Mr. Lewes's allusion to a stone now at rest and now in motion does not remove the contradiction, or even —any more, that is, than the walking of Diogenes, which Mr. Lewes himself drives out of court—apply to it. Nay, in the very next sentences, Mr. Lewes would seem to accept what under the name of a fallacy he leads us to suppose he has just rejected. 'But both motion and rest are names given to express conditions of the stone (or of Diogenes!) Even rest is a positive exertion of force. Rest is force, resisting an equivalent and opposing force. Motion is force triumphant. It follows that matter is always in motion; which amounts to the same as Zeno's saying, there is no such thing as motion.' Mr. Lewes's conclusion we see then is, that there is no such thing as rest, that matter is always in motion. That is to him a substantial truth, and he admits that Zeno's saying amounts to it; yet his single object all the time has been to expose the 'original fallacy.' Perhaps a 'fallacy' on the 'subjective method,' is now 'a fact' on the 'objective method?' But why then did Mr. Lewes resist the latter method at the hands, or rather at the legs of Diogenes? Then, apart from this, it does not at all assist the matter that the category of *motion* should be transferred to the category of *force*, for the question recurs then again, What is *force?* In fact, what is not only *motion*, or *rest*, or *force*, or *condition*, but what is even '*a thing*,' what a thousand other interests the like, the *Logic* of which would be specially useful to us, and which is to be found in Hegel alone?

A similar conceptive mode of thought attends us, not only in regard to what Mr. Lewes says further, but in regard to what he cites from Mr. Mill. Mr. Mill, assigning to Hobbes the credit of the original distinction, would solve the 'Achilles' fallacy by pointing out that Zeno has confounded in it '*length of time*' with '*number of subdivisions in time*,' or '*an infinite time*' with '*a time which is infinitely divisible*.' Mr. Lewes hereupon very properly remarks (not without debt, possibly to Hegel or some commentator of Hegel*) that Aristotle had named the same distinction when he opposed the *actually finite* to the *potentially infinite*. It is not, then, with reference to the substantial correctness of the distinction (for Aristotle's distinction is certainly correct, while those of Hobbes and Mr. Mill are essentially identical with it), but with respect to that absence of the due logical terms which give not only the true names, but the true precision of notion, or simply the true notion, that we refer to the desirableness of an increased knowledge of Hegel's *Logic* in England. In this reference, indeed, we can see already the superiority of the answer of Aristotle to that of Mr. Mill. To oppose *potentiality* to *actuality*, namely, is, so far as generalization or its language is concerned, a great advance on the opposing of *subdivisions of time* to *length of time*. Aristotle, in other words, has reached the notion in its abstraction; while Mr. Mill (though perfectly successful in effect) has reached the notion only in—so to speak—its sensuous concretion (figurative conception). Consultation of Hegel, however, would still very much improve intelligence here, not only for the light he brings to the position of Aristotle, but for that he brings also to the position in general. It is to Hegel, indeed, that we must look for the true light on all the paradoxes of Zeno, and it is to be hoped that the reader will not neglect him. Meantime, explaining that the general procedure of Hegel is to oppose the *concrete* to the *abstract*, we may summarize the special relative details not too incorrectly perhaps thus:—Quantity is a necessary notion of reason, and it occurs *deduced* in its own place in the science of abstract reason or *logic*. Now, it is the very nature of *quantity*, and as *deduced*, that it should have two *moments*, one of *discretion* (Mr. Mill's '*subdivision*') and one of *continuity* (Mr. Mill's '*length*'). Any *discretum* is, as *quantitative*, a *continuum*, but, as a *continuum*, it contains again a possibility of *discretion*, and again of *continuity*, and so on endlessly. This *and so on endlessly* constitutes the *spurious infinite*, an infinite that only *seems* infinite, or only is infinite to *sensuous opinion* which is blind to its own procedure. That is, if I see



* See the *Secret of Hegel*, vol. i. Pref. p. lii. vol. ii. pp. 269-271; but 'commentator of Hegel' must now be gladly withdrawn (see Mr. Lewes, i. p. 64, 4th edn.).

only continuity, and again only discretion, and yet again only continuity, and so on, pause there is none. But why should I thus vainly alternate the two moments and deceive myself? The *whole relation* is there once for all before me. Quantity is there once for all before me full-summed in its two moments. It is but self-deception when I take the two moments after one another, now this *explicit*, that *implicit*, and again that *explicit*, this *implicit*. The *spurious infinite* is quite gratuitous then, the *true infinite*, the *whole*, is present and summed in the notion quantity. As regards the problems of Zeno in point, then, we oppose the *concrete* to the *abstract*. Quantity implies, we say, in its very notion (a notion duly *deduced* in place), discretion and continuity. In the 'Achilles,' while the continuity is *presupposed* or *implicit*, the discretion is alone *exposed* or *explicit*; hence the difficulty. The solution, then, is: we are not limited to any one moment, but may set quantity under either. Motion, unable to escape from *quantity*, readily traverses the *quantum*. Hegel, then, as we see, answers Zeno by showing that he was correct, but one-sided; while Mr. Mill, on the other hand, answers for his part by simply advancing the *opposite one-sidedness*: he does not, like Hegel, prince of thinkers as he was, bring the *whole*, and *in its place*. I may observe that it is not different with the general Eleatic problem before us. The whole Eleatic difficulty is the separation of the two inseparables, *identity* and *difference*. Mr. Lewes is a great stickler for the *principium identitatis*, and believes, as Sir William Hamilton does, that Hegel confounds logic when he talks of identity and difference in the same breath. But it requires simply consideration to see that *to explain* is not to say, *identity is identity*, but *difference is identity*.

Mr. Grote, while very luminously stating the Zenonic arguments, appears to me very unsatisfactory both as regards special points and the general position. It adds to the unsatisfactoriness, indeed, that, taken in detail, Mr. Grote's assertions are for the most part correct. Hegel states the general position thus:—'That there *is* motion, that there is such a manifestation,—that is not the question. That there is motion is as sensuously certain as that there are elephants. In that sense it never occurred to Zeno to deny motion. (So far there is no difference in Mr. Grote; but the unsatisfactory element is that he



does not announce himself to the same effect as follows.) The question rather is of the truth of motion, or motion, indeed, is to be held *untrue* (in Zeno's view, that is), because the notion of it involves a contradiction; and by this he means to say that *veritable being* cannot be predicated of it.' If for *motion* here we read *plurality*, we shall understand clearly that the general object of Zeno was to retort on the opponents of the Eleatic unity, no less difficulties than those they objected to it. Mr. Grote—to notice a by-point—uses for the Being or the One the term *Ens*. Now, in the first place, does not this uncouth term mislead? Does it not distort, or impregnate with a chimera, the quite homely thought of the Eleatics? Is not, indeed, what I may call the humanity of the position quite lost in it? This humanity is, as I say, the quite homely thought that this great universe must be a One, of which consequently only affirmation can be predicated, while negation must be denied. With this idea of a single life, of a single being before them, what *is*, they thought, cannot be this coming and this going that sense apprehends; there must be that which is, in the midst of it all, and it alone is. Surely this very natural conception does not naturally house in so strange a monster as *Ens*. Does it not transport us to the quiddities of the schoolmen rather, or to the ten sons and Ens their father in Milton? But—returning—what Zeno says generally then is this:—The changeableness and plurality of the everyday world is supposed to contradict the conception of the universe as a single unchangeable being; and I admit that both cannot be correct. Parmenides, however, has, for his part, established the reasonableness of the supposition of unity, and I will now, for my part, prove to you that these elements, change and plurality, involve contradictions, and are therefore incorrect, or untrue to reason. Now the main peculiarity of Mr. Grote is suggested here. The opponents of the Eleatics are represented in the above to be those who, in Mr. Grote's own phrase, regarded the hypothesis of Parmenides as 'obviously inconsistent with the movement and variety of the phenomenal world.' Now this inconsistency is certainly, somewhat perplexingly, an ingredient with Mr. Grote too, but still he holds the adversaries of Zeno to be 'advocates of *absolute* plurality and discontinuousness,' to be 'those who maintained the plurality of absolute substances, each for itself, with absolute attributes, apart from the fact of

sense, and independent of any sensuous subject.' It must be said, however, that in this opinion Mr. Grote stands alone. Mr. Grote himself mentions Tennemann as disagreeing with him; and of all the authorities, English or German, mentioned in these notes, not one supposes 'the reasoning of Zeno' to have been otherwise directed than, as Tennemann holds, 'against the world of sense.' The general conception of the Eleatic position in this reference is, in the words of Erdmann, that 'cognition of sense is deceptive;' and Mr. Grote seems to share it in regard to all the Eleatics, Zeno alone excepted. Nay, what was the meaning of the *promenade* of Diogenes, and was not he an opponent of Zeno? Surely he at least took Zeno to deny the truth of sensuous motion. It is with this view in his mind, however, that Mr. Grote says, in reference to the millet which, sonorous in the bushel, is insonorous in the grain, that Zeno is not reasoning about 'facts of sense, phenomenal and relative, but about things in themselves, absolute and ultra-phenomenal realities.' Yet, again, is not this self-contradictory? What, then, is motion? And, in the immediate case, what is sound? Can we suppose that Zeno, when he argued about motion, referred to something 'absolute and ultra-phenomenal,' and not to what was only sensuously distinguishable? Or that the sound he had in view was not the special one knowledge peculiar to the ear, but sound in itself, sound absolute and ultra-phenomenal? The truth is that what Zeno wants to point out in reference to the millet, as everywhere else, is simply the contradiction which the fact of sense involves or seems to involve, or, as Erdmann says, that the senses cannot keep up with reason. So it was understood by Aristotle, whose answer to Zeno (in regard to vibrations, impressibility, etc.) is, *on that understanding*, as Mr. Grote himself admits, perfectly valid. Though one man cannot lift a ton, a hundred men may, and each man will lend his own impulse. As with these, then, so with the millet. One grain when it falls is not heard, a bushel is, but each grain of the bushel contributed its own share to the general vibration. Nor is the truth here, though in reference to a sensuous fact, relative, but absolute—absolute by the absoluteness of an analytic or identical proposition. If the fall of the thousand grains produced a certain vibration, it is absolutely certain that each grain was there for its own. It is this relativity,



however, which Mr. Grote has alone in mind, and we shall take it up by itself as a whole presently. Here we see that the resolution on the part of Mr. Grote to find Zeno arguing for this relativity in the modern sense has led him not only to convert Zeno's opponents into absolutists, but to be very gratuitously unjust to Aristotle. Zeno's proof of contradiction in the facts of sense that related to the millet held good only so long as the contradiction was not explained; Aristotle explained it; but Mr. Grote rejects the explanation because, alone of all mankind, he believes Zeno not to have been reasoning against the world of sense. But hostility to the solutions of Aristotle is not, on the part of Mr. Grote, limited to the millet problem: it is repeated in the rest. P. 100, Mr. Grote says in a note,—'These four arguments against absolute motion caused embarrassment to Aristotle and his contemporaries;' but that is more than the sentence he quotes from Aristotle warrants. The predicate 'absolute,' attached to 'motion,' is Mr. Grote's own, while the sentence itself gives no warrant whatever to the supposition that the 'embarrassment' *was not resolved*.* P. 103, Mr. Grote says:—'But the purport of Zeno's reasoning is mistaken, when he is conceived as one who wishes to delude his hearers by proving both sides of a contradictory proposition. His contradictory conclusions are elicited with the express purpose of disproving the premisses from which they are derived. For these premisses Zeno himself is not to be held responsible, since he borrows them from his opponents: a circumstance which Aristotle forgets, when he censures the Zenonian arguments as paralogisms, because they assume the Continua, Space and Time, to be discontinuous or divided into many distinct parts. Now this absolute discontinuousness of matter, space, and time was not advanced by Zeno as a doctrine of his own, but is the very doctrine of his opponents, taken up by him for the purpose of showing that it led to contradictory consequences, and thus of indirectly refuting it. The sentence of Aristotle is thus really in Zeno's favour, though apparently adverse to him.' Opposite this, in the margin, we have the words, 'Mistake of supposing Zeno's *reductiones ad absurdum* of an opponent's doctrine to be contradictions of data generalized from experience.' We have here the gratuitous conversion of Zeno's opponents into absolutists, and unfairness to Aristotle clearly expressed. No one

* Aristotle only says:—'There are four arguments of Zeno's about Motion which bring difficulties to those *resolving* them (λύουσιν).'—See Simplicius *apud* Zeller (i. 502, 3d Edn.)

attributes to Zeno any 'wish to delude his hearers by proving both sides of a contradictory proposition.' The sensuous phenomenon was simply generally supposed to contradict the Eleatic noumenon, and Zeno merely sought to show in defence that it contradicted itself. Properly, then, his 'conclusions' are not elicited for 'disproving' any 'premisses,' but to demonstrate incongruities in the sensuous facts objected to him. Zeno, certainly, is not to be held responsible for the facts of sense which were the only premises he borrowed from his opponents; but quite as certainly Aristotle forgot nothing when he objected to Zeno that he assumed space and time to be infinitely divided; for that was the very thing that Zeno did assume. In very truth 'the absolute discontinuousness of matter, space, and time,' *was* 'advanced by Zeno as a doctrine of his own,' and it precisely was *not* 'a doctrine of his opponents.' At least, unless Mr. Grote can disprove it, the historical fact is, that Zeno is the first who signalized what is called the 'infinite divisibility,' and he was led to it in the search of arguments that would throw doubt on the sensuous change and the sensuous plurality of the world of sense. The infinite divisibility was his property then, and not that of his opponents; that of his opponents, on the contrary, was the finite divisibility, the simple motion of sense. But what are we to understand as Mr. Grote's own belief in regard to the infinite divisibility? Are we to suppose him to believe, as he seems to say, that leading to contradictory consequences it indirectly refutes itself? A few years ago there was no dearer toy in the hands of the Aufklärung than the mathematical proof of infinite divisibility; are we to suppose that the adherents of that movement have authoritatively issued their *de par le roi* that the infinite divisibility is now refuted and abandoned? I fear there will be a good many grumblers in camp, for the mathematical proof is still there, however much 'relativity' would seek to ignore all proof whatever, even perhaps its own. This is a point on which the Aufklärung will find itself obliged to make up its mind, and in so doing it will be led into the realms of truth at last. What Zeno wished to reduce to absurdity, then, was the fact of motion as 'generalized from experience,' and not the infinite divisibility as doctrine of his opponents. Nay, this doctrine was expressly his, and it was expressly opposed to the generalization from experience.



Aristotle's sentence, then, was really adverse to Zeno, and not even apparently in his favour. Aristotle, in truth, has very fairly met the general argumentation of Zeno. De Quincey and Sir William Hamilton, excellent Germans, excellent Grecians, both failed to see this in Aristotle, but it escaped not the iron tenacity of Hegel, whom, as we have seen, Mr. Lewes shows good sense in following.

Before concluding this note, I may observe that in Bayle's argument against Aristotle's Zenonic solution (See Hegel, *Gesch. d. Phil.* i. p. 291), there is a circumstance that does not come readily to the surface. Bayle attributes to motion the power of actual infinite division: 'Car le mouvement est une chose, qui a la même vertu que la division; il touche une partie de l'espace sans toucher l'autre, et il touche toutes les unes après les autres; n'est-ce pas les distinguer actuellement?' At first sight this is quite as puzzling as the proof of the geometrician; solution is impossible indeed to any position but that of Hegel. The very language of Bayle, indeed, names a miracle; finite motion is capable of infinite touch, infinite division!

## VII.—*Heraclitus.*

OF terms here, perhaps the only one that requires a word is *becoming*. 'This is the only word in our language,' says Ferrier, 'which corresponds to the γιγνόμενον (or γίγνεσθαι) of the Greeks, but it is an unfortunate word in being both inexpressive and ambiguous. It often stands for the proper, the decent. Of course that is not the sense in which it is here used. It is used in some sort of antithetical relation to Being, a relation which we must endeavour to determine. For in these two words, ἔστι and γίγνεται, ὄν and γιγνόμενον, centres the most cardinal distinction in the Greek philosophy, a distinction corresponding in some degree to our substantial and phenomenal.'

For 460, 500 B.C. is probably preferable as the date when Heraclitus flourished (not was born, as Mr. Lewes says—evidently by a slip of the pen). Mr. Lewes is original, but not enviably so, in representing Heraclitus to regard 'the senses as the sources of all true knowledge.' The truth, on universal authority, would seem to be com-

pletely the reverse. Mr. Ferrier corrects Mr. Lewes's statement on this point, and gives otherwise a very successful account of the philosophy of Heraclitus. Zeller says, that 'the stories told by Diogenes of the misanthropy of Heraclitus are worthless, to say nothing of the salt-less phrase, that while Democritus laughed at all, Heraclitus wept at all.' The schoolboy conceit of the deep Heraclitus and the universal Democritus being the one the crying and the other the laughing philosopher, is surely picturesque to nobody now; surely it is (as Zeller says) uncommonly 'salt-less.' Mr. Grote gives a very full, accurate, and, as usual, felicitous summary of all that is known as regards the doctrines of Heraclitus; but he seems, on the whole, to remain, as it were, outside in his case, and to refuse to accept his lesson (as regards universal reason) in the way it is accepted by the most and the best. Hegel ascribes to Cicero the attribution to Heraclitus of intentional obscurity ('Cicero, *Nat. Deor.* i. 26, etc., has a *mauvaise idée*, as is often the case with him, etc.'); and Mr. Grote says something similar to this; but the attribution is not restricted to Cicero; it is to be found at least repeated in Diogenes Laertius.

## VIII.—*Empedocles.*

COMPARISON with the other historians will demonstrate the excellent taste and judgment of Schwegler in this section. About the place of Empedocles, his value, the position of his philosophy, etc., there are many disputes, and we have little but these to read anywhere else under his name. But Schwegler avoids all that, and assigns quietly what is at once reasonable and correct. Hegel, though following the usual order in his lectures, was in the habit of characterizing Empedocles as the precursor of Anaxagoras; his reason being that there was in Empedocles a certain 'stammer,' as Aristotle said, of the idea of design. Michelet, then, in editing Hegel's *History of Philosophy*, actually places Empedocles immediately before Anaxagoras, assigning (ingeniously) as additional reason that Empedocles, vacillating between the one of Heraclitus and the many of Leucippus and adopting both as his presuppositions, constitutes in this very vacillation and adoption the transition to the causal unity of Anaxagoras. Hegel is very short on Empedocles,



but he is led to use several phrases that throw welcome light on his own views. Erdmann finds in Empedocles a synthesis of all the philosophers that preceded him from Thales to Heraclitus without exclusion of a single link. Mr. Grote does Empedocles full justice. Mr. Lewes has once again a position of unenviable singularity here; placing Empedocles even after Anaxagoras. But surely Hegel's understanding of Aristotle, both as regards the time when Anaxagoras wrote, and the mere approach on the part of Empedocles to the great conception of design, cannot well be resisted. Zeller too (i. p. 707), accepts the interpretation of Hegel, and gives (i. 558, 4) reasons for the position usually assigned to Empedocles which one can hardly refuse. In truth Zeller and Hegel, and in connexion with Aristotle and Plato, are quite irresistible. Erdmann, too, supports the same view, as also—a name we may mention to Mr. Lewes—Thomas Taylor. One recurs again with satisfaction to the simplicity, yet competent fulness, of Schwegler.

## IX. *The Atomists.*

MR. LEWES holds Hegel to regard Democritus 'as the successor of Heraclitus, and the predecessor of Anaxagoras.' This, however, is not more correct than a preceding allegation, that the same Hegel held Empedocles to be 'the precursor of the Atomists.' The statements are self-discrepant, and if correct, would rest only on the formality of external arrangement. Hegel directly names Empedocles 'a Pythagorean Italic that inclined to the Ionics,' and, as we have seen, he preferred to consider his doctrines directly before those of Anaxagoras. Then whatever external place be assigned to Leucippus and Democritus, Hegel says of these that, 'in continuing the Eleatic school, they incline to the Italics.' Mr. Lewes differs in a more important respect from Hegel's view of Atomism, when he seems to regard it, as he did that of Heraclitus, as a *sensational* system. 'Ideality of sense,' Hegel calls the main feature in Atomism: the 'atom and the nothing' appear to him 'ideal principles,' and surely with reason. It is a harder saying of Hegel when he describes Atomism as 'showing universal quality or transition to the universal;' but this is a deeply meaning characterisation of the fact that the

Atomistic principle was a universal with transition to the particular, or that the universal atom was adequate to explain all particular manifestations. Hegel asserts, in opposition to Tennemann who represents atomism to be 'recognition of the empirical world as the only objectively real world,' that 'the atom and the void are not empirical things: Leucippus says, it is not by the senses that we know the true; and thereby he originated an idealism in the higher sense, not a merely subjective one.' The difference of Hegel from all the others is that he not only reports, but thinks what he reports; and thus his history has a value to which that of all the others is insignificant. Space fails here, however, for any further exemplification of his strangely meaning writing, of which the section before us is full.

Mr. Lewes says,—'The Atomism of Democritus has not been sufficiently appreciated as a speculation. Leibnitz, many centuries afterwards, was led to a doctrine essentially similar; his celebrated "Monadologie" is but Atomism with a new terminology.' Section xxxiii. will show to the reader how very groundless this statement essentially is. Again: 'Not only did these thinkers concur in their doctrine of atomism, but also, as we have seen, in their doctrine of the origin of knowledge: a coincidence which gives weight to the supposition that in both minds one doctrine was dependent on the other.' Mr. Lewes ascribes to the Atomists a quite Lockian theory of knowledge: are we to suppose then that Leibnitz also participated in such a theory?

Mr. Grote's statement of the Atomists is faithful, full, and well-arranged. Modern relativity, however, is the only philosophical position of which he still indicates approbation. Hegel attributes it as 'a great merit' to Leucippus that he 'distinguished between the universal and the sensible, the primary and the secondary, the essential and the inessential qualities.' Mr. Grote is of another way of thinking: 'Theophrastus,' he says, 'denies this distinction altogether: and denies it with the best reason: not many of his criticisms on Democritus are so just and pertinent as this one.' A distinction entertained by such thinkers as Kant and Hegel is not to be so summarily dismissed, though plainly the absoluteness of the primary qualities will not suit the taste of a Relativist.



## X.—*Anaxagoras.*

FROM the axiom that only '*like* can act upon *like*,' Anaxagoras, we are told by Mr. Lewes (i. p. 101), formed his *homœomeriæ*. This is difficult to reconcile with Mr. Grote's statement from Theophrastus that Anaxagoras explained sensation by the action of *unlike* upon *unlike*. This latter, indeed, and not the former, has been universally regarded as his special principle—(see Zeller vol. i. p. 699). Surely, too, Mr. Lewes is very unhappy in assuming Aristotle to have regarded the system of Anaxagoras as *inferior* to that of Empedocles. Aristotle (see Zeller, vol. i. 558, 4) almost uniformly depreciated Empedocles, while everybody knows that Anaxagoras, in comparison with the rest, struck him as a sober man among random babblers. Socrates, too, similarly expresses himself in the *Phædo*, and by all the latest and best German authorities Anaxagoras is represented as the initiator of that transference of the problem from matter to mind which directly introduced the subjective theories of the Sophists, and the objective philosophies of Socrates, Plato, and Aristotle. Mr. Lewes protests against the application by Hegel of such a name as eclectic to Anaxagoras. Hegel, as with such reality and depth of knowledge was alone possible to him, places and characterizes Anaxagoras as I have indicated. In fact, if he saw 'land' in Heraclitus, in Anaxagoras he sees 'light;' and he assigns to the latter an influence at once original and supereminent. It is possible, for all that, that he may have used the word *eclectic* in reference to Anaxagoras, but, if so, I know not where. Mr. Lewes attributes to Anaxagoras the distinction that 'the senses perceive *phenomena*, but do not and cannot observe *noumena*,' and this distinction he calls 'an anticipation of the greatest discovery of psychology, though seen dimly and confusedly by Anaxagoras.' Are we to understand, then, that the greatest discovery of psycholgy is, that the senses cannot find quality in the unqualified, taste in the tasteless, sound in the soundless, colour in the colourless, etc.? Is it so certain that *dimness* to such an insight would be inferiority?

Many other points one might discuss with Mr. Lewes, but for the sake of space they must be omitted. We may remark, however, that at page 79 he seems to agree

with Mr. Grote's low estimate of the *Nous*, while at page 83 he quotes Simplicius in such a manner as to restore that principle to all its pristine dignity. To Mr. Grote's estimate alluded to we now pass. There is nothing in the fragments of Anaxagoras now remaining, Mr. Grote says, to justify the belief that the author himself proposed the Nous '(according to Aristotle's expression) as the cause of all that was good in the world, assigning other agencies as the causes of all evil (Mr. Grote's reference is Aristotle's well-known *locus* that characterizes Anaxagoras as a sober man among babblers, because he had seen that neither material principles nor a mere moving force could account for the beauty and adaptation of the course and structure of the universe, and had accordingly proposed in room of these a thinking being, an intelligence; as for Anaxagoras "assigning other agencies," etc., I can see no hint of this in Aristotle, who, indeed (Metaph. xii. 10), actually blames Anaxagoras for not having made a *contrary to the good*, etc. Mr. Grote proceeds:) It is not characterized by him as a person—not so much as the Love and Enmity of Empedocles. It is not one but multitudinous, and all its separate manifestations are alike, differing only as greater or less. It is in fact identical with the soul, the vital principle or vitality, belonging not only to all men and animals, but to all plants also. It is one substance, or form of matter among the rest, but thinner than all of them (thinner than even fire or air), and distinguished by the peculiar characteristic of being absolutely unmixed. It has moving power and knowledge, like the Air of Diogenes the Apolloniate: it initiates movement, and it knows about all the things which either pass into or pass out of combination. It disposes or puts in order all things that were, are, or will be; but it effects this only by acting as a fermenting principle. . . . Anaxagoras appears to conceive his Nous as one among numerous other real agents in Nature, material like the rest, yet differing from the rest. . . . (He agrees with Zeller) that the Anaxagorean Nous is not conceived as having either immateriality or personality.' This, then, evidently is a very low estimate of the Nous. Despite the express cause assigned by Aristotle for his selecting of Anaxagoras, the principle of this Anaxagoras shall be but a *material* one among the rest! How differently Anaxagoras himself seems to speak! Nous to him is infinite,



absolute, mixed with nothing, alone by itself, the purest and subtlest of all things; it is omniscient and omnipotent; it is dominant especially in what has soul, whether greater or less; it has disposed all things into a world; nothing is separated from another but Nous; all Nous is similar, both the greater and the less; but no other thing is similar to another. That is how Anaxagoras himself expresses himself. Then surely it is quite evident from what Socrates says in the *Phædo* that the understanding of the countrymen of Anaxagoras was that his principle was a designing mind. Nor does Aristotle dissent from this, but, on the contrary, he confirms it by a hundred expressions. The voice of antiquity in general, indeed, is wholly to the same effect. So with the moderns—so with Hegel in particular, who in Anaxagoras sees 'light' at last, and the immediate transition to the subjective thought of Protagoras and the objective thought of Socrates. Mr. Grote stands alone—alone against the world—unsupported, as we shall presently see, even by Zeller. But a theological principle re-appearing in Anaxagoras after so many philosophers, and even in the almost scientific age of Diogenes and Democritus, would not have been to the mind of Auguste Comte, and so neither is it to the mind of Mr. Grote. Theology, Metaphysics, Illumination, that is the course of things in which Mr. Grote believes in general, and that is the course of things which Mr. Grote would see in Greece. Socrates is the most enlightened of Greeks, and to him the transition must be influences of *information* only, not Anaxagoras with his disturbing Nous, but Diogenes, Democritus, Zeno, and Gorgias the Leontine. Surely, however, no one can honestly weigh even the very erudition of the notes of the Germans—say of Zeller alone—and entertain any doubt as to what the nature of his belief should be. It is unnecessary to follow Mr. Grote into all the particulars of what I hold to be his general distortion of the principle of Anaxagoras. With one or two of the main props the whole fabric falls. Any one reading Mr. Grote alone would go away with the belief that Zeller denied the immateriality and the personality of the Nous; but this would—really—be a mistake, and I do not believe any one would be more discontented with it than Zeller himself. Yet Zeller uses the words—in such a context, however, as converts them into something very different from

what they seem in the note of Mr. Grote. Zeller's description of the Nous is to this effect:—'It (vol. i. p. 679) is a thinking being, a spirit, the ordering and moving force that from the homœomeric materials creates the world. The Anaxagorean fragments do not in any general manner declare the reasons of this assumption, but these are implied in the qualities which distinguish the Nous from the materials. These qualities are three, unity, power, and knowledge. The Nous is alone, unmixed with anything, separate from all, for only in freedom from any foreign element can it have power over all. It is of all things the finest and purest. . . . Absolute power over matter, further, belongs to the Nous, from which proceeds all movement of matter. Unlimited knowledge finally it must possess, for only so will it be able to order all for the best. The Nous, consequently, must be simple, as otherwise it could not be omnipotent and omniscient, and it must be these to be the fashioner of the world; the fundamental feature of the doctrine of the Nous, and the one to which the ancients give the greatest prominence, lies in the notion of the world-forming power. We must assume therefore that this is essentially the point from which Anaxagoras was led to his doctrine. He was unable to explain motion from mere matter, and still less the motion under law of the beautiful and designful universe, nor would he appeal to unintelligible necessity or to chance, and so he assumed an incorporeal being, the source of movement and arrangement.' Zeller further admits Anaxagoras to have had in mind the analogy of the human intelligence, and so far to have conceived his Nous as in some sort personal (*fürsichseiendes, erkennendes Wesen*); but he does not believe at the same time Anaxagoras to have possessed quite pure conceptions either of the immateriality or of the personality of the Nous. There can be no doubt that Anaxagoras had immateriality in his eye despite the defects which he (Zeller) signalizes. These defects are that the Nous is described imperfectly in general, and in particular as only a finer matter, and participant of the extension of things. But in a note Zeller tells us that these objections are founded partly on 'the words the finest of all things, partly and particularly on what is said of the existence of the Nous in things.' Now, neither objection has any weight. People believe now-a-days that the soul is immaterial, and yet many, so believing,



would not hesitate to talk of it as the finest or subtlest thing of all. Why, the word here for *finest* is literally the most free from husk, a metaphor surely very much in place in reference to what was incorporeal. As for the presence of the Nous in things in such manner that these might appear to possess parts of it, and that 'greater or less Nous' might be spoken of in their reference, a precisely similar mode of speech might legitimately be used by any modern Theist. God is, and God is reason, and all things, equally participant in reason, do in a certain sort at the same time exhibit it *unequally*. Against the personality of the Nous, Zeller brings forward no other objections. In fact the whole negative of Zeller is merely the charge of imperfection, and, only supported as it is, must be pronounced a very small one. A similar negative he indicates as possible in the case of Aristotle, and yet he urges it not, but refers to this very possibility as pleading for Anaxagoras. Nay, as regards the passage quoted by Mr. Grote, Zeller says in the note that he has not the smallest reason for denying a theistic element in the doctrine of Anaxagoras, and it is incorrect that he has denied it: 'this only I have maintained, and maintain, that the breach between spirit and nature was begun but not completed by Anaxagoras, that the Nous was not conceived as a subject actually independent of nature, but, if on one side as incorporeal and intelligent, still on another side as an element distributed to the individual beings, and operative in the manner of a natural power.' Apart from the slightness of Zeller's own supporting grounds, and apart from all that can be urged for the purely intellectual character of the Nous from Plato, Aristotle, and elsewhere, it is evident that we might still accept Zeller's general conclusion without being untrue to the universal conviction on the subject. In short, Zeller's position will now be understood, as well as the impossibility of his sympathizing in the smallest degree with the general description of Mr. Grote in reference to a Nous that is not so personal as the Empedoclean Love and Hate, that is a matter among the rest, that has only knowledge, etc., as the Air of Diogenes, that acts only as a fermenting principle, that simply 'stirs up' rotatory motion, that is one among numerous other real agents, etc. Neither do I think that Zeller would judge otherwise than Plato, Aristotle, and Hegel judged of Anaxagoras' 'application' of his principle, that it was one,

namely, that went pretty much 'into the air.' But though he could not apply it, Anaxagoras certainly proposed the principle, and it was a universal and preponderating principle, and no mere equal among many equals, in the application of all of which Anaxagoras was quite 'consistent' according to Mr. Grote, and quite free from the known charges of Plato and Aristotle, to an opposite effect. The conclusion of the whole matter is that of Schwegler, that the Nous was an immaterial principle, but still physically conditioned.

## XI.—*The Sophists.*

THE attention of the reader is particularly solicited to this section, and to the transition to Socrates; for it is here that we begin to get a clear view of *the* lesson of philosophy—the distinction, namely, between subjectivity and objectivity, and our consequent duty.

There are many passages in Schwegler which leave us without difficulty as to how the subjective side is to be understood. In section xxiii., for example, he speaks thus:—'The feeling that philosophy must be emancipated from its previous state of pupilage and servitude strengthened; a struggle towards greater independency of research awoke; and though none durst turn as yet against the church itself, attempts were made,' etc. . . . 'It originated in a scientific interest, and awoke consequently the spirit of free inquiry and a love of knowledge; it converted objects of faith into objects of thought; raised men from the sphere of unconditional belief into the sphere of doubt, of search, of understanding.' . . . 'Another principle was thus brought into the world, the authority of reason, the principle of intellect,' . . . 'the spirit of inquiry, the longing for light, the advancing intelligence of the time,' . . . 'the longing on the part of consciousness for autonomy, for freedom from the fetters of authority,' . . . 'a rupture of thought with authority, a protest against the shackles of the *positive*, a return of consciousness from its self-alienation into self,' . . . 'nature and the moral laws of nature, humanity as such, one's own heart, one's own conscience, subjective conviction, in short, the rights of the subject began at last to assume some value.' . . . 'Scientific inquiry not only destroyed a variety of transmitted errors and prejudices,



but, what was highly important, it turned the thoughts and attention of men to the mundane, to the actual; fostering and encouraging the habit of reflection, the feeling of self-dependence, the awakened spirit of scrutiny and doubt: the position of a science of observation and experiment presupposes an independent self-consciousness on the part of the individual, a wresting of himself loose from authority and the creed of authority,—in a word, it presupposes scepticism: hence the originators of modern philosophy, Bacon and Descartes, began with scepticism.' In reading these phrases, would not every one fancy that it was Mr. Buckle wrote them, and not Schwegler? They strike, indeed, the very key-note of the central thought of Buckle, and, from end to end, I know not that there is anything else to be found in Buckle. That 'awakened spirit of scrutiny and doubt' is the very voice of him. It is not a voice restricted to Mr. Buckle, however, but belongs to Mr. Grote as well. What it insists on, then, is wholly the 'rights of the subject.' These rights the reader will probably perfectly understand from the quotations made for him: he will do well, however, to read the whole section, as well as those on Socrates, Plato, the French Illumination, the German Illumination, and probably others that may of themselves occur to him. Generally as regards the Sophists, I presume I may hold it as established fact that Mr. Grote's vindication of them founds on their 'advanced thinking,' and particularly on their supposed defence of the rights of the subject. It was Hegel who began this vindication of the Sophists, and Mr. Grote's reason was Hegel's reason. Hegel has been followed in this by every German historian of weight who has written after him. Brandis and Ritter, it is true, take a somewhat darker view of the individuals concerned, but Zeller, Schwegler, Erdmann, etc., all literally follow Hegel. Mr. Grote, then, is evidently right so far. But this *so far* is only one half. Defence of the rights of the subject, this is one half of the action of the Sophists, and in this they are defensible, justifiable, laudable. Denial of the rights of the object, again, this is the other half of the action of the Sophists, and in that they are indefensible, unjustifiable, and positively censurable. Now Hegel and the rest see this latter half quite as clearly, and fail not to make it quite as prominent as the other one. Nay, the English historians to whom we are in the habit of referring in these notes, have,

one and all of them, though only perhaps more or less imperfectly, given name to this same half,—one and all of them, except Mr. Grote. Mr. Grote alone accentuates the rights of the subject and a warranted relativity: Mr. Grote alone forgets, knows not, or names not, the rights of the object and a warranted irrelativity. But surely in these days, when M. Comte himself, with the approbation of Mr. Mill and Mr. Lewes, insists on the one sole duty of affirmation and construction, it is out of place and an anachronism, for Mr. Grote to insist only on the duty of the negative, on the *Aufklärung*, pure and simple, as it existed a hundred years ago, and as—with only a change for the weaker and the worse—it has been revived by Mr. Buckle. Surely it is time to leave these unhappy Priests alone; surely, in these days of agitation against Decalogues and Confessions of Faith, the sin of the Priests is no longer that of unpliancy to the Aufklärung! But, as is evident, space for discussion fails, and it must suffice to oppose to Schwegler's expression of the rights of the subject, the same authority's expression of the rights of the object. We can only select, indeed, a few phrases from the section on the Sophists as follows:—'The Sophists introduced, in the form of a general religious and political *Aufklärung* (illumination) the principle of subjectivity, though at first only negatively, or as destroyer of all that was established in the opinions of existing society; and this continued till Socrates opposed to this principle of empirical subjectivity that of absolute subjectivity, or intelligence in the form of a free moral will, and asserted, as against the world of sense, thought to be the positively higher principle, and the truth of all reality.' . . . 'The right of the Sophists is the right of subjectivity, of self-consciousness (that is to say, the demand that all that is to be acknowledged by me shall establish itself as reasonable to my consciousness); its unright is the regarding of this subjectivity as only finite, empirical, egoistic subjectivity (that is to say, the demand that my contingent will and personal opinion shall have the decision of what is reasonable); its right is to have established the principle of free-will, of self-conviction; its unright is to have set upon the throne the contingent will and judgment of the individual.' . . . 'To win a veritable world of objective thought, an absolute import, to set in the place of empirical subjectivity, absolute or ideal subjectivity, objective will, and rational thought,—this now was the task which Socrates



undertook and achieved.' For conviction it would be necessary to quote the whole passage (pp. 37, 38), but these phrases will strike the key-note, and induce the reader to inquire further for himself into what is meant by 'objective thought,' 'universality, universal validity, in a word, objectivity.' What Hegel writes in this connexion is the original of all this, of all that concerns the Sophists under both aspects, and it is something singularly deep-working, exhaustive, and true. Gladly would we translate, gladly would we follow up with quotations from Erdmann and Zeller, but space forbids, and we must be content with reference. Mr. Grote leaves us in no doubt as to his position here, even without consideration of his express chapter on the Sophists in his *History of Greece*. In a note to his *Plato* (vol. ii. p. 361) we read as follows:—'This is the objection (Subjectivism) taken by Schwegler, Prantl, and other German thinkers, against the Protagorean doctrine. . . . These authors both say that the Protagorean canon, properly understood, is right, but that Protagoras laid it down wrongly. They admit the principle of Subjectivity as an essential aspect of the case in regard to truth; but they say that Protagoras was wrong in appealing to individual, empirical, accidental subjectivity of each man at every varying moment, whereas he ought to have appealed to an ideal or universal subjectivity. "What ought to be held true, right, good, etc." (says Schwegler), "must be decided doubtless by *me*, but by *me* so far forth as a rational and thinking being. Now, *my* thinking, *my* reason, is not something specially belonging to me, but something common to all rational beings, something universal; so far therefore as I proceed as a rational and thinking person, my subjectivity is an universal subjectivity. Every thinking person has the consciousness that what he regards as right, duty, good, evil, etc., presents itself not merely to him as such, but also to every rational person, and that, consequently, his judgment possesses the character of universality, universal validity; in one word, Objectivity." Here it is explicitly asserted that, wherever a number of individual men employ their reason, the specialties of each disappear, and they arrive at the same conclusions—Reason being a guide impersonal as well as infallible. And this same view is expressed by Prantl in other language, when he reforms the Protagorean doctrine by saying, "Das Denken ist der

Mass der Dinge." To me this assertion appears so distinctly at variance with notorious facts, that I am surprised when I find it advanced by learned historians of philosophy, who recount the very facts which contradict it. Can it really be necessary to repeat that the reason of one man differs most materially from that of another —and the reason of the same person from itself, at different times—in respect of the arguments accepted, the authorities obeyed, the conclusions embraced? The impersonal Reason is a mere fiction; the universal Reason is an abstraction, belonging alike to all particular reasoners, consentient or dissentient, sound or unsound, etc. Schwegler admits the Protagorean canon only under a reserve which nullifies its meaning. To say that the Universal Reason is the measure of truth is to assign no measure at all. The Universal Reason can only make itself known through an interpreter. The interpreters are dissentient; and which of them is to hold the privilege of infallibility? Neither Schwegler nor Prantl is forward to specify who the interpreter is who is entitled to put dissentients to silence; both of them keep in the safe obscurity of an abstraction—"Das Denken"—the Universal Reason. Protagoras recognises in each dissentient an equal right to exercise his own reason, and to judge for himself. In order to show how thoroughly incorrect the language of Schwegler and Prantl is, when they talk about the Universal Reason as unanimous and unerring, I transcribe from another eminent historian of philosophy a description of what philosophy has been ("Une multitude d'hypothèses . . . une diversité d'opinions . . . des sectes, des partis même, des disputes interminables, des spéculations stériles, des erreurs," etc. etc.), from ancient times down to the present.'

We shall not in detail criticise these deliverances (in which Schwegler's reader will of himself perceive errors as regards Protagoras, italics, etc.); but a word will prove useful on the question at stake. The terms *subjective* and *objective* have acquired now so many shades of meaning that they often perplex. The universal English sense as yet is, That that is subjective which belongs to a cognizing subject, and that objective which belongs to a cognized object. The cognized object, again, if itself mental, is subjectivo-objective; if not mental, but (at least relatively) material, it is objectivo-objective. These are not the important German senses, however, and they



are not those of the citation from Schwegler. Subjectivity, as there used, is what is *mine*, and mine only; it is not yours, it is not his; it is *mine*, and distinctive of *me*. Objectivity, again, as used in the same citation, is neither mine, nor yours, nor his, and yet mine, and yours, and his; it is not proper and peculiar to any single one of us in his own separate and individual personality or originality—it is common to us all in our universal humanity. In short, the one is *accidens individui*, the other *differentia generis*. The element of subjectivity, now, being restricted to A as A, to B as B, etc., can only exist as subjectivities, a chaos of miscellanies, of individual units, of infinite differences. These differences must remain for ever different, disjunct, isolated, beside one another; for they have nothing in common. It is otherwise with the element of objectivity. While subjectivities are insusceptible of comparison, objectivity may be compared with objectivity, and so at length a system formed in which we all meet. What is subjective, then, as incapable of comparison and *communication*, is, for humanity as humanity, valueless; while objectivity, on the contrary, as capable of both, is, in that respect, alone valuable, and invaluable. Subjective truth, then, is truth for *this* subject, or *that* subject. Objective truth is truth for this subject *and* that subject. Evidently, then, objective truth is independent of the subject as subject. The object is his filling, his contents; it is truly he. He, apart from that object, is empty, nothing; but still it is independent of him. He rather is dependent on it. As a subject his only right with reference to the object, is that he should find it his, that it should be brought home to his subjective conviction. That is the only truth or right of the principle of subjectivity. The truth or right of the principle of objectivity again is an absolute truth or right: it is binding on every subject—on every subject whose right of subjectivity has been adequately respected. For these ideas it is impossible to find better expression than that of Schwegler (xi. 6), as referred to by Mr. Grote. Now, on the practical side, this is the best outcome of Kant and Hegel; this is *the* outcome of German philosophy; all else there is but its application. When we consider that it is this that is in question in the citation from Schwegler, is not the naïve astonishment of Mr. Grote at such a doctrine positively amusing? *Relativity*, according to Mr. Grote, im-

parts, in view of their equal right, universal benignancy towards all opinions. Here, however, Mr. Grote's feelings are too much for him. He is forced to declare his 'surprise' at an assertion 'so distinctly at variance with *notorious* facts;' and he cannot help exclaiming, with the air of a shocked, stunned, but still authoritative preceptor, 'Can it really be necessary to repeat?' What Mr. Grote repeats is, that 'the reason of one man differs most materially from that of another;' but have not the Germans an equal right to exclaim to Mr. Grote, 'Can it really be necessary to repeat that the reason of one man *does not* differ most materially from that of another, but, on the contrary, the reason of one man is essentially identical with that of another?'* It is due to Mr. Grote, however, to examine his position, as contained in the overlying text on the Theætetus more at large.

From this we soon learn that Mr. Grote's general philosophical creed is that which has been named of Relativity. One's first difficulty is what is meant by the term. *Relativists* in England are now-a-days spoken of with awe. They have inscribed on the universe the great principle of relativity, we hear. When we ask what this great principle is, however, we are referred to the appearance of the skin under a microscope, or to the variety of existent and non-existent opinions, perhaps—in fact, we are left at last with the word Relativity, and an empirical example or two. We should like to know what relativity is, where it begins, how it works itself out, where it ends, etc., but no one can show us that—no one thinks of showing us that. This, however, ought not to be so difficult—Hegel's system is *that*. An Absolute is impossible without—is only through and for, a Relative. *The* Absolute, then, will be *the* Relativity—or the *System* of all existent relativities or relations. Instead of giving us this complete relativity—relativity as it is and works—the bones and skeleton of a universe—Mr. Grote gives us this bare phrase only, *The implication of Subject and Object*. There can be no object without a subject, says Mr. Grote, and therefore relativity is the whole and sole philosophy. If the phrase without the thing relativity dissatisfied, here we are perplexed with the reason for the general doctrine itself. Surely it is a commonplace that cognition is impossible without the coincidence of an object and a subject. So far as I know, no human being ever denied that. Mr. Grote evidently speaks, however, as if there were those in the world who pretend to know an absolute, and an absolute by Mr. Grote is defined (vol. i. p. 23) as 'something apart from or independent of one's own thinking mind.' This, then, is simply a mistake. Hegel is probably an absolutist to Mr. Grote, but Hegel's idea of cognition is Mr. Grote's own. Inseparability of subject and object is one of Hegel's arguments against what is called *immediate knowledge*. Hegel, however, did not find this single inseparability the instant open Sesame into an entire new philosophy. Had he done here, indeed, as Mr. Grote has done, we never should have had a philosophy at all. Sensation without a subject, idea without a subject, that is impossible, Hegel might have said, but that is not much; *cela va sans dire*. The important thing is to see that sensations and ideas in a subject constitute the universe, and that philosophy will be an explanation of these and of it. Philosophy, in short, will have for result relativity, but relativity—in system.

* Mr. Grote forgot Heraclitus:—Διὸ δεῖ ἕπεσθαι τῷ ξυνῷ· τοῦ λόγου δὲ ἐόντος ξυνοῦ ζώουσιν οἱ πολλοὶ ὡς ἰδίαν ἔχοντες φρόνησιν; and also Sextus:—ἃ δὲ ἂν ἰδιάσωμεν ψευδόμεθα.



But when we read on, and get more familiar with Mr. Grote's conception of the relation between subject and object, we find that Mr. Grote's relativity does not depend on this relation as a relation at all. Mr. Grote's relativity is due not to the relation between the two terms, subject and object, but wholly and solely to the peculiar *nature* of one of the terms, the subject. Mind, it seems, is so peculiar a Gorgon that it transforms objects into its own nature; and so, no two minds being alike, no two objects are alike, and therefore it is that all is relative. All this is said a hundred times in the exposition of the Theætetus, and quotation is almost superfluous. For exemplification, however, it is impossible altogether to dispense with an extract. P. 328, Mr. Grote says:—'My intellectual activity—my powers of remembering, imagining, ratiocinating, combining, etc., are a part of my mental nature, no less than my powers of sensible perception: my cognitions and beliefs must all be determined by, or relative to, this mental nature: to the turn and development which all these various powers have taken in *my individual* case. However multifarious the mental activities may be, *each man has his own peculiar* allotment and manifestations thereof, to which his cognitions must be relative.' And again (p. 335): 'Object is implicated with, limited or measured by, Subject: a doctrine proclaiming the relativeness of all objects, perceived, con-

ceived, known, or felt—and the omnipresent involution of the perceiving, conceiving, knowing, or feeling Subject; *the object varying with the subject.* "As things appear to me, so they are to me; as they appear to you, so they are to you." This theory is just and important, if rightly understood and explained.' Mr. Grote's assertion of subjective truth as the only truth cannot then, in view of such extracts (which might easily be multiplied a hundredfold), for an instant be doubted. It will be found, indeed, that the theory spoken of, as 'understood and explained' by Mr. Grote, amounts to the proposition of Protagoras in its unrestricted sense. Nay, Mr. Grote is even willing to waive dispute, and accept the Platonic expression itself in regard to this proposition, on condition only of a small addition. *That every opinion of every man is true*, this, to be perfectly accurate for Mr. Grote, requires but the simple addition of—*to that man himself.* It is in this sense that he says, p. 351, 'The dog, the horse, the new-born child, the lunatic, is each a measure of truth to himself.' Now, this can only mean that what the man, the dog, the horse, the new-born child, the lunatic feels, *he* feels. But do we need a philosophy of philosophies to tell us that? That this theory, if a theory, is 'just,' there can be no doubt, but 'important'—that I fear it must remain only for Mr. Grote. What is true and right for a man, is true and right for that man. This, indeed, on its first aspect, is but an idle tautology, and a man would as little think of contradicting it as he would think of contradicting any other identical proposition. The planet is a planet, the stone is a stone; we are all agreed on these truths, and quite as much on these others, that what the man, or child, or lunatic, or dog, or horse feels, he feels. Not one of us, however, would, in such truths, see progress—the slightest quiver of an advance. Mr. Grote must mean more, then, than that identity is identity. But this *more* can only be that the proposition, what is true and right to a man, is true and right to that man, constitutes the single definition of truth, the single definition of right. The reason of one man differs, Mr. Grote says, most materially from that of another; consequently the truth of one man differs most materially from that of another; and there is no truth whatever in existence, but this the truth for each. As a universal reason is a fiction, so a universal truth is a fiction. This, then, is the proposition of Protagoras pure and simple. There



is no call for Mr. Grote's tautological addition; that tautology is, as said, idle. Mr. Grote does in very deed categorically aver: There is no truth but the truth for each. Truth, then, is as multiform as the particular minds. No object is independent of the particular subjects; these subjects are many, and all different; and truth, consequently, is particular to each particular. The self colours all, the object cannot be given uncoloured, and each self has its own colour. It is this assumed necessary subjectivity of all objects that is the source of the singular alliance of modern Relativity and modern Psychology (English both) with Berkeley. These new allies of Berkeley, however, give a strange material turn to the idealism of that philosopher: at least, they certainly accentuate the individual subject, and on his sensuous or material side. It is to be admitted, however, that the brain may be regarded as ideal, with thought as relatively a function of it; and, in that case, we may hope that the ideal scalpel will be more successful than the real one in detecting the bridge between what must still be called—at least relatively—matter and mind. Truth, then, is each individual's proper and peculiar colour, and no two individuals are alike. Neither, then, are any two colours alike, are any two truths alike. Each truth, consequently, as equally authentic, is equally legitimate. There is no criterion of truth and right, but what each particular man feels and thinks—feels and thinks at the time. Either Mr. Grote's entire speech goes to this, or, as said, to the most trivial tautology. Well then, if it be so, what is true and right to me in feeling and thought, shall also be true and right to me in will and action; and as one man is as good as another, every man has a perfect right to do as he likes. This is too evidently absurd, however, and, though this is really what is *explicit* in the teaching of Mr. Grote, there is something quite different *implicit.*

Mr. Grote started with the relation, but presently deserted it for one of the extremes, and to it sacrificed the other. This, indeed, is his single operation: he has destroyed the object before the subject. In reference to any relation, however, involving, as it necessarily does, both terms, no one can *express* either without *implying* the other. And this is the case here. In *explicating* subjectivity, Mr. Grote has only been correspondently *implicating* objectivity. That is a natural dialectic which

may be recommended to the attention of every Relativist. Proofs of this correspondent implication of objectivity exist, as said, in every sentence of Mr. Grote that—consciously—has no aim but to explicate subjectivity. We can only take an example or two. 'Comparisons and contrasts,' he says, p. 341, 'gradually multiplied between one consciousness and another lead us to distinguish,' etc. There is, then, necessarily, an element capable of comparison and communication in us, and the result of this process can only be a body of generalized distinctions. But this element is not possibly the subjective element: we cannot possibly compare even our smells or our tastes; what we can possibly compare are only our thoughts: the 47th proposition of Euclid is the same for all of us. P. 349, 'It is for the reader to judge how far my reasons are satisfactory to his mind;' what does that appeal amount to? Why, to this, that both writer and reader may meet in *judgment*, that there is a common ground between them, and that the writer hopes he has been true to it. Mr. Grote admits (p. 352) all men not to be equally wise; but is it possible to talk so without the admission of a standard? He only who can feel heat *qua* heat knows the degrees of it, and so of wisdom. In fact, the moment you say *not equally* the principle of subjective relativity is virtually abandoned, a new test, a new criterion, a new standard, is introduced; it is no longer *I* for myself, but *another* for me, and that because he possesses not only subjective wisdom but objective wisdom. That is, the moment we say *not equally* we have left subjectivity, and entered objectivity. Page 351, Mr. Grote says, that though the dog, the horse, the new-born child, the lunatic, etc., is a measure of truth each to himself, it is not declared that 'either of them is a measure of truth to me, to you, or to any ordinary bystander.' This, *explicitly*, is the hopeless tautology already signalized, each is each, and the standard of truth is the individual. As many individuals, so many standards of truth; no judge, therefore, and consequently no sentence. This is the explication, but the implication is, there *is* a standard of truth. Each is a measure of truth to himself, but he is not a measure of truth to me, etc. (Is this thing to which Mr. Grote explicitly refers *a measure of truth* at all? It were a strange *standard* that were a standard only to one; very strange *standards* these where each has his own!) Implicitly, then, *a* standard, *a* measure, that is, a *common* standard, a *common* measure, is, *re vera*, referred to. What is it? The measure for me, for you, for any ordinary bystander, it is precisely that measure that is alone truth, that is alone wanted. That the particular sentiency is only in the particular sentient is a truism, but it is not, in this reference, *truth*. The truth, *really*, is not that what I feel I feel; that is subjectivity pure and simple; *my* feeling, if only *my* feeling is worthless, is as good as a nonens. Truth begins only when what I feel, *another* feels, when what I think, *another* thinks. Then, and then only, as said, have we entered objectivity. Until the dog, the horse, etc., can introduce us to this region, we may very well leave them alone. In point of fact, does the universe *allow* this measure of truth that the dog is to himself, the horse to himself, the lunatic to himself, etc.? No; dog, horse, lunatic, have to become, each in his place, representatives of the *measure of reason*. And, as for the child, what is it, that is at all seen in it, at all honoured in it? Why, reason, universal reason, man as man. Why is that squalling struggling impotence held at the font, amid the awe-struck faces of grown men and grown women, with all the solemnity of ceremony, with all the sanctity of religion? Possibly these grown men, and women, and all concerned, may seem fools to Mr. Grote. But the one fact present is, that that squalling impotence is implicitly a man, is implicitly reason. For that cause is all the gravity of the solemnity; and for this cause, that the child is *not* a measure of truth even for itself, do fathers and mothers, and godfathers and godmothers there take vows to replace its unreason with their reason till, in the ripeness of time, it is itself, in reason, a freeman of the universe.



How differently the general problem would have seemed to Mr. Grote had he but made both terms of the relation, and equally so, explicit! Did it never occur to Mr. Grote to question what I have called the *Gorgonization* of the object on the part of the subject? This Gorgonization, it is to be admitted, is the belief of all subjective idealism—(the object can only be known in me, in the subject, and therefore it is subjective, and, if subjective, ideal)—but still it is capable of question. Does it not seem absurd to say, that by interposition of mind, by which alone knowledge is possible, knowledge is at the same time impossible? What alone renders something

possible, alone renders it impossible! I know, but, because I know, I do not know! I see, but, because I see, I do not see! Is it a fact, then, that, because both—subject and object—are present in cognition, the one must be destroyed by the other, and not that cognition may be made true, but that it may be made false? In a word, is it not worth while to consider the whole antithesis: an object is known because there is a subject to know it; an object is *not* known because there is a subject to know it? But here we can only suggest.

If it is quite true, then, as Mr. Grote says, that the autonomy of each individual mind, the right of private judgment, or as we phrase it, the right of subjectivity, is the basis of philosophy and the centre of appeal, we must bear in mind that it is still only a half truth, and that it is a whole truth only when complemented with the right of objectivity. A being possessed of reason is not to be subjected—unless as a last resource—to mechanical force: his conviction is to be addressed and carried with us. This, doubtless, lies in the very fact of the cross-examination of Socrates (to refer to another argument of Mr. Grote's), but in that fact there lies also more. The maieutic art of the son of Phænarete the midwife was for a birth—the second birth—the birth of the object out of the subject. That is the end of all true maieutics, elimination of the position of Mr. Grote, and establishment of that of Socrates—the authority of the universal. Into the service of the universal, the individual must harness himself. Though, then, it is my right that I should be present with my own conviction to whatever truth is proposed, it is the right of this truth also, so to speak, that it should not be a mere subjectivity, a mere singularity, a mere peculiarity in a single individual; it is the right of this truth that it should be objective—in Mr. Grote's own language, it is the right of this truth that it should be *reasoned truth*. By this phrase, which occurs very commonly in Mr. Grote, he *implicitly* abandons the whole position of subjectivity. Truth to be truth at all must be *reasoned truth*. Mr. Grote has still the difficulty, indeed—who is to dictate this reasoned truth? But in the case of reasoned truth is any dictator required? Reason is a common possession, and we either all already do meet in reason, or we all shall meet. Mr. Grote's surprise at opposition on the part of Schwegler and Prantl to 'notorious facts,' was, as we have seen, the naïve avowal of a



like insight at bottom. Notorious facts, reasoned truth—that is objectivity. When Mr. Grote considers only the infinitely different colours of the infinitely different subjects, he has before him a world of infinitely different objects also. But the difference in which we part must not blind us to the identity in which we meet. The world is not an evershifting chaos of countless particulars only. There are laws in the world-system. The daily life of the universe and the daily life of man pass, so to speak, in a maze and mist of the contingent, the relative; particular clashes with particular, individual with individual, and the entanglement seems hopeless. Nevertheless, there is within the maze and mist a solid core which is universal, and not particular, necessary and not contingent, absolute and not relative. This core, this system, is, in ultimate name, reason; and it is to this reason, as the common possession of humanity, that Prantl and Schwegler appeal. As *common* possession, it is universal identity certainly, but as possession of *humanity* it can hardly be called impersonal. With reference to the universe, in general, indeed, this reason cannot be called impersonal, for it is a life; neither can it be called infallible, if infallible means fixed, for a life is progress.

But, for reasoned truth, whether dictators be required or not, do we not possess them? What are books for example? (*The* Book, let us only suggest.) The Organon of Aristotle is, in very truth, not the particular subject Aristotle; it is an object—an object received, perfected, transmitted: the Organon of Aristotle is therefore objective incorporation with us. Books! and who again is to *interpret* your books? Is that, then, really so difficult? Do we not all learn our astronomy and mathematics contentedly enough? Even in other sciences is the difficulty a want of interpreters? But, books apart, and let it be contained where it may, there really is knowledge objective and common to us all. It is the very purpose of the Theætetus to point out this knowledge. Mr. Grote ignores this, and will have it that the Theætetus has only a negative result. We can trust Schwegler, however, and on his authority believe the Theætetus to be a demonstration of the fact of objective knowledge. To the contributions of the senses from without there are additions from the faculties within, and these additions, comparable the one with the other, are the same in each of us and alike for us all. These addi-

tions have in modern times been called categories, and much has already been done towards their discovery and summation. Space is not exactly a category, but as conceived by Kant, it will illustrate these. The contributions of special sense, Kant holds to receive their dispositions in space, as it were by a projection from within. In space we all agree—even conceive it actually external—it is an example of an objective truth. So time, so quantity, etc. But the true answer to Mr. Grote's question about a judge, an interpreter, a dictator, etc., is—the State.

Where can you get a better proof of relativity than the State?—it is never a year the same! As a life, as progress, the State must change; nevertheless it is the true authority. Even Socrates had to leave all abstract definition of justice and appeal to the State. Instead of the State, Mr. Grote seems to advocate individual *authority*. This is the only provision for agreement—for approach to a universal—which I can find in Mr. Grote. I may try to get others to accept my views; and so a certain estimation on the part of others, a certain authority in their eyes, becomes possible for me. Still Mr. Grote speaks of this authority as something merely subjective; as something dependent on the *good-pleasure* of others. Is it good-pleasure, then, and not reason that leads me to prefer the better physician, or even the better baker? Mr. Grote talks of this tendency in us towards rational authority, quite in the manner of the Aufklärung, as if it were a mere subjective tendency, a mere predisposition in us. It is in this way that Mr. Buckle talks of our superstitions, our received opinions, our prejudices. Still, what could be the only ultimate result of this process, even if merely subjective, as Mr. Grote seems to believe? Why, this *is* Hobbes's *bellum omnium in omnes*, and its result is—the State. But this result has left that *bellum* long behind it, and it were an anachronism to return to it. That *bellum*, indeed, was but the initial *state of nature*. That we have been delivered from the tyranny of such mere subjective opinion, and such mere subjective authority—for this we have to thank the State. The State has a right of coercion, and in this right, Mr. Grote will recognise an objective element, a universal in which we all agree, or which is capable of being brought home to the subjective conviction of each of us.

There is a period in the history of the State when people live in tradition; that is a period of unreflected *Sittlichkeit*, or natural observance. Then there comes a time when the observances are questioned, and when the right or truth they involve is reflected into the subject. This is a period of Aufklärung, and for *Sittlichkeit* there is substituted *Moralität*, subjective morality: the subject will approve nought but what he finds inwardly true to himself, to his conscience. In this period, then, all is subjective; what is holy and authoritative is the spirit of the subject, and of the subject as independent individual. But then, evidently, there is no *guarantee* for the correctness of the spirit; each refers to his own spirit, and subject may differ from subject indefinitely,—agreement there may be none. But Society cannot exist so; a system of observances again results, and this time of *reflected* observances, that is, of such observances as approve themselves to the consciousness of every competent subject. The subject now is not, as under *Moralität*, shut into his own self, but has the enjoyment of himself objectively, outwardly, as realized in actual observances, institutions, etc. There is now a reign of objective reason. Here is a triplet, then, of substantial worth, in contrast with which the triplet of Comte cannot conceal how much it is but French precipitate and superficial theorizing. It is referred to here, however, to make credible how it is that the State may, in its laws and institutions, in its arts and sciences, in its customs and manners, constitute the arbiter and dictator of what is objectively true, objectively right. What stadium Mr. Grote occupies in it will be readily perceived. It is this stadium that prescribes the whole general position of Mr. Grote, as in his account of the pre-Socratic philosophy, where he disposes all (not without a little compressure in passing to the reason of Heraclitus, the Nous of Anaxagoras, or the argumentation and place of Zeno) into the due series that stretches from ancient religious superstition to modern physical enlightenment, enforcing always the single duty of the negative to those 'early doses,' which we all 'swallow,' 'of authoritative dogmas and proofs dictated by our teachers.' On all points, I have been able to say only a tithe of what I wished to say. I have done no more, indeed, than indicate. I trust, however, that regard as I may the objective product of Mr. Grote, I have neither been unjust to it, nor failed in admiration of his own great subjective ability.

## XII.—*Socrates.*

IN passing from the first (the Pre-Socratic) to the second (the Socratic) period of the history of ancient philosophy there is room for a moment's retrospect. In looking back, then, we see that the Ionics began the philosophical, as in contrast to the mythological, explanation of existence by the proposal of a *material* principle (water, air, etc.) as unity and source of all things. The Pythagoreans proposed nextly (in numerical ratios) a *formal* principle; and were followed, in their turn, by the Eleatics, who, in the necessary affirmative substrate that was conceived to underlie the negative contingency of existence, sought to replace both *material* and *formal* principles by an *intelligible* one. As a truer basis of the all of things, Heraclitus set up, in lieu of the simple affirmative of Being, the negativo-affirmative of Becoming. Becoming was no concrete principle, however, but simply the abstraction of process, of change, as such. However true a characteristic of things, it was a *naming* merely, and not an *explaining*. Passing over Empedocles, who was but an imperfect step in the same direction as, and only partially suggestive to, Anaxagoras, it was the Atomists now who returned to an attempt at concrete *explanation*. Their materials, the atoms, were certainly an ingenious machinery in interpretation of the *being* of things. Anaxagoras saw, however, that the *becoming* of things, evidently subjected to law and order, could only be unsatisfactorily accounted for by mechanical necessity and chance, and he proposed, instead, the agency of a designing mind. One can see, then, that Anaxagoras constituted the completion of a circle of thought, the completion of an intellectual era, which, in Hegelian language, may be regarded as corresponding to the moment of *simple apprehension*. The next logical moment, then, was plainly that of *judgment*, and it was initiated by the Sophists. The Sophists, namely, were thrown back from the thought that was pointed to in the universe by Anaxagoras to the thought as thought that existed in themselves. To that thought, subjective thought, all things, whether in nature or society, were now submitted with the necessary result of a complete *Aufklärung*, the Grecian Illumination. It is here that Socrates comes in. His moral purity revolted



at the instability and insecurity to which all rules of conduct were reduced by the principle of the Sophists. So influenced, Socrates sought *a standard of conduct*. This standard he conceived himself to find in what we may call scientific generalization. Let us but know, he thought, the universal or generic notion of any duty, and then we shall know all forms of that duty, and of necessity practise them. Through generalization, each duty was, to Socrates, *knowable*, *teachable*, and (with all its forms) *one*.

In support of the doctrine of objectivity as against subjectivity and Mr. Grote, contained in the 'Transition to Socrates,' I may quote Hegel, who, in the sections (*Hist. of Phil.*) on Socrates and the Sophists, speaks often thus:—'True thought is such that its import is not subjective but objective, objectivity having the sense here of substantial universality, and not of external objectivity; what mind thus produces from its own self must be produced from it as active in a universal manner, not from its passions, private interests, and selfish motives; man as thinking and as giving himself a universal import, man in his rational nature and universal substantiality, not every man in his particular speciality as this contingent individual man, is the required measure.' From Erdmann, too, I may quote this:—'All truth lies in the subject, but only so far as he is universal; not πᾶς ἄνθρωπος, as with Protagoras, but ὁ ἄνθρωπος, as with Socrates, is the measure of all things, the one being but ἡ ὕς, the other ὁ θεός; according to Protagoras, on the theoretical side, that is true which to me is true, and on the practical, that good which to me is good; but in such subjectivism, all objective, universally valid principles lose their meaning, objectivity disappears, in short, and the subject is left free to turn all as he pleases.'

As regards what is said of Hegel's view of the fate of Socrates, I may remark that this is, perhaps, unworthy of Schwegler, who, as in a preceding case, while indebted to Hegel for every word he uses, seeks to give himself an air of originality by a slight turn in the application of the word. The position of Hegel and the position of Schwegler, despite the apparent opposition of the latter, are essentially the same. It is to Hegel, in short, that we owe the deep and perfect exposition of the whole situation, nor is it quite certain, indeed, that Schwegler is on the level of it. The respective intercalation will

be found to contain, it is hoped, a satisfactory elucidation of the vast, vital, and all-important Hegelian distinction between *Moralität* and *Sittlichkeit*.

## XIII.—*Plato.*

THERE is but little here that calls for explanation. The term *protreptic*, for example, is now not unknown to dictionaries; and both it and the earlier *parenetic* may be varied by *exhortative*. *Thetic*, again, is also to be found in dictionaries, and refers to demonstrations that are not negative or indirect, but, on the contrary, direct and positive. The phrase *non-being* may sometimes appear perplexing, but it means simply negation—negation that assumes, so to speak, a positive virtue, when in relation to the affirmation to which it is opposed. Cold and darkness, for example, are so related to heat and light. This is what is alluded to in the words *pairs* and *counterparts*, which I have intercalated into the parenthesis at the top of page 66. Given light, its *counterpart*, darkness, is also given; and such ideas as motion, rest, heat, cold, likeness, unlikeness, identity, difference, discretion, continuity, etc., are similarly situated. Non-being, the idea of negation, is essential to any distinction, to any life, to any concrete. Any affirmation in this universe is only through negation. My ego, your ego, any ego, possesses its present affirmation only through preceding negation; it *is* by virtue of what it *was*, by virtue, that is, of what it *is not*. The affirmation of the universe itself is kept alive, so to speak, only by means of a process of incessant negation. This introduces us, then, to the same element that we possess in Hegel, the Logic of whom may be regarded as, in a certain sort, a completion of—what is only piecemeal and partial in Plato—the exposition of the *ideas*. Plato's main object is to extend and complete the work of Socrates; that is, to discover the generic notions, not only of all moral or practical things (duties), but of all things whatever, theoretic and æsthetic as well as practical. The phrase *the idea* is often used in a collective manner for this system of all ideas. It is the 'diamond net' which underlies and supports the contingent,—the element of Eleatic Being as against that of Heraclitic Becoming. The secret of Plato, then, is, in a sort,



simply generalization, and what is meant by Plato's *ideas*, Plato's *ideal theory*, etc., is now perfectly intelligible. His main error was to hypostasize the ideas, and see them only in isolation and separation from the concrete. *Opinion* (δόξα, *Meinung*, *Vorstellung*) has a peculiar meaning with the Greeks and Germans; it is probably sufficiently explained by the parenthesis attached to it at the foot of page 71. To the peculiar German term *substantial*, which is analogous to *Sittlich*, I have added, on page 89, similar explanatory parentheses. In Germany, the discussion of the order, dates, and authenticity of the Platonic dialogues still continues; Schwegler's relative ruling (though not original to him) is exceedingly satisfactory, and all debate will probably in the end settle into it.[1] How much the statements of Schwegler are, on all points, conditioned by the labours of Hegel before him, and how little he desires to conceal this, may be understood from the fact that what I have marked as a quotation at the foot of page 60 is not so marked by Schwegler, and yet it occurs *verbatim*, page 152 of Hegel's second part of the *History of Philosophy*.

## XIV.—*Aristotle.*

THE philosophy of Aristotle is evidently conditioned by effort to remedy the defects which he himself signalizes in the philosophy of Plato. In the latter, noumenon and phenomenon idly confronted each other—movement there was none: addition of that element, then, shall now convert the universe into an explained unity. Aristotle's expedient for this conversion is, in the main, the single conception of *development*. Development, however, is but a more concrete form of the Becoming of Heraclitus; and thus it is that, if Plato was Eleatic, Aristotle is in turn Heraclitic. To Aristotle it appears the very nature of what is to pass from potentiality into actuality. What is, as potential, is *matter*; as actual, *form*. The universe, then, is but a gradation between these extremes. The higher extreme, again, is identical with the Platonic ideal element, with reason, with the Good. In this way we see that to Aristotle there is no disjunction; the higher element is immanent in the lower; the *ideas* are converted into *entelechies*, into the

[1] See Preface, p. xii.

ends and notions, into the *Bestimmungen* (in the double sense of determinations and destinations), that constitute the life and very being of things. Thus it is that Aristotle, if on one side an absolute empiricist, is, on the other, an absolute idealist; and it is quite a similar general tendency of thought that will be found to condition his further modification of the Platonic teaching in the concrete spheres of ethics, physics, the state, etc. In a certain way, then, the Aristotelian philosophy may be regarded as but an *application* of the Platonic principle to the concrete; and it is the distinction of potentiality and actuality (identical with matter and form) that, on the whole, constitutes its characteristic. Evidently, then, as Hegel was not without debt to Plato, so neither is he without perhaps a greater debt to Aristotle. To give the first example that suggests itself, reference to the 'notion of development' and that of the 'concrete' at pages 33 and 35 of the first part of the *History of Philosophy* will clearly demonstrate this. Such phrases (in Schwegler's text) as 'thought the absolute reality of matter,' the 'immanence of the universal in the singular,' a 'being that is eternally being produced,' 'a goal that is in every instant attained by the movement of the *in-itself* to the *for-itself*,' etc., are not less Hegelian than Aristotelian. Hegel indeed substituted a Heraclitic for an Eleatic element in the ideas of Plato; he gave them movement: issuing the one from the other they constitute in him but a single process. In this way he but completed the work of both the Greeks.

At page 94 will be found a peculiar German use of the term *psychological*. By a parenthesis I have represented it to mean indicative of human motive. In his *Philosophy of History*, pp. 39, 40, the word will be found so used by Hegel. He defines there this psychological mode of view, and proceeds:—'These psychologues apply themselves in particular to the peculiarities of great historical figures as individuals. A man must eat and drink, stands in connexion with friends and acquaintances, has feelings and ebullitions of the moment. No man is a hero to his *valet-de-chambre*, is a common proverb; I added to it—and Goethe repeated the addition ten years later—not because the hero is not a hero, but because the valet is a valet. By such psychological valets,' etc. The word in this sense is not uncommon in later German writers.



At page 98, metaphysics, as the science of being, will be found to be distinguished from the other sciences in such a manner as explains the antithesis of finite and infinite thought, so common in Schwegler and the other modern Germans. The ordinary sciences, namely, have each its own sphere, its own laws and principles. They are thus the business of finite thought. The result, in their regard, is only complete within the concrete presuppositions of each. Result is beside result, and none is the universal result. But suppose we can account for being as being, explain how there should be such a fact as existence at all, and demonstrate the course it will take, then plainly we are occupied with that which is all-embracing and infinite. Schelling is reported, at page 305, to hold, 'that speculation is the whole,—vision, contemplation, that is, of everything in God; science itself is valuable only so far as it is speculative, so far as it is contemplation of God as he is.' Speculative thought has the same sense as infinite thought: it is that thought which considers being as being, or all things in God. Spinoza's phrase, *sub specie æternitatis*, has the same reference. That Aristotle should have called his first philosophy theology, then, is now not difficult to understand. The speculative of Hegel is also clear; it is what explanatorily sublates all things into the unity of God; or, in general, that is speculative, that sublates a many into one (or *vice versa*). A speculative philosophy, consequently, must be a chain of mutually sublating counterparts. This will explain the censure to which, on page 100, Aristotle is subjected, for having 'supplied in his logic only a natural history of finite thought.' Aristotle, that is, has only analysed the general forms in or through which each empirical subject thinks things; he has separated things and thoughts, which, limited the one by the other, are both thus finite; he has not evolved those great forms of thought, which, applicable to the universe as a whole, constitute a universal logic. Aristotle's logic is but empirically taken up in reference to the thought of the subject, not speculatively in reference to the thought of God; and thus it is finite, and not infinite.* Common modern logic has gone beyond Aristotle, indeed, for it has sought to divorce things (or matter) altogether from thoughts (or form). The addition of the fourth figure, I may remark, by the bye, is regarded neither by Kant nor Hegel as any improvement on Aristotle (see *die falsche*

* Nevertheless the distinction in question is precisely Aristotle's: he sees a thing in two relations; 1*st*, as ἀίδιον; and 2*d*, as πρός τι; or names it now in the language of the gods, and now in the language of men.

*Spitzfindigkeit der vier syllogistischen Figuren* of the one, and section 187 of the Encyclopædia of the other). On page 102, the phrase 'the finite import,' as the parenthesis attempts to point out, refers to the identity of the idea and the sensuous thing, when what import constitutes each is considered. They have, in short, the same import, only the one is called ideal, and the other real. On page 108, the word *Entelechie* may prove troublesome: it refers, however, to what Hegel calls *idea*, a concrete which materially realizes a formal notion or purpose. Life is an idea, an entelechie; in it the body is the material realization of the soul or subject which is the formal element; they mutually interpenetrate and give actuality the one to the other. Still relatively to the body, the soul is eminently the entelechie; the body is only for it, it is the true actuality. The word *pathological*, page 116, is one in frequent use now; it refers to the element of instinctive feeling, of instinctive sensational motive. Any other passages, or words, likely to prove difficult, I know not in this section, which constitutes, with the preceding one, perhaps the most perfect portion of the whole book.

## XV.—*The Post-Aristotelian Philosophy.*

THERE is little to be said here, for no explanation seems wanted. I would only call attention to the excellence of the description of the fall of Greece (pp. 120-3), for the importance of the lesson it extends to ourselves. We, too, seem to live at a very similar relative epoch: 'the simple trust of the subject in the given world is completely at an end.' In the Post-Aristotelian philosophy, however, there is still a gain for the spirit of man. This gain is the Roman element; the individual is free, respected for himself, a subject on his own account, a person. Nor in our modern world is there any want of a similar element. The error now rather is that the principle of subjectivity is in excess, and requires to be restored to the control of the universal. If subjectivity has just emptied itself, in morals, politics, and religion, of an *unreflected* objectivity, it must now refill itself (in all these interests) with a *reflected* objectivity. Perhaps it is hardly worth remarking that, though Schwegler's excellence is synopsis, reduction, still his



fault is that of—occasionally—keeping up the note too long, or of a turn too many. Glimpses of this, I think, we can catch in *Stoicism*. In these sections, I find no room for explanation; reserving criticism also with a view to space, I pass on to

## XVI.—*Transition to Modern Philosophy.*

ENGLISH readers will be apt to think Schwegler unjust to Bacon here, and, perhaps, to some extent, not without reason. It is useless to endeavour to depose Bacon from his position at the head of modern philosophy: he certainly first clearly and consciously mooted the emancipating thoughts which are our constitutive element now. Probably, however, Englishmen place their countryman, *in himself*, too high. It is impossible to find a more careful, more exhaustive, more impartial estimate than that of Erdmann, and his result is not much higher than that of Schwegler. The account of Ueberweg is a very excellent one, and it is to the same effect. Then, as for Hegel, though he must be allowed to do Bacon great justice on the whole, he is to be found also speaking thus:—'As Bacon has always had the praise of the man who directed knowledge to its true source, experience, so is he in effect the special leader and representative of what in England has been called Philosophy, and beyond which Englishmen have not yet quite advanced; for they seem to constitute that people in Europe, which, limited to understanding of actuality, is destined, like the huckster and workman class in the State, to live always immersed in matter, with daily fact for their object, but not reason.' It is from Hegel, too, that the gibe about mottoes comes. I may remark also that Hegel supports himself with reference to Bacon by a quotation from an English article (*Quarterly Review*, vol. xvi., April 1817, p. 53), which is really striking. In deprecation of the ordinary censure of Bacon's character on two points, Erdmann writes thus:—'The complete want of fortune, doubly painful from his high connexions, the mass of debts, the three-and-twenty years of expectations (perpetually renewed and perpetually disappointed) of becoming a salaried, instead of an unsalaried official, would probably have made, even in a stronger character, the love of money a habit: the severity with which Bacon has been

blamed for acting as counsel against his fallen patron Essex, and afterwards publishing a report of the process justifying the Queen, appears unjust to him who knows how Bacon laboured to bring the Earl to reason and the Queen to mercy, and reflects, besides, that what the latter committed to him, he was obliged to execute by virtue of his office.' Erdmann has a service also to Bacon in his eye, when he quotes the fallen man's exclamation on his own sentence: 'Never was there a sentence juster, and yet never before me had England so honest a Lord Chancellor.'

I would also bespeak attention for what is said in this section of Jacob Böhm. We have here the first note of what is specially and peculiarly German philosophy. This note is heard in such phrases as, 'width without end, stands in need of a straitness in which it may manifest itself,' etc. What is alluded to, then, is the element of negativity in God, or the necessity of an absolute *difference* even for the realization of his absolute *identity*; and it is perhaps not easy to find any better expression than that for the main thought of Hegel.

## XVII.—*Descartes.*

ERDMANN (even in his *Grundriss* of the *History of Philosophy*) gives a much fuller account of Cartesianism and Descartes than Schwegler does. Ueberweg also is both full and clear. Hegel's statement is hardly so full as that of either, but he brings to it, as usual, the singular depth and concentration of his own thought. For perfection of elaboration, comprehensiveness, and lucidity at once, Erdmann's exposition is, perhaps, to be preferred to all of them. From it, however, I shall borrow only one sentence, referring to Descartes on the passions: 'The soul being possessed of ability to evoke ideas, and through these give direction to the animal spirits, has it in its power indirectly to conquer the passions, as, for example, to neutralize the fear of danger through the hope of victory.' This seems a hint practically useful, and yet we read that the philosopher himself was, on the death of an illegitimate daughter who died while a child, unable to console himself. Ueberweg introduces some acute objections to the main positions



of Descartes. Thus he conceives the argumentation connected with the *cogito-sum* to involve the assumption without proof of the notion of substance, as well as of the individuality of the ego, or of its self-identity and difference from all else. He also objects to this, the first position of Descartes, that peculiar view of Kant in reference to an inner sense over which poor Mr. Buckle has so stumbled, this, namely, that knowing our own inner like our outer, only *sensuously*, we know it not as it *is*, but as it *seems*. Hegel, as against Kant, may be referred to on the other side. A better objection of Ueberweg's is the *relativity* of the subjective criterion of truth (the *clearness* and *certainty* with which, etc.): 'the truth of my clear sensuous perception—of the sky, for example—may be modified and removed by a clear intellectual insight.' Other objections of Ueberweg are, the negation that after all lies in the notion of the infinite, the vicious circle of inferring the existence of God from a knowledge that depends on him, the destruction of the pineal gland not necessarily followed by the loss of life or of thought, the soul's capability of independent existence not to follow from my clear and distinct idea of its capability of independent thought, etc. He adduces also the question of Gassendi, How can extended perceptions have place in what is inextended? Gassendi, too, is said by Ueberweg not to have used the *ambulo-sum* universally attributed to him; it appears that Descartes himself, in replying to the objection of actions in general, put into the mouth of Gassendi this action in particular. Another objection of Ueberweg is:—'In effect we become conscious of our existence through reflection on our will earlier than through reflection on our thought.' But in the identity of will and thought, this objection cannot avail much. The most important of all the objections of Ueberweg relates to the ontological argument (or to the inference of the being from the thought of God), even in its psychological form that points to the antithesis of the perfection of the thought and the imperfection of the thinker. He says (*Grundriss*, iii. p. 51):—'Descartes commits here the same error as Anselm, to neglect the condition of every categorical argument from the definition, namely, that the *position* of the subject must be otherwise certain. . . . Descartes' premises lead logically only to the unmeaning conclusion, that if God is, existence accrues to him, and if God is feigned, he must be feigned

as existent. Moreover the Cartesian form of the ontological argument has a defect from which that of Anselm is free,'—the one uses *being* as a predicate beside other predicates, the other as a particular kind of being. Hegel, in his section on Descartes, as everywhere else, is always forward to defend the metaphysical arguments for the existence of God, and certainly it is always to be borne in mind that God is different from all other subjects; that this difference, indeed, is, that he cannot be thought as inexistent, that the very notion of him involves existence. 'Kant,' says Hegel (*Hist. of Phil.* iii. p. 309) 'has objected that *being* is not contained in *thinking*, that it is different from thinking. That is true, but still they are inseparable or constitute a single identity; their unity is not to the prejudice of their difference.' P. 317, 'We find this highest idea in us. If we ask now whether this idea exist, why this *is* the idea, that existence is given with it, and to say it is only a thought, is to contradict the very meaning of the thought.' P. 321, 'An objection to this identity is now old, Kantian too: that from the notion of the most perfect being, there follows no more than that *in* thought existence and the most perfect being are conjoined, but not *out* (outside) of thought. But the very notion of existence is this negative of self-consciousness, not out of thought, but the thought of—the out of thought.' In another reference, I may quote (p. 311), 'It is absurd to suppose that the soul has thinking in one pocket, and seeing, willing, etc., in others. . . . Willing, seeing, hearing, walking, etc., are further modifications. . . . Only when I accentuate that ego is in these as thought, does it imply being; for only with the universal is being united.' Hegel objects, however, to the method and march of Descartes as being but *conceptive*, and containing presuppositions. Throwing light on his own industry, he says (p. 310):—'In Descartes the necessity is not yet present, to develop the differences from the "I think;" Fichte was the first to go that far, out of this point of absolute certainty to derive all determinations;' and p. 328, 'speculative cognition, the derivation from the notion, the free self-dependent development of the element itself, was first introduced by Fichte.' 'So now,' p. 312, 'philosophy has got its own ground, thought proceeds, starts from thought, as what is certain in itself, not from something external, not from something given, not from



an authority, but directly from this freedom that is contained in the "I think."'

## XVIII.—*Malebranche.*

ERDMANN'S 'Malebranche' occupies considerable space, that of Ueberweg but little. The former remarks of Malebranche that 'it must have been the self-righteousness of the redeemed Christian which caused his so rigorous damnation of Spinoza, in whose pantheism spirits are modifications of infinite thought, in the same manner as bodies, with Malebranche, are limitations of extension: and yet he himself borders very close on what revolts him in the writings of that "*misérable.*"' Ueberweg, in the doctrine of Malebranche, regards that operation of God 'as itself absolutely incomprehensible.' Hegel has always a very warm side for Malebranche, and we may remember some of his happiest criticisms in the Logic in that reference. The main thought of Malebranche, says Hegel, is, that 'the soul cannot get its ideas, notions, from external things.' 'God is the *place of spirits*, the universal of the spirit, as space is the universal, the *place of bodies.*' 'The soul, consequently, recognises in God what is in him, bodies so far as he conceives created beings, because all this is spiritual, intellectual, and present to the soul.' 'When we would think of anything particular, we think first of the universal; it is the basis of the particular, as space to things: all essentiality is before our particular ideas, and this essentiality is the first.' 'We have a clear idea of God, of the universal; we can have it only through *union* with him, for this idea is not a created one, but in and for itself: it is as with Spinoza, the one universal is God, and, so far as it is determined, it is the particular; this particular we see only in the universal, as bodies in space.' 'The spirit perceives all in the infinite; so little is this a confused perception of many particular things, that rather all particular perceptions are only participations of the universal idea of the infinite: just as God receives not his being from finite creatures, but, on the contrary, all creatures only subsist through him.' 'Thought is only in the union with God.' 'This relation, this union of our spirit with the Word (*verbe*) of God, and of our will with his love, is, that we are made

in the *image of God*, and in his likeness.' Hegel thus accentuates expressions of Malebranche, which are probably more or less assonant to his own views.

## XIX.—*Spinoza.*

ALL the authorities make a primate of Spinoza. Erdmann gives as complete and exhaustive an internal synthesis of the whole system as is well conceivable, and Ueberweg, who is quite overwhelming in his notice of the relative literature, complements it (Erdmann's statement) by an equally complete and exhaustive external analysis. Hegel impregnates, most interestingly and instructively, the philosophy of Spinoza with his own. Erdmann's work here, in particular, however, is, as all but always, a miracle of labour, and of harnessed expression; but what specially and peculiarly distinguishes him beyond all others, on this occasion, is that he has, probably, very fairly detected the *secret* of Spinoza. That secret is a particular mathematical image that underlies all the apparent philosophical generalizations of Spinoza. I shall take the liberty of working out this image in my own way, and demonstrate how the main constituents of the system naturally rise out of it.

Spinoza says, What is, is; and that is extension and thought. These two are all that is, and besides these there is nought. But these two are one: they are *attributes* of the single *substance*—God, in whom, then, all individual things, and all individual ideas (*modi* of extension those, of thought these) are comprehended and have place. (Spinoza, indeed, does at first speak of infinite attributes, but he is found in the end virtually to assume but two.)

Now to Spinoza extension is as geometrical surface, taken quite generally. But geometrical surface contains *impliciter* all possible geometrical infiguration, with all its possible ideal consequences. With (geometrical) surface, extension, then, there is (geometrical) intelligence, thought. These two attributes meet in a substantial *one* (the whole), and involve an accidental *many*, the modi, the particulars of the contained infiguration. These modi, lastly, result the one from the other; or it is its own limitation by the rest that makes each.

God, then, is as a vast and slumbering whole, whose



infinite surface is fretted into infinite shapes, which are the outward bodies that reflect themselves into the inward ideas. But, further now this infinite surface is not continuous, but a congeries of atomic movement. The atoms, the smallest geometrical figures, are various proportions of motion and rest, and they have their reflected or ideal counterparts within. But, besides simple figures, there are compound ones (a larger portion of surface being taken), and such is the body of man, to which, therefore, the correspondent inner ideas will constitute a mind. Mind and body, again, though correspondent, are independent; each is its own world; extension can only act on extension, idea on idea.

This, now, is the Spinozistic ground-plan. The underlying conception is a mathematical one, in which extension and thought (*Seyn* and *Denken*, *εἶναι* and *νοεῖν*, reality and ideality) are essentially one. The example of mathematical figures, indeed, let us remark in passing, ought to realize the possibility of this scouted union—which is besides the omnipresent fact. Though obliged to introduce motion (assumed as deduced from extension), in order to obtain—what he found a necessity—individuals in mutual limitation, Spinoza's conception of causality is mathematical and not dynamical. His causes are pre-existent reasons, his effects the necessary logical consequences. The prime cause is simply to him the prime condition, extension namely, over which hangs, or under which floats, reflected from it, the consequences, the thoughts that are in it. Unbroken extension, unbroken thought—that is God. Amongst the interdependent, interacting modi, which are the intersecting colours of this heaving life, Man is, in body and in soul, a result of necessity like the rest.

All specifications and particularizations, in truth, will be found to flow naturally from the few fundamental materials. Thus God, further, is the immanent, and not the transient, or transcendent, cause of all things. He is not personal either, or possessed of will, or of love to man; nor free, unless in his own necessity, not acting, therefore, on design. As the *cogitatio infinita*, his thought is not an understanding even, but is an idea rather than ideas. Man, again, is partly immortal (in that his basis, namely, must be an original part and parcel of the divine substance—so much of the original surface), and partly mortal, for his personal and individual existence passes. His soul is

but a knowledge of the states of his body; he is a thing among things, that strives to self-preservation against the obstruction of the rest; hence the joy of success, the grief of failure, hence fear and hope, hence love and hate, hence good and evil. Each, then, seeks his own advantage; this is his natural right, which falls together, therefore, with his natural might. But man, after all, is to man the greatest commodity, and the necessity of mutual intercourse leads to the resignation of all individual rights under power of the State. Wrong, now, is what the State forbids, right what it commands. Of States, too, the rights are identical with the mights, and treaties bind only as they profit. The State must not attempt what it cannot compel; there should be liberty of conscience, therefore, but with all outward subjection. The State, then, should be independent of the convictions of the individual citizens, and in itself good, whatever they be. Men are the same as they always have been, and always will be. The State is they who govern, nor can these do injustice, but they must stop where threats and promises cease to avail; a State's worst enemies are its own subjects. Political revolutions, nevertheless, can bring but ruin. Of governments, an aristocratic republic, with numerous corporations, is to Spinoza the best. The *few*, however, are independent of the State—in intellectual freedom. This is acquired through the the acquisition of adequate ideas, on which follows, of necessity, and in ratio of the adequacy, intelligent submission to what is once for all so. Such submission, again, product of intelligence, is necessarily accompanied by the idea of God, by love to God; and that is the blessedness which virtue not only offers as reward, but *is*. For the attainment of this consummation, then, the single duty is the *emendatio intellectus*, and in this alone is freedom.

The philosophy of Spinoza, then, is, on the whole, a clumsy metaphor; but it is not without thoughts. These Hegel certainly shows at the clearest, at the same time that he demonstrates as well the associated fatal defects. The objections of Ueberweg also are sharply conceived and distinctly stated. Both Hegel and Ueberweg, however, understand Spinoza rather dynamically than mathematically. Hence, on the latter understanding, both their praise and their blame seem to fall wide. Into the views as well of Hegel as of Ueberweg I was prepared to enter at some length, but must, for the sake of space, forbear. In the statement above, extension, as figurable, *implies* ideas: Erdmann sees these as *lent* to, not *in* substance, but he names *parallelism* of modi later. Spinoza's Ethic has, doubtless, deeply influenced the progress of philosophy, especially since Jacobi recalled attention to it in Germany; but after all, perhaps, his work of the greatest *historical* importance, is the *Tractatus Theologico-Politicus*. The latter work has constituted the very arsenal of the *Aufklärung*, whether French or German. Voltaire's wit, and the erudition of the theological critics of the Fatherland, are alike indebted to it.



## XX.—*Hobbes.*

THOMAS HOBBES (1588-1679) was educated at Oxford, became tutor in the Cavendish family, and travelled on the Continent. As a man, he is said to have suffered from a constitutional timidity. He was in personal relations with Charles II., Bacon, Descartes, Gassendi, etc. He published a multitude of works, of which the *De Cive* and the *Leviathan* are the chief. His principal views run thus:—Philosophy is knowledge obtained from a consideration of causes and effects. Religion, therefore, as knowledge obtained from revelation, is excluded from philosophy. Faith and reason must not be confounded. The Bible is not given to instruct us as regards nature and an earthly State, but to teach us the way to a kingdom that is not of this world. The origin of our knowledge lies in the impressions of sense, and these must depend on certain motions. Only the subjective state (idea) is known by us, and not its objective antecedent. The affection of sense continues after the impression has passed, constituting memory and imagination. Memory is the seat of experience, and experience leads to expectation. Hence prudence. In behoof of memory, *marks* are invented, which become *signs* of communication or words. Words as signs become representative of many, and lead to generalization. To correlate sign and signification is to understand, but to correlate sign with sign is to calculate, to think, and to reason. A congruous correlation is truth; an incongruous, falsehood. Accurate definition of

words, then, is the first problem, the first philosophy; and hence the consideration which follows next, of Time and Space, Cause and Effect, Substance and Accident, etc. Time and space are, to Hobbes, subjective. Cause and effect depend on motion, as also accidents, which are resultant affections of sense. Motion, then, is the main consideration; and philosophy is secluded to the corporeal world as what alone exists. Spirits, incorporeal substances, are but square circles. God is an object of philosophy only so far as some good men have ascribed to Him a corporeal nature. Philosophy, then, being confined to what is corporeal, considers, first, natural, and second, artificial bodies; or is in the one case natural, and in the other civil, philosophy. Or philosophy may be more conveniently divided into First Philosophy (*philosophia prima*, as just noticed), Physics, Anthropology, and Politics. Physics include Mathematics, Astronomy, Physiology, Optics, etc. Anthropology considers cognition, and the invention of words, as already noticed, and then passes to man in his ethical capacity. Theory is only for Practice, and general utility is the single aim. The value of geometry even is its application to machinery. The practical capacity of man is the result of a reaction towards the attainment of pleasure and the avoidance of pain, which accompanies sensation generally. The degrees in this reaction yield the various desires. Deliberation on these leads to choice and will. The will, as last act of the movement, is not free, but a passive result of the influences exerted by impressions, or by signs and words. The object of desire is good, of aversion evil. *Bonum, jucundum, pulchrum, utile*, mean the same thing, and are but varying relations of what is desirable. *Bonum simpliciter dici non potest.* Self-preservation is the supreme good, death the supreme evil. To promote the one and prevent the other is the first law of nature. Men, then, at first, each being capable of inflicting this greatest evil (death) on the other, were pretty well equal, and all alike free to do what they would. Mutual fear was the universal condition, *Bellum omnium contra omnes*, or *Homo homini lupus.* But self-preservation must lead in the end to a treaty of peace, which brings with it various conditions. Each renounces freedom on the understanding that all renounce it. This compact is no result, then, of social instinct or benevolence, but



of selfishness and fear. But this compact can be realized only through the subjection of all to one who will deter from injury. And in this way, we pass to Politics, or the State. The sovereign of a State is not its heart, but its soul. He is the State. The rest are but subjects. They are by express compact powerless, he is the Leviathan who swallows them all, the mortal god who sways all at his will, and is the source of peace and security. Now only have *meum* and *tuum* place, and right and wrong. Right is what the sovereign commands; wrong, what he forbids. Custom is an authority only in submission to him. Sovereignty can be exercised by a majority, by few, or by one; and the State, accordingly, is a Democracy, an Aristocracy, or a Monarchy. The first was the first in time. But the answer to the question, Which is the best? is, the actually existent one. There must be no attempt to change; obedience to the sovereign power must be absolute and unconditional; else relapse to the state of nature were the inevitable result. War is a remnant of the state of nature. The natural rights of peoples and persons are the same. A State is a moral person. In respect of the sovereign, the subject is without rights of any kind, and the former is under no control of law. The sovereign is alone the people. No error so dangerous as a belief in conscience that might lead to disobedience of the sovereign. Conscience must preserve the primal contract, and who commands is alone responsible. There is only one case where disobedience is legitimate; self-preservation is the object of the State, and no one is obliged to commit suicide. Hobbes now proceeds at great length to refer to the Bible, and in such a way as recalls Antonio's

> 'Mark you this, Bassanio,
> The devil can cite Scripture for his purpose.

This epitome from Erdmann will suggest, perhaps, the value of the original study.

## XXI.—*John Locke.*

THERE is one point here in regard to which the difference between the German and the English mind is placed in the most glaring relief. It is Locke's account of

substance. This notion, because it is not derived from without, and yet really exists without, appears to the Germans to be assumed as prescribed by the mind to the external world, which latter then is, in that respect, subject to the mind, if in all others this latter (in experience) is subject to it. In Erdmann's language, 'It is a manifest self-contradiction to expect the mind to subject itself to a world already in subjection to laws which are its own (the mind's) product.' Schwegler, pp. 181, 182, expresses himself quite similarly. This contradiction does not seem to have occurred either to Locke himself or any other Englishman. The notion was an obscure one, they thought, but it undoubtedly corresponded to an outer fact, the knowledge of which, if obscurely acquired, was still actually acquired by inference from experience. Even to Hume the idea of the Germans seems never to have occurred: his way of it was simply that the mental notion was unsupported by any basis of fact. The conceptions of the Germans may not the less on that account be well founded. Erdmann adds to the account of Locke's theoretical, a very satisfactory statement of his moral, political, and religious contributions. Ueberweg, who otherwise correctly characterizes Hegel's difference from Locke, complains that he (Hegel) has 'taken up Locke's philosophy, as well as Kant's criticism, wrong;' but it will be difficult to establish either statement. Things may look strange to us in the light of Hegel, but that light is not necessarily on that account false. Perhaps no man will ever understand Kant as deeply as Hegel did, and I think that he perfectly understands the position of Locke, even while he objects to it. Hegel is perfectly just to the advance on the positions of Descartes, Malebranche, and Spinoza, which that of Locke involves. What Locke required in their regard he also completely approves. He even grants the correctness of the principle of experience, so far as it goes. It is absurd to him to say otherwise than that experience is the beginning in time. He only points out that the derivation of the ideas from experience is no explanation, no verification, either of them or of it. Locke's procedure, then, is to him a step to philosophy, but it is not yet philosophy. 'It is no matter whether the mind or whether experience be the source; the question is, is this import in itself true?' 'Are these general ideas true in and for themselves, and whence come they, not only into my consciousness, into



my mind, but *into the things themselves?*' The Hegelian stand-point is accurately indicated in these questions, nor less the defect of that of Locke. Ueberweg's objections to Hegel here, then, I must hold to be unfounded.

To Schwegler's list of English moralists we may add these: Henry More (1614-1687), Ralph Cudworth (1617-1688), Bernard Mandeville (1670-1733), Bishop Butler (1692-1752), David Hartley (1704-1757), Abraham Tucker (1705-74), Joseph Priestley (1733-1804), Richard Price (1723-1791), William Paley (1743-1805). Peter Brown was the Irish Bishop Brown. All the Germans omit any mention of Paley—one of the most masculine and truly English of thinkers and writers! I have spent a considerable time in collecting materials for the characterization of the English moralists, but find that to do justice to the theme would involve an enlargement of the Handbook beyond all legitimate limits. I pass, therefore, at once to

## XXII.—*David Hume.*

OF all the statements of Schwegler, I find this the most meagre and unsatisfactory. It is a mistake to represent the influence of Hume on German philosophy as limited to the relation of causality: it extends, on the contrary, to almost all other cardinal points of philosophy, as well practical as theoretical. Kant's very illustration about the Copernican notion is suggested by Hume, and it is this latter's distinction between *matters of fact* and *relations of ideas* that lies at the bottom of the whole German philosophical movement. I shall transcribe here a few of the salient expressions of Hegel.

'The progress as regards thought is this: Berkeley lets all the ideas stand as they are; in Hume, the antithesis of the sensuous and the universal element has cleared and more sharply expressed itself, sense being pronounced by him void of universality. Berkeley does not make the distinction as to whether there is necessary connexion in his sensations or not.' . . . 'Hume completed Lockeanism by drawing attention to this, that on that stand-point experience is, indeed, the foundation of what is known, or perception contains all that happens; but, nevertheless, universality and necessity are not contained in, nor given us, by experience.' . . . 'Custom

obtains as well in our perception as in reference to *law* and *morality*. These, namely, rest on an *instinct*, a subjective, but very often deceptive, moral feeling.' . . . 'We have the custom to regard one thing as just and moral: others have other customs. If, then, truth depends on experience, the element of universality, of objectivity, comes from elsewhere, or is not verified by experience. Hume has accordingly declared this species of universality and necessity to be only subjectively, not objectively, existing; for custom is just such a subjective universality. This is an important and acute observation in regard to experience as the source of knowledge; and it is from this point that the reflection of Kant begins.'

To the representatives of the Scottish philosophy mentioned by Schwegler, we may add Lord Kames (1696-1782), Adam Smith (1723-1790), Adam Ferguson (1724-1816), Thomas Brown (1778-1820), and Sir William Hamilton (1788-1856). Professor Ferrier belongs to an era of thought that was inaugurated by Thomas Carlyle. On all these men, I was also prepared to speak at large; but the limits of the book preclude justice either to them or to me. Short, but excellent articles under the name of each will be found in the *Encyclopædia Britannica* and others. A word on Sir W. Hamilton will be found in the note on Jacobi. Erdmann, in his first edition, was hardly satisfactory on the Scottish school, and such a writer as he cannot afford to be unsatisfactory anywhere; for the danger is that he may be doubted even when at his best. In the second edition of the *Grundriss* much of this has been amended, though a Scot might, perhaps, still wish more space for the Scots. Schwegler reckons Hutcheson among the English moralists: he is generally put at the head of the Scottish school. He is a great writer, and does more than he gets credit for. To mention one example, the manner in which Kant's best distinctions in regard to taste are anticipated by him is very striking. Some of Schwegler's happiest feats of expression will be found in his brief paragraphs on the *French Illumination*.

## XXIII.—*Leibnitz.*

SCHWEGLER'S statement here is a very excellent one. Erdmann's is fuller and perfectly satisfactory. The student who knows both may justly consider himself *instruit*. With respect to the Calculus, we may extract from Ueberweg that Newton, inventing in 1665, published in 1687, while Leibnitz, inventing in 1675, published in 1684, but that the invention of the latter is in many respects preferable. Leibnitz's verdict on the findings of Locke, Ueberweg states thus:—'In Locke certain special truths are not badly expounded; but on the main point he has wandered far from correctness, and he has not attained to a knowledge of the nature of spirit or of truth. Had he duly weighed the difference between necessary truths, or those dependent on demonstration, and those to which we reach in a certain degree by means of induction, he would have perceived that necessary truths are capable of proof only through principles implanted in the mind itself, the so-called innate ideas, because the senses inform us indeed of what happens, but not of what necessarily happens. He has not observed, likewise, that the ideas of the being, of substance, of identity, of the true and the good, are innate in the mind, because the mind itself is innate to itself, or comprehends all these in itself. *Nihil est in intellectu, quod non fuerit in sensu*, NISI IPSE INTELLECTUS.'

The student of philosophy will find helps to Hegel in the *Monads*, and *Best of all Possible Worlds*, of Leibnitz. *This* world is not to Hegel the product of an arbitrary fancy, a subjective conceit, a momentary caprice; it is to him a necessary result of reason, and, taken in its entirety, the whole, and the only possible result, of reason. It does not follow from that, however, that the personality of God is an untenable conception: the infinite, the universal monad, is as necessary as the finite and particular. The same student will find much that is said under Wolff useful, which want of space forbids me to signalize.



## XXIV.—*Berkeley.*

SCHWEGLER is very short on Berkeley, but, to my mind, he is perfectly accurate. Even when he says 'only spirits exist,' he is surely not *in*accurate. For spirits alone have life; ideas have no life of their own, they are only *for* spirits. At p. 193, however, Schwegler had already said, 'There are only spirits (souls), and the thoughts of spirits (ideas).' Using a certain *double-entendre*, Berkeley sought to claim for his doctrine the

support of vulgar opinion and of what is called common sense. Those of his followers, therefore, who accept this *double-entendre*, may fastidiously demur to the correctness of Schwegler's statement of Berkeley, because, though he expressly admits that Berkeley's theory does not, for Berkeley himself, 'deny to objects a reality independent of us,' he yet uses in its regard such phrases as 'a material external world does not exist,' 'complete denial of matter,' etc. Schwegler has as much right, however, to assert that Berkeley *denies*, as they to assert that Berkeley *affirms*, matter. Nay, Schwegler has more right, and, properly speaking, his opponents have, on their side, no right at all; for the former uses the word *matter* in the sense of *noumenal* matter—a sense attached to it by mankind generally, while the latter use the same word in the sense of *phenomenal* matter—a sense attached to it only by themselves. The little check to free discussion offered by the gratuitous interposition of this *double-entendre*, then, causes but a jolt. At the same time, it is to be admitted, that it may be said, that what the vulgar believe in, is only *phenomenal* matter. This, however, is only a *may be said*, and concerns a subject that cannot be introduced into any philosophical arena—the vulgar, namely. On that head each philosopher has his own equal warrant to represent the vulgar, while none but Berkeleian philosophers—and only *some* of these—attach to it any such belief (as that in a phenomenal matter), a belief that will be denied to be *natural*, we may permit ourselves to say, by all but all readers. The principle of Berkeley, indeed, is so simple and intelligible, that but few readers can have any difficulty in inspecting the general position for themselves. It was presented in a word or two when speaking of *subjective gorgonization* at page 391: 'the object can only be known in me, in the subject, and therefore it is subjective, and, if subjective, ideal.' The moment we are made to perceive, in fact, that what we know of an external world is sensations, and that sensations are necessarily within, we are made possessors also of the whole of what is current as Berkeleianism. What you *perceive*, say the Berkeleians *de rigueur*, is a *phenomenal* object, and you have no right to *infer* a *noumenal* one. That essentially amounts to the mentioned gorgonization. I can only perceive an outer object *by* perceiving it: am I to suppose an outer object for ever denied me, then, by the very medium and



means by which alone it can be given me? That I perceive=that I do *not* perceive! Berkeley is perfectly aware of the simplicity of his own position, and, as Reid points out (*Works*, p. 283), apologizes for his own prolixity: 'to what purpose is it to dilate upon that which may be demonstrated, with the utmost evidence, in a line or two, to any one who is capable of the least reflection?' We can see, then, that the reply of Hamilton, and the whole school of natural realism, was very natural. Given a mind, and given an outer object, the latter can be known to the former only through perception; but the mediation which alone effects the knowledge cannot also exclude it: I am such that I do perceive a real, outer, independent object. We may suppose this also to be said by Hamilton, quite irrespective of the ingenious theory of perception by which he supported it. Indeed we have only for the nonce to identify ourselves with this position of Hamilton, and to feel as he felt there, to sympathize even with his cry about the veracity of consciousness. Hegel's reply to Berkeley (See *Secret of Hegel*, vol. i. p. 425, and vol. ii. p. 165) is quite beside the reply of Hamilton, and insists only on the *ignavia*, the idleness, of the position maintained. *Without* is *within*, says Berkeley. Let it be so, says Hegel, and philosophy has still to *begin*. The same things that were called *without* or *noumenal* are now called *within* or *phenomenal*, but, call them as you may, it is their *systematic explanation* that is wanted. Such systematic explanation, embracing man and the entire round of his experiences, sensuous, intellectual, moral, religious, æsthetic, political, etc., is alone philosophy, and to that no repetition of *without is within*, or *matter is phenomenal*, will ever prove adequate. Hegel, indeed, returns a score of times to the utter inefficiency of subjective idealism; and that is subjective idealism which converts the external world into an experience within the subject alone. The Germans, it is true, since Kant, call Berkeleianism the *dogmatic* idealism, in allusion to its generally assertoric procedure in the transference, as Schwegler says (p. 212), of all reality to conception (mental experience). That the idealism of Kant himself was called the *critical* or the *transcendental* idealism depends on this, that it was the result of a critical inquiry into our faculties, which inquiry supposed itself to demonstrate in experience as such the presence of what it called a *transcen-*

*dental* element—an element, that is, that lay in us but still came to us *in* experience. The idealism of Fichte again, that reduced all to, or deduced all from, the ego was, *par excellence*, the *subjective* idealism. Then Schelling, who gave to the object an equal basis beside the subject, but still under an idealistic point of view, is said to have given rise to the *objective* idealism; while Hegel, lastly, because he subordinated all to *thought* alone, is styled the founder of the *absolute* idealism. Even in England, the stand-point of Berkeley has for some time been replaced by what is perhaps a simpler one. That is contained in the works of Carlyle and Emerson; and amounts to this, that *relatively* there is an external world, but not *absolutely;* still that this external world is not given to me from moment to moment by God himself, but that He, from the first, has so created me that such a world, from my own very nature, hangs ever before me. In a religious sense, it is to be said that this, and the general position of Berkeleian or English idealism, has, quite apart from the critique of Hegel, a value all its own. In regard to all the great spiritual interests, as the existence of God, the freedom of the will, and the immortality of the soul, it is of immense consequence to get quit of matter (of course as ordinarily understood), and with it of materialism. We may say, indeed, that in the present disintegration of religion around us, the idealism of Berkeley, of Carlyle, and of Emerson, has been to many a man the focus of a creed, of a fervent and sincere and influential faith. It is this that makes Berkeley and idealism in general so interesting now. Berkeley, indeed, is, in every point of view, a grand and great historical figure. Grand and great in himself—one of the purest and most beautiful souls that ever lived—he is grand and great also in his consequences. Hamann—an authority of weight—declares that 'without Berkeley there had been no Hume, as without Hume no Kant;' and this is partly the truth. To the impulse of Berkeley partly, then, it is that we owe German philosophy! And great as is this service, it is to the majority of English and American thinkers much less great than that which they owe to Berkeley himself, either directly or indirectly (through Carlyle and Emerson)—especially in the religious reference already alluded to. When we add to these considerations, that also of Berkeley's



mastery of expression, and of his general fascination as a writer, it is impossible to think of him to whom Pope attributes 'every virtue under heaven,' without that veneration with which the ancients regarded their Plato, their Democritus, and their Eleatic Parmenides, of which last, perhaps, the sublimity, purity, and earnestness of character approach nearest to those of the character of Berkeley. It is no wonder, then, that interest has partially revived of late in the philosophy of Berkeley, and that we look forward with so much expectation to that complete edition of his works which has so long occupied the attention of the eminently-competent Professor Fraser.[1] In the same connection we may allude to the many Berkeleian elements that obtain in the writings of Professor Ferrier.

Having omitted all notice of Bishop Berkeley in the *Secret of Hegel*, I felt that I could do no less than repair that omission here, in a work which, bearing so directly on German philosophy, owed so much of its materials to him. I may add, too, that, apart even from the influence of his earlier writings, there attaches now, in the present situation of the study of the history of philosophy, a peculiar value to his expressions relative to the philosophies of the ancients in what may be called his latest work, *Siris*. Here Berkeley displays such an extensive and correct acquaintance with the philosophy of the Greeks as must prove surprising to every one who has had his attention recalled of late to the same subject. To Mr. Grote we may point out, for instance, that he says (section 309), 'To understand and to be, are, according to Parmenides, the same thing;' and (section 320), 'According to Anaxagoras, there was a confused mass of all things in one chaos, but *mind* supervening, ἐπελθὼν, distinguished and divided them;' and to Mr. Lewes, as in reference to philosophy, that he opines (section 350) that 'He who hath not much meditated upon God, the human mind and the *summum bonum*, may possibly make a thriving earthworm, but will most indubitably make a sorry patriot and a sorry statesman.' Nay, even with a reference to later philosophy, there are expressions in this work which equally surprise. Berkeley says there of space, for example (section 318), 'If we consider that it is no intellectual notion, nor yet per-

[1] This very perfect edition we now possess, and the Editor has more than satisfied in it every expectation.

ceived by any of our senses;' and this is, virtually, all that, on the same subject, was afterwards said by Kant. Hegel himself is not unrepresented here, as sections 359-365 will testify. There the English Bishop gives some hints towards that *speculative* founding or grounding of the doctrine of the Trinity on which the German Professor laid afterwards so much stress. In all these references Berkeley will be found peculiarly admirable for the spirit of candour and love which he manifests. For systems, flippantly characterized nowadays as Pantheistic or Atheistic, for example, he grudges not, in the sweetness of his own simple, sincere nature, to vindicate Theism. Altogether, one gets to admire Berkeley almost more here than elsewhere. The learning, the candour, and the depth of reflection, are all alike striking. As compared with Hume, in especial, it is here that Berkeley is superior; and *that* not only with reference to the learning, but with reference to the spirit of faith and gravity, as opposed to the spirit of doubt and levity. The most valuable ingredient in Berkeley is, after all, that he is a Christian.

## XXV.—*Kant.*

BY him who compares the translation with the original, it will be found that something has been done in this section (by parentheses or slight modifications) as well to provide a correct statement of the views of Kant, as to secure the understanding of them on the part of the student. Much explanatory illustration does not seem called for, then; but, carefully reading the text, I shall set down here such remarks as may naturally suggest themselves. The modifications alluded to will be found chiefly on pages 210, 211, 213, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 223, 224, and concern what I have spoken of as Kant's theory of perception. Much light into this theory is extended by simply substituting *perception* for *cognition*, the word which is generally used by others in translating Kant in this reference. A considerable amount of light lies, too, in the substitution of *perception* for *intuition*. The sensations of the various special senses, received into the universal *a priori* forms of space and time, are reduced into perceptive objects, connected together in a synthesis of experience, by the categories. These are the broad outlines of the theory



named; but Kant goes into the construction or realization of this theory with great minuteness. This realization or construction is scarcely represented in the statement of Schwegler, and constitutes that *deduction of the categories* (and *deduction* does not mean *derivation* but *justification*—a justifying exposition or construction), which is at once the central and the most difficult portion of the work of Kant. It is here that we have the various syntheses of imagination, apperception, etc. It is this *deduction*, in fact, which puts meaning into that scheme of categories which, as it stands in Schwegler, is hardly either intelligible or credible. Kant has often been charged with mere empiricism in deriving his categories from formal logic; but the objectors have mostly ignored that *a priori* and demonstrated nature of formal logic on which Kant always insists so much, and to which I allude in a parenthetic addition on page 221. Page 215, in the series of the great works of Kant, I shall be found to have substituted the *Kritik of Judgment* for the work on *Religion within the bounds of Pure Reason*. Page 217, Schwegler says that the *Kritik of Pure Reason* is the *inventarium* of all our possessions through pure reason. This is an error, as I have pointed out elsewhere, and I have substituted for *inventarium* the word *ground-plan*. Page 225, Kant speaks of the necessity of a 'whole or *nature* of things;' this strikes the key-note of the great difference between the Germans and the Positivists in their modes of viewing existence. The former demand an intelligible necessary context or synthesis of things; the latter admit only an unintelligible conjunction of bare consequents and bare antecedents that is co-extensive with experience alone. On pages 212 and 216, one gets a clear glimpse of the difference between the procedures of Kant and criticism, and those of Hume and scepticism. Kant would honestly investigate and tabulate the source, nature, and extent of all those *aporias*, which Hume only summons up as spectres for the confusion of faith. Kant's Copernican allusion was probably suggested by a passage that occurs in the last paragraph but two of the first section of Hume's *Enquiry concerning Human Understanding*. It is of great importance that the reader should not misunderstand the state of Kant's conviction in regard to the moral postulates, that is, to the existence of God, the immortality of the soul, and the freedom of the will. Coleridge, it is known,

doubted Kant's sincerity in their regard. Very unfortunately for himself, however, for such a doubt is a conviction of ignorance. The moral scheme of Kant is by far the purest that any philosopher has ever broached. In an act of moral volition, he will have no pathological element whatever present; our rational will shall be absolutely free and autonomous, and obey no law but its own. Now, if this position be wholly based on one of the postulates, so rigorous is it, that it finds, though in a peculiar indirect manner, the other two to tend against it. Let the existence of God be once for all absolutely certain, let the immortality of the soul be once for all absolutely certain, then fear and hope—pathological elements—cannot be prevented from intruding into moral motive, and the purity of the categorical imperative is vitiated. The immortality of the soul and the existence of God are indeed for Kant absolutely necessary consequences of our *moral* constitution itself, still it is not without satisfaction that he finds our *cognitive* faculty, as he thinks, wholly incompetent to *prove* these principles. We cannot prove these principles, he says, but neither can the enemy disprove them; and meantime they have *morally* precisely that support and no more which coheres with their essential interests. Were this support greater, were they, once for all, certainties of knowledge, then the moral law, which is either categorical or naught, were for ever paralysed. Kant positively hails with satisfaction, then, as a special and express provision of God himself, this theoretical uncertainty of the postulates that compels us to take refuge in the practical world, in the world of morals. Besides the great benefit—the freedom of the moral law—he sees in this arrangement a discipline also which is to secure us on one side from irreligious self-abandonment, and on the other from superstitious fanaticism. It is pleasant to perceive, however, the warm affection that Kant has at heart for the argument from design; he cannot help availing himself, so far as he can, of the support it yields; and it is important to know that it is not after all the moral, but the intellectual, interest that compels him to doubt it. To Kant, namely, all that we know is from within—subjective sensational states (due certainly to external antecedents which, nevertheless, are absolutely unknown) realized into an objective



system of experience by subjective intellectual faculties—evidently, then, in such a world there is no room for the action on it of a God from without. *Could* we know the external world, then, if God has made it according to *design* and according to *beauty*, we should be able to know both of these also; but internal sensations synthesized by internal intellections can give no knowledge of outer things themselves, let alone their design and beauty. Plainly, then, in these respects, Kant must, in regard of his theoretical world, whatever was the situation of his moral one, have found himself peculiarly hampered. Hence the *Kritik of Judgment*. It was precisely on this Kantian condition of knowledge that Hegel broke in with his very fiercest wrath. What! the truth is never possible for us, we must know but delusions and appearances only; and of what we do know, we are only to say we know what has received filling from impressions of sense? Great is Hegel's scorn here, and very grim his laugh at the inability of poor Kant to believe in the substantiality of the ego, because it was not a thing, a sensuous thing. It is at page 227 that Schwegler reports on this matter. There we see that the ego was to Kant nothing but the simple reflection 'I am,' or 'I think;' 'the "I think,"' we hear, 'is neither perception nor notion, but a mere consciousness, etc. . . . falsely converted into a thing.' What, in this reference, Hegel blew into annihilation with a breath of his scorn, Coleridge fell down before and worshipped. Kant's 'I think,' which was neither perception nor notion, nothing but a bare consciousness, was to Coleridge the infinite *I Am*, in whom we live, move, and have our being! A great portion of the Logic of Hegel is taken up with a criticism of the elements of Kant, and never was there a criticism more unsparing or more absolutely exhaustive. The paralogisms that are to subvert the ego, the cosmological antinomies, the objections to the arguments for the existence of God, are all subjected by Hegel to a sifting, to a closeness of scrutiny never before paralleled, and with satisfactory results for the spiritualist on all hands. I may allude also to Hegel's statement of Kant in the *Encyclopædia* as perhaps the most powerful and successful analytic objective synthesis at present in existence. At page 239, we find Kant's view of the Trinity, a very different one from that of Hegel, to

whom that doctrine was the essential basis of religion. At page 246, we have Kant's approaches to, but failure fairly to seize, the notion of immanent adaptation, or of that intuitive understanding which would recognise in the universal the particular. The phrase *intuitive understanding* conveyed to Hegel that conception of the all of things according to which thought and perception were one—thought not only was *in itself* (the universal, the noumenon), but in realization also (the particular, the phenomenon).

## XXVI.—*Jacobi.*

IN the very clear exposition here, room for explanation there is none. It is a pleasure to see such an authority as Jacobi able to do full justice to the Kantian transformation of the *ideas* of theoretical, into the *postulates* of practical, reason. In reading this section, the competent student cannot fail to be impressed by a sense of how much Sir William Hamilton owes to Jacobi, especially as regards the intuition of belief. Jacobi is an admirable stylist; so it is that stylist hung on stylist, and that Hamilton drew so much of his knowledge of the Germans from this source. It must be matter of regret, indeed, that such a trenchant subjective intellect as Hamilton's allowed itself, in its own natural impatience and impetuosity, to know of the great masters of German speculation only, for the most part, what exoteric writers told him. Hence the undigested fragments which, now no honour to him, might through labour have been replaced by what would have given stimulus and support to thousands. Hamilton's 'Conditioned' is an unfortunate and perverted echo from the same influences. Nor do I think that either his additions to logic or his doctrine of common sense will sustain inquiry. His psychology, however, is not without genuine materials. He is, perhaps, the only Scottish psychologist of any veritable historical value since Brown. But, generally, let Hamilton's objective product be what it may, we must not forget his great and real subjective ability. No man that ever lived could draw a distinction to a sharper edge than Hamilton could; he has the style of genius, the temperament of genius, and, with all his faults, he is, perhaps, a bigger man in the field of mental philosophy than any man that has followed him in Great Britain (though Ferrier is *finer* perhaps). It is to be borne in mind, too, that the above criticism concerns only what may be called Hamilton's ultimate result as an original philosopher, and that there is no intention to undervalue his writings in other respects. These, indeed, are always brilliant, forcible, clear, and, where information is concerned, both entertaining and instructive.



## XXVII.—*Fichte.*

THE student, it may be, will find greater difficulty here than elsewhere in Schwegler. The unsubstantiality, the airiness of the deduction in general, and of what concerns *contraposition* in particular, will probably be found the source of this. On the first head, indeed, it is impossible not to wonder, as Kant did, at the busy, eager, never-doubting Fichte, who will develop the world from a process, so to speak, of *in and in*. Only when he gets to a wholly concrete sphere is it that he becomes at all satisfactory. *Then* his method becomes simply a *form* that lays out the (concrete) *matter* clearly before us. This is seen in the practical sphere, and is there really valuable. As regards contraposition, the key-note has been already struck when it was said, that, given a positive, its negative counterpart is also given, as cold in reference to heat, etc. The quotation from Professor Ferrier, already given (p. 360), 'Whatever epithet or predicate is applied to one of the terms of the antithesis, the counter-predicate must be applied to the other term,' has this reference. Schwegler's language is, 'Whatever belongs to the ego, the counterpart of that must, by virtue of simple contraposition, belong to the non-ego;' and again, 'As many parts of reality as the ego determines in itself, so many parts of negation does it determine in the non-ego, and conversely.' I fancy that the historical value of the method of Fichte will shrink, in the end, to its influence on Hegel. Without the method of the *Wissenschaftslehre*, there never would have been the method of the *Logic*. When it is said, on p. 260, that Kant took his categories from experience, I have added 'in a manner,' referring to the demonstrated and *a priori* nature of formal logic as insisted on by Kant, and already alluded to. What is said (p. 261) about the

universal ego, as substituted in the deduction for the empirical ego, is not satisfactory. Let us generalize as much as we please, we still know no ego but the empirical ego, and can refer to none other. That, in the fragment of the first sonnet, for the sake of uniformity, I have substituted the second person for the first, will probably not be taken ill.

## XXVIII.—*Herbart.*

THERE is certainly a great deal in this section that is striking and ingenious, but in view of the fantastic and incredible nature of much else, probably our conclusion will be the same as that of Schwegler. The supposition of these 'reals' is the destruction of philosophy. How can unity, philosophy, be possible if the basis of all be an underived, heterogeneous, and really unknown many? Philosophy is possible only on the supposition of a single principle that possesses within itself the capability of transition into all existent variety and varieties. Then consider the absurdity of such questions as 'A body is coloured, but not without light; how then about this quality in the dark?' There is a look of depth here that may take with some, but I know no parallel to such a question unless the household mystery of, Where was Adam when the light went out? To suppose something present when its very constituent conditions are absent, is a return to the noumenon that is without a quality. Erdmann is incisively clear on Herbart, and Ueberweg extends us a very satisfactory relative breadth.

## XXIX.—*Schelling.*

THERE is little to be said here, and any difficulty occurs only in the latest paragraphs. One likes the genial glances of Schelling, but one dislikes his incessant changes. A human being leaping in such a variety of directions, according to the latest goad, is not an edifying spectacle. His best contributions are probably those in analogy with Böhm; his worst, where he conceals what he misunderstood in Hegel in vast, vague, mythological forms that have no merit but such as an Ossian might claim. The exposition of these last, however, is an addition independent of Schwegler.



What followed here in previous editions is now unnecessary, the last sentence on p. 311 being modified, as well as the footnote. The eighth German edition, in omitting the comma after *das*, made the sentence plain; and, p. 290, vol. xi. of Schelling's works will be found to confirm this. The potential subject, $-A$, has the "first" claim to *being;* but $\mp A$, as potential spirit, has the "highest," while the potential object, $+A$, the $\mu\grave{\eta}\ \check{o}\nu$, has none at all. Köstlin's part in the exposition of Schelling is, in point of fact, clear, penetrating, complete, and quite worthy of the rest of the book. Schwegler died before Schelling's relative work appeared. It is to be noted that $\mp A$ is object in respect of $-A$, and subject in respect of $+A$.

## XXX.—*Hegel.*

THE competent reader, who keeps the original before him, will probably feel pleased with any little turn or modification which he may find in the translation of this section. In III. 2. (*b.*) (2), for example, he will perceive that, to make the text consistent and intelligible, I was obliged to refer to Hegel himself. When it is considered that the life and works of Hegel present themselves, as they appear on the library shelves, in no less than twenty-two good-sized volumes, it will be readily understood that Schwegler's twenty-eight pages can do but scant justice to so large an amount of matter. Accordingly they can be regarded occasionally as only extended contents. (This is more especially the case, perhaps, with what we have under the 'absolute spirit.') Nevertheless, I regard this statement of Schwegler's as, on the whole, not unsuccessful in giving a glimpse as well of the matter as the form of Hegel. The 'logic,' though shortened or fore-shortened into what, I fear, must seem to the unacquainted reader only caricature, is really in itself, however inadequate as a complete exposition, a spirited sketch. The four pages on 'the objective spirit' again, though representative of two volumes, 'the philosophy of right,' and 'the philosophy of history' (the latter need hardly be mentioned, however), I positively like, and expect more good from, whether as regards Hegel or as regards the public, than from all the rest. The little hint of Schwegler's against this part of the philosophy of Hegel as a 'State-philosophy,' I would not have the reader to take altogether

*au pied de la lettre*. By far the best lesson the Germans can give us lies in the ethical works of Kant, and the ethical and political ones of Hegel. It is these, however (with the religious), that, in the case of Hegel, have excited the shrieks of the German radicals and free-thinkers.

What disheartens the student of Hegel is, firstly, the impossibility of reading *in* Hegel; and, secondly, the difficulty of attaining, in his regard, to a general conclusion. The curious peculiarity, too, on the first head, is that, open where we may in Hegel, we find him always engaged in saying pretty well the same thing. Open where we may, in short, it is always the *dialectic* we encounter, and that dialectic is always the same, whatever element it may be in act to transform. Nay, there is also a peculiar *dialect* to which this dialectic has led, and which renders it impossible for Hegel to escape into general and current speech, even when employed on matters that are not esoteric. This is to be seen even in the 'philosophy of history,' which, of all the representations of Hegel, is perhaps the easiest. That perpetual *abstract* alone, as, for instance, Rome's *abstracte Herrschaft*, must have irritated most readers. Not only that, however, but Hegel seems to have brought from very nature a tendency to *grübeln*, to grub and grope and burrow like a mole in the ground. We see this in the earliest papers we possess from him; in those, for example, that relate to his theological studies when a tutor in Switzerland. Specimens of these we have in the life by Rosenkranz, and they seem scarcely human; they seem constructed for an understanding that moves only in the interior. Hegel, at his ripest and best, has attained to a broad homely Suabian Doric, that, racy with hits, is not unkindly, or that, 'stubborned with iron,' can annihilate roughly with a laugh—to a speech, then, at once forceful, plain, and clear; but he was not, probably, by gift of nature a stylist. Hodden-grey at his finest, there was a tendency in him—early in life an effort even—to get muffled and uncouth, and lost from sight in the hopelessly *baroque*. Something of this we see at page 320, in the quotation from the Phenomenology. The figures in which Hegel would there find air for himself are big and mouthing and confused; and he makes no scruple to stride a cross metaphor. Let it have been as it may, however, with the style or natural speech of Hegel, the



impossibility of reading in him is due mainly to his dialectic and consequent dialect. What *is* this dialectic, then, we naturally ask, on which the whole problem hinges? Let us but know that, and we shall have a key to the dialect, and thence to the whole. The usual explanation of this dialectic is what we find in Schwegler, as in reference to the 'absolute method' 'that advances from notion to notion through negation,' etc. (see pp. 317, 323, 324). Now, as discussed elsewhere, I hold this and all such explanations to be external merely, and to miss the main point. That point is the notion, the concrete notion, and in its derivation from Kant; and that is the 'secret of Hegel.' Hegel, undoubtedly, was not without debts to Schelling; but I know not that it was 'from reflection on the one-sidedness of Schelling that the Hegelian philosophy arose.' Schelling's 'nature,' and his 'absolute,' and his reference to Böhm, did much, it is true, for Hegel, but the *form* of Fichte, and certainly the *matter* of Kant did much more. In short, it comes to this, *inspired by their example, Hegel sought the one idealistic principle to which he might reduce all.* To be in earnest with idealism, Hegel said to himself, is to find all things whatever but forms of thought. But how is that possible without a standard—without *a* form of thought, that, in application to things, will reduce them to itself? What, in fact, *is* thought—what is its ultimate, its principle, its radical? These questions led to the result that what was peculiar to thought, what characterized the function of thought, what constituted the special nerve of thought, was a triple *nisus*, the movement of which corresponded in its successive steps or moments to what is named in logic simple apprehension, judgment, and reason. Simple apprehension, judgment, and reason, do indeed constitute chapters in a book, but they collapse in man into a single force, faculty, or virtue, that has these three sides. That is the ultimate pulse of thought—that is the ultimate virtue into which man himself retracts. Let me but be able then, thought Hegel, to apply this standard to all things in such manner as shall demonstrate its presence in them, as shall demonstrate it to be their nerve also, as shall reduce all things into its identity, and I shall have accomplished the one universal problem. All things shall then be demonstratively resolved into thought, and idealism—absolute idealism—definitively established. This is the secret of

Hegel, and all the details of the execution, if with effort, still follow of themselves. The first moment of the notion is simple apprehension, identity, the universal,—that the beginning of the system, then, as in evolution, should be pure being, cannot surprise. Those who object to the beginning with being, indeed, only expose their ignorance of the principle of Hegel. That principle is the radical, the ultimate nerve, the pulse of actual living thought, and not being and nothing, nor any mere abstract formula about synthesis, antithesis, position, negation, etc. These names, indeed, are not inapplicable to the concrete notion, but they are not that notion, nor can they be substituted for it.[1] Then it shall not be enough to demonstrate all things to be made on the model of the notion, but its own inherent triple *nisus* shall constitute the *movement* also; the means, that is, of transition between things, or of transformation of one thing into another. And thus the universe shall be presented as but a vast system of thought, self-referent to the unity of a single living pulse. This system is, and is eternal as it is. Still under explanation all becomes fluent, and refers itself genetically to the single pulse. That pulse, in its own movement, is adequate to its own *internal* realization, which complete, it is only a necessary result of the same pulse that it should sunder into an *external* realization, and so on. (The phenomenon or shadow of the noumenon is as necessary as the shadow of light.) This, then, is the secret of Hegel's dialectic. Let us come upon it wherever we may, we shall find that the element concerned, under subjection (as is supposed) to the process of pure original thought, passes from the roller of simple apprehension to that of judgment, whence reason receiving it returns it in a new form, or as a new element, to simple apprehension again. Or an element presents itself always at first in its universality or abstract identity, passes into its particularity or abstract difference, and issues in its singularity or concrete wholeness; just as to Hegel a whole act of thought consists of an act of simple apprehension on an object, followed by another of judgment, and that finally by a third of reason. The

[1] The truth is, at the same time, that *it* was substituted for *them*; Hegel, that is, converted Fichte's artificial abstract receipt for an *a priori* deduction into what he conceived the actual pulse of actual living thought, to the development, as he also conceived or represented,—but only with enormous labour and ingenuity of construction,—of the ultimate or essential system of the universe.



dialectic, then, being but the means that mediates the transition or transformation of one thing into another, may, to a certain extent, be neglected for these things themselves? This, to a certain extent, is indeed possible, but only to a certain extent. Did we altogether neglect the dialectic that transforms substantiality into causality, or that that transforms causality into reciprocity, for example, we should find that we had not attained the metaphysic of these notions, the explanation of them. For it is to be said, that Hegel (possibly even in independence of the dialectic) has fairly thought out the problem of all these notions, and the result is contained in the dialectic. One suspects this dialectic, distrusts it; still its power is wonderful. In approaching in the 'logic,' for instance, the exposition of the Absolute (an exposition that does not appear in the Encyclopædia), one is apt to say to one's-self, What we shall have here will be the old difficulty of finite and infinite, that if God is the affirmation of all that is, he is likewise, and even so, its negation: that will be turned and returned, and advance there will be none. But let him but honestly live himself into the discussion, and he will admit, in the end, that the Absolute has been very fairly construed into the Attribute, and the Attribute into the Modus. Still, it is to be admitted, that to take on one's-self the full weight of the dialectic is to expose one's-self almost to insupportable pain. Hegel, then, whether led to it by the dialectic, or by a previous and independent study, must be credited with the most satisfactory answers yet to the whole body of the various metaphysical problems. The Aristotelian logic he has similarly made once more alive. Returning to his secret, however, we may again say that no abstract speech about 'negation,' etc., will ever explain it; it is simply this, That, in earnest with idealism, he sought the radical of thought, and applied it, when found, resolvingly to all things that are in heaven or upon earth. This is the true answer, and, however familiar, however popular, the system of Hegel may become in the course of generations, in consequence of the completion of its exposition in such detail as is applied, in the *Secret of Hegel*, to *quality* and other sections of the *Logic*, there never will be an answer in a single proposition easier or closer. It is this, in the main, that the present annotator claims to have first said and demonstrated. In this reference, then, the

answer of Schwegler is not satisfactory. His expressions in regard to Schelling, and Fichte, and Kant, are wide of, or simply beside, the truth. His explanations about 'negation,' and 'position,' and 'opposites,' etc., are abstractions without a glimpse of the concrete reality involved. When he says, then (p. 324), 'His (Hegel's) beginning is not with certain highest axioms in which all further development is already implicitly contained, and serves consequently simply for their more particular characterization; but, taking stand on what requires no further support of proof, on the simplest notion of reason, that of pure being, he deduces thence, in a progress from abstracter to concreter notions, the complete system of pure, rational knowledge,' he does not explain, he wholly misses, the real concrete beginning, and only substitutes therefor the formal and abstract start. Similarly, when he speaks (p. 323) of the deduction of the notions, 'the one from the other,' etc., he has no perception of the one original central notion to the movement of which the whole is due. This perception, indeed, is still absent when his language is otherwise correct. Thus it is correct to say (p. 317), 'This immanent spontaneous evolution of the notion is the method of Hegel;' but still the proposition is, so to speak, blind till we know *what notion;* and Schwegler has nowhere extended us that. Again (p. 316), this is correct and admirably descriptive indeed, 'Thought is not one external form of the absolute beside others; it is the absolute itself in its concrete unity of self; it is the idea come back to itself—the idea that knows itself to be the truth of nature, and the power in it;' but even granting Schwegler to know that *existence is the absolute identity, and in its absolute difference*, there is no hint here of the *triple nisus* of thought that is the unseen agency of the whole.

Assuming now, then, that the difficulty of reading *in* Hegel has been sufficiently explained, we pass to the second circumstance that disheartens his student, and that is the difficulty, as regards the system, of attaining to a summary conception of its general result. Where is God in the system? it is asked; and what is its ruling on the immortality of the soul? Now, it is to be confessed that doubts as to how to answer these questions exist even within what is called *the school*, and some time will pass, probably, before, to universal satisfaction, they can be fairly resolved. The creed of Hegel is undoubtedly



spiritualism: it is not materialism. What alone exists for Hegel, what alone substantially is, is thought. But then it readily occurs to be objected, It is very true that all actual existences pass, and that what alone is permanent is the intelligible relations and ideas which these existences express; but still it is only these existences that have or had reality, the positive fruition of actual being, while these so-called permanent ideas are after all but relations, forms, that, always existing not *per se*, but only *per aliud*, can never be said to exist in truth at all. Annihilate the things, and where are your forms? The forms of mathematics exist in all things, but without the things, what were mathematics for a life? It is this shadowy universal that, apparently alone the outcome of Hegel, is the greatest difficulty in his regard; for if that be all, then there is for man neither a God nor an immortality, in whom, or which, he can take the smallest interest. That is pantheism. Only the idea is, all forms are but its expressions; they pass, but it endures for ever. It is this that has substantiated itself in the world; it is this that substantiates itself in history. What is, then, is the idea, the reason of this universe, and it is a system in itself. The visible universe, indeed, is of this system but the perishable and ever perishing phenomenon. The idea is the noumenon, which, timeless and spaceless, alone is. Man, men, are the necessary singulars in whom this universal and this particular meet and are realized. He is the concrete in whom are actualized both abstractions. The highest form of the idea, for example, is ever corporealized in the arts, sciences, and institutions, in the religions and philosophies of man. The individual man perishes, but the majestic spectacle remains. In a word, thought alone is, and for its own life, its own growth, it uses up the solidity of things, whose perpetual death is its perpetual birth. This, as said, is, as I understand it, pantheism; and it is the most hopeless theory that has ever been offered to humanity. If this is the result of Hegel, and if it is to be understood as demonstrated truth, then, to my view, it is the most unfortunate result that has ever issued, and the disappearance of man, as but a *pithecus intelligens*, into the shelves of the rock, cannot be long to wait for. Idealism and materialism here fall together with a vengeance, and the only question that remains between them is, whether are the ideal relations or the material exemplifications the *prius?*—a

question that will be answered so soon as it is determined whether the hen or the egg is first.

> 'Be near me when my light is low,
> Be near me when my faith is dry!'

In days of doubt, these are the cries of the *faithful*. So it is, then, that, though to me the creed of Hegel is not that pantheism of despair that gives itself big words only, there have been times when he rose before me haggard, wan, his brow wet with the perspiration of hopelessness—a hopelessness confessed by the hollow laughter itself, by the very audacity that would conceal it. However painful, then, I do not wonder at, nor seek to hide, the unfortunate experiences of some who at least began with Hegel. Through what strange series of beliefs or unbeliefs does not Feuerbach descend from the logical idea to naked sense! '*Der Mensch ist was er isst*,' man is what he eats: the little gleam of a *calembour* is the only spiritual consolation that remains to *him!* Oh, the pity of it! And what but pity is allowed us as we hang by the couch of 'the invalid of the Rue d'Amsterdam' over the white ash of an utter contempt for life, for existence, for this the necessary outcome of the all, of reason—the white ash which once was so warm a heart, so eager and so swift a soul?

> 'Hold thou the good: define it well:
> For fear divine Philosophy
> Should push beyond her mark, and be
> Procuress to the Lords of Hell.'

But, worst of all, Ruge, the bold, brilliant Ruge, whose special merit it was 'to have first introduced the youth of Halle into the metaphysical depths of the Hegelian philosophy,' winds up his destiny by translating—for Germans!—that hollow make-believe of windy conceit, Buckle's *Civilisation in England!* It is difficult, indeed, to support Hegel under such a blow as this last! But is it right to lay wholly at his door the calamities of the stylists, or the temper of the time? The fiery heads that light up the day with the rockets of genius, have yet, in subjective vanity, subjective impatience, hardly opportunity for the slow and laborious accumulation of principles. By such men, then, Hegel is not to be judged, nor by the revolt of such men is his school destroyed. The historian



Ueberweg testifies, to-day even, that 'the philosophy the most in vogue in the philosophical schools of Germany is still the Hegelian.' Then as for the temper of the time, it is for Schopenhauer that life is 'a cheat, and a uselessly interrupting episode in the blissful repose of nothing,' and Schopenhauer hated Hegel.

We shall not burden Hegel with the whole weight of his own time, then, nor, should our own lamp, or the lamps of others, burn as low or as extravagantly as they may, shall we impute to him alone the blame of it. This is certain, that if the result of Hegel is the pantheistic despair in question, his entire industry has simply stultified itself. The philosophy of Hegel was avowedly a philosophy of restoration and religious orthodoxy, and his action throughout was essentially a reaction against the *Aufklärung*—against that stripping naked of all things in heaven or upon earth at the hands of the modern party of unbelief, and under guidance of so-called reason or rationalism. The resulting anarchy of naked, isolated, unsupported atoms was plain to him. Only in religious belief is society possible, he thought. And a nation that believes not in God and the immortality of the soul, in the supernatural element generally, must, it appeared to him, even in its own madness, speedily dissipate and destroy itself. The negative, then, to Hegel, had now functioned to the full; it had done its work; and it was time for the affirmative to step in. His aim, then, was to provide us with an affirmative body of knowledge, theoretical, practical, and æsthetic, in which the great truths of natural and revealed religion should once more regain their authority, but in harmony with the rights of intelligence and the light of free thought.

In confirmation of this position we may point out, in the first place, that Hegel must be credited with a perfect faith in his principle. I confess that, for my part, this principle is still to be verified; but, very evidently, it was not so for Hegel. He speaks again and again, and apparently with the most perfect assurance, of philosophy being now at last realized by it; whatever be the sphere, indeed, he cannot move a step without it, and it seems not to have been always for him a canon of regulation, but sometimes also an organon of discovery. There are several points of view in his Æsthetic and Philosophy of History, for example,

to which he appears to have been led in simply prosecuting the dialectic of the notion.

In the second place, I am convinced that Hegel believed in the existence of God—of God as a *subject*, too, and not merely as *substance*. 'God,' he says (*Propædeutik*, page 75), 'is the Absolute Spirit, that is to say, He is the pure essential being that makes Himself object to Himself, but so only regards Himself; or in this other that He has become, has directly returned into Himself, and is identical with Himself. According to the moments of this being, God is (1.) absolutely Holy, so far as He is in Himself the absolutely universal being. He is (2.) absolute Power, so far as He realizes the All, and preserves the individual in the All, or is eternal *Creator of the Universe*. He is (3.) Wisdom, so far as His power is only *holy* power; (4.) Goodness, so far as He leaves the individual free in his actuality; and (5.) Justice, so far as He eternally restores the individual to the universal' (through mortification of self, or sin, that is). 'The position of religion,' he says again (*Hist. of Phil.* i. page 87), 'is this, that the revelation of the truth, which we receive through it, is a revelation externally given to man; hence it is said, that he must accept it in humility, human reason being of itself incapable of attaining thereto. The character of positive religion is, that its truths *are*, without our knowing whence or how they have come, and in such wise that what they contain, as given to us, is consequently above and beyond our reason. Sometime, through prophet or divine messenger, the truth is declared; as Ceres and Triptolemus, who introduced tillage of the soil and wedlock, are therefore honoured by the Greeks, so were the nations grateful for Moses and Mahomet. This externality, as regards what individual the truth has been given by, is something historical, that for the absolute import in itself is indifferent, seeing that the person is not the import of the doctrine itself. In the Christian religion, however, this is peculiar, that this person of Christ, His character to be the Son of God, does itself belong to the very nature of God. Were Christ for Christians only a teacher, like Pythagoras, Socrates, or Columbus, then there were here no universal divine message, no revelation, no instruction respecting the nature of God, in regard to which alone we desire instruction. The truth, no doubt, let it stand



on whatever stadium it may, must first come to mankind in an external manner, in the form of a sensuously perceived, actually present object: as Moses caught sight of God in the burning bush, and the Greeks gave themselves a consciousness of their gods in figures of marble or other such representations. But then, neither in religion nor philosophy do we, or ought we to, remain by this externality. Such form of imagination, or such historical import, as in the latter case Christ, must for spirit become spirit, and so cease to be an externality; for the mode of externality is not the mode of spirit. We are to know God "in spirit and in truth;" God is the Universal, the Absolute, the Essential Spirit. As regards the relation of the human spirit to this spirit, the following are the characteristics.' And now there follows as intelligible and at the same time as profound a speculative exposition of the relation of the finite to the infinite spirit as can be found in the whole series of the works of Hegel, and which leaves no doubt of God being to Hegel a concrete being and no logical *abstractum*. It is here that Hegel exclaims, 'I am a Lutheran, and will remain one.' In presence of such things, and of the innumerable similar intimations that pervade the whole works of Hegel, it is impossible to believe in aught but the theism of the writer, or else in his own unparalleled self-stultification. We may refer in particular to the *Philosophy of Religion*, the *Philosophy of History*, and the *History of Philosophy*. How, otherwise than on the supposition of his theism, can we account for Hegel's incessant defence of the various theological arguments against the objections of Kant, and, in particular, for those *Proofs for the Existence of God*, which he had but completed for the press when the fatal cholera seized him? The ordinary abstraction of the deistic *être suprême* was certainly rejected by Hegel, but he had as certainly realized to himself the nature of the true God with a depth of vision never before exemplified. Mr. Lewes's extraordinary mistake in this connexion has a note to itself.

In the third place, it appears to me that the whole tendency of the writings of Hegel supports belief in the immortality of the soul. In reply (*Works*, xvii. p. 226) to an opponent who professes not to find this doctrine in the philosophy of Hegel, Hegel himself asks:—'Is it not the case that in this philosophy the spirit is elevated

above all those categories which involve Decease, Destruction, Death, etc., to say nothing of other equally express declarations?' In fact, we have but to recollect the warm manner in which Hegel hails all such categories as the Infinite, declaring 'that at the name of the Infinite, there rises to the soul its own light,' at the same time that he speaks of the melancholy (*Trauer*) of the thought of finitude, and, though 'the most stiff-necked category of the understanding,' resolves it—we have but to recollect these and other such expressions, as that unreality death, the death of the body is the birth of the spirit, the soul is concrete at death, and has taken up into itself the freight of the world, and then the whole express discussion of the subject in the *Philosophy of Religion*—we have but to recollect all this, I say, to feel convinced of the perfect loyalty of Hegel to the 'hope of immortality.' His remarks on Kant's application of the category of degree to the soul is to the same effect; and there is that even in his treatment of Mesmerism which claims for him a belief in the concrete existence of the individual in the universal.

In the fourth place, what are we to make of the *Vindication of Christianity as the Revealed Religion?* Are we to believe that Hegel is here a hypocrite? No, that is impossible; Christianity is to Hegel a concrete truth, and he is nowhere more in earnest than in the speculative founding or grounding of all its dogmas. And the 'speculative' of Hegel is not the 'moral' of Kant, but the very inmost nerve of religious thought, such as we find only in our deepest and truest theologians. As a single *token* of the nature of his belief, we may state that the resurrection of Christ is to Hegel an actual fact. But if Hegel has speculatively demonstrated the truth of Christianity, what consequences immediately follow? Surely belief in the existence of God and the immortality of soul among the first! What were the sense, indeed, of an effort to reconcile philosophy and Christianity as the Revealed Religion, that yet rejected all belief in God and the immortality of the soul?

The one object of Hegel, then, was to support or restore belief in God, in the immortality of the soul, and in the revealed nature of the Christian religion. However abstract and merely logical, indeed, the terms Notion and Idea may sound, they as little preclude belief in the concrete spirit of God as in the concrete



spirit of man. Thought without a thinker is inconceivable, and absolute thought involves an absolute subject. It throws light on this one object of Hegel to consider that it was not the believing but the unbelieving that he conceived himself to address. The great thing at last for Hegel was a good citizen, and for him who was already that, there was to Hegel's mind no call for philosophy. Thus he tells a M. Duboc who writes to him about his difficulties with the system, that, as a good head of a house and father of a family, possessed of a faith that is firm, he has pretty well enough, and may consider anything further, in the way of philosophy, for instance, as but a *Luxus des Geistes*—an intellectual luxury. The philosophy of Hegel, then, was not addressed to those whose natural moral and religious instincts were already sound, but to those—they are called 'educated minds,' 'higher souls,' etc.—who had been disintegrated by the thoughtless sceptical levity, or, it may be, by the thoughtful sceptical melancholy of the day. But reconciliation of the discarded concrete to *thought*, was evidently here the central necessity. Hence, as we have seen, a scrutiny of thought so profound that it was for the most part unintelligible, and at the same time apparently so exhaustive that it excited the absurdest expectations. We have here the elements for an explanation of the monstrous aberrations of the 'German Critics,' Strauss, Bauer, Ruge, Feuerbach, and others. Intelligence baffled, at the same time that speculation seemed absolutely at term, despair could be the only outcome. But this despair could not be idle, and all the less that it felt itself preternaturally gifted by the invincible weapons with which the study of Hegel, unsuccessful in the main issue as it was, had abundantly supplied it. Hence that wonderful activity of attack against all the pillars of religion which for some years slackened not, and which even yet, especially in France and England, is not wholly exhausted. Of the absurd expectations alluded to, Krug's appeal to Hegel for a *deduction* of his writing-quill, affords a good example. It is by no means intended to be hinted that the German Critics nourished any such ridiculous expectation as this of Krug. Dissatisfaction with the dialectic and its results; darkness, especially with regard to the main mysteries of life; belief in the completion of speculation, and involuntary apprehension of

its failure—this is all that we would impute to them. We must not expect too much from Hegel, however, as a slight consideration of his principle will readily demonstrate. What that principle lays out, according to the immanent tree, is *this* world; and Hegel, in restoring the foundations of knowledge, and action, and belief, would not compete with Swedenborg, nor introduce us into actual experience of the future state or presence of God. A supernatural element has accompanied man throughout his whole history; a supernatural element is, to the majority of human beings, as obviously present in the world as the natural one; Hegel saw this general conviction of humanity, conceived it justified, and sought to give it logical precision—not without immense success, but still not without what to a spirit-rapping age must appear *lacunæ*. This is the brief of the matter; and so far as any *direct* (sensuous) knowledge of the supernatural is concerned, after as before Hegel—and perfectly with his consent—the ancient mysteries are mysteries still.

Hegel's merit, nevertheless, is the vindication of *reason* as against *understanding*, of the faculty that unites and brings together as against the faculty that separates and only in separation knows. Nor is this vindication anywhere more successful than in the religious element. The relation of finite and infinite is existent fact; communion, then, identity and yet difference, this was the necessity to be explained, and we may assume Hegel to have accomplished it. His unintelligible language, however, I would animate by the following metaphor, which may at least render the *unio mystica* at once credible and intelligible.

Suppose all that existed in the world were a single drop of water—space and its contents retracted into that. Well, evidently, seeing that it is only *one* drop that is concerned, there is no room for any considerations of size. It is indifferent whether we figure the drop as a pin's point or a pin's head in magnitude. This drop, then, shall be the Absolute. But this drop now is not more *one* than it is *many*. It is a drop, a one, a single entity, and yet, whether it be infinitely small or infinitely large, being a *water* drop, it consists of an infinitude of droplets each of which is a one—a drop, quite as much as the original one, though only subordinate and dependent. Now even so I can figure Spirit and Spirits, the Monas and the Monads. Then further, if we conceive that these spirits, monads, droplets, are not externalities but internalities—completed internalities—there is room for the additional conception of each of them, the individual droplets and the universal drop, being phenomenally, say in the manner of a shadow, sundered or projected into externalities, an external world, which should apparently surround all and each of them, though they themselves were self-retained. 'And God said, Let there be light, and there was light:' the summed internality saw before itself, still self-retained, its own self *externalized*, and constituting *in the fashion of externality*, a boundless out and out of contingent, material, infinitely various atoms, into which fell, however, as principle of retention, the shadow of the original tree of intellect.

> 'Friendless was the mighty Lord of all
> And felt defect . . . .
> From the cup o' th' realm of spirits
> Foams now infinitude.'

In this manner I think we may provide a *Vorstellung* for the *Begriff* of the necessary unity of finite and infinite, and so that the one shall not unavoidably disappear before the other, nor the preservation in the spirit-world of the whole burthen of time—all those innumerable savages that slaughtered each other for example—any longer shock. Necessary existence *here* is necessary existence *there*. That Hegel would accept this illustration of his Triune Notion, it would be too much to say. It will be allowed, however, to be one at least probably in point.

Independent, then, of the great and undeniable contributions of Hegel to logic, to psychology, to moral and political philosophy, to æsthetics, to the philosophy of history, and to the history of philosophy, I think we may ascribe to him great light on all the speculative elements of religion also. In vindicating thought alone as the substantial element in the universe, he has extended immense support to every spiritual interest, and it were well did the Church but recognise in Hegel the most powerful bulwark that has ever, perhaps, been offered it. For all that, nevertheless, the work of Hegel is, as said, human; and it is impossible for speculation, impossible for theory, to satiate the longing of man. After Plotinus, as we have seen, in ancient times, speculation was exhausted, and men were irresistibly driven to *force*

a sign—to actual supersession of the laws of nature, to actual excitation of the deity by practices Thaumaturgic and Theurgic. The present epoch of the modern world is, in many respects, very similar to that epoch of the ancient. As, however, it was the Christian religion that saved the world then, so it may be the same religion that shall save the world now. Man must subordinate himself, confess his limits, once again acknowledge that the great supernatural verities are for faith and a trial to his faith, and so once again humble himself in prayer as the only agent Theurgic and Thaumaturgic that ever will be allowed him to move Heaven withal. It is the good Kant—and to Hegel himself his own philosophy is but Kantian philosophy—that has probably struck the truth here: we must do our duty for the duty's sake, and not for any pathological motive which might easily lie in the ideas of reason (the moral postulates) were they demonstrated truths and not practical convictions simply—such convictions as extend the needed twilight to humanity, and not the sunshine that would blind. At all events it is to this practical element, to moral and political philosophy, that we would point as the great gain that may be derived from the Germans. And here at present is precisely our own weak side. Ever since Reid, at whose heart lay the interests chiefly of the cognitive element, Ethics, and the practical sphere generally, have not received that attention in Great Britain that is their due.[1] This was not always so, however, and must not be any longer so. We must recall the example of Francis Hutcheson, to whom belongs, as well in Ethics as Æsthetics, an historical value which has not yet, perhaps, been adequately recognised. Nor is this, as said, a difficulty now. From the rich and all-embracing quarries of Kant, Fichte, and Hegel, there are ethical principles to be derived, of the solidity of which no man can doubt, let his doubts be what they may of the theoretical principles of the whole of them. Is it not indeed to Hegel, and especially his

[1] The truth of this remark is well illustrated, as these annotations pass through the press, by Mr. Laurie's praiseworthy *Notes on British Theories of Morals*. Mr. Laurie's Notes are limited only to a few British theories, yet the confusions of British thinkers manifest themselves so exasperatingly rife in them that we are reminded of Milton's horror at the distraction of the Saxon Heptarchy. Man is a moral being simply because he is a thinking being. That is the germ of the whole. Hence, in reality, the categorical imperative of Kant, and, more obviously, the free-will (the relation of the universal and the particular will) of Hegel.



philosophy of ethics and politics, that Prussia owes that mighty life and organization she is now rapidly developing? Is it not indeed the grim Hegel that is the centre of that organization which, maturing counsel in an invisible brain, strikes, lightning-like, with a hand that is weighted from the mass? But as regards the value of this organization, it will be more palpable to many, should I say, that, while in constitutional England, Preference-holders and Debenture-holders are ruined by the prevailing commercial immorality, the ordinary owners of Stock in Prussian Railways can depend on a safe average of 8·33 per cent. This, surely, is saying something for Hegel at last!

The fundamental outlines of Hegel must now, I think, be evident to every reader. I have gained much from Hegel, and will always thankfully acknowledge that much, but, my position in his regard has been simply that of one, who in making the unintelligible intelligible, would do a service for the public: I have not sought, and do not seek, to be considered a disciple. Hegel's great *formal* task has been to substitute the actual pulse of thought for the artificial principle of Fichte. Hence the Dialectic. This dialectic, it appears to me, has led to much that is equivocal both in Hegel and in others, and may become a pest yet. Not for his *formal* but for his *substantial* contributions, then, to logic and metaphysic, to ethics and politics, to æsthetics, to history, criticism, science, and religion, is it that Hegel, to my mind, will have his praise yet. His History of Philosophy alone is sufficient to stamp him a Colossus of unparalleled work, a Colossus of the most penetrating and original sagacity. My task has been to make plain what Hegel meant by the word *Notion*. Whether that Notion be really the pulse of thought—that is what is still to be verified—that is what I still doubt. So long as that doubt remains, I am not properly an Hegelian. My general aim, however, I conceive to be identical with Hegel's—though on a level quite incommensurably lower—that, namely, of a Christian philosopher.

I may add that the position I assign to Hegel is the position claimed by himself; and every word of those very critics, who would lead all into issues absolutely antagonistic,—every word of Ruge, for example,—will be found thoroughly and completely to substantiate this.

# SUPPLEMENTARY NOTES.

## I.

*Why the History of Philosophy ends with Hegel and not with Comte.*

I HOLD Schwegler to be perfectly right in closing the history of philosophy with Hegel, and not with Comte. Descriptions of the German philosophical movement since Hegel, such as we possess from the practised pen of Professor Erdmann, are exceedingly interesting and instructive; but when, in other writers, one surveys the various names that are subsecutive to that of Hegel, one cannot help 'wondering,' like Hegel himself in reference to Wendt, '*was da Alles als Philosophie aufgeführt wird.*' Among these names, however, so far as the Germans are concerned, and so far as I know, the name of Comte is not included. It is the French, and, perhaps, especially the English, who have assumed the vindication of *his* claims. Mr. Lewes, for one, fervidly presses them, and it is thus competent to us to turn our regards on them. Any consideration of them here, however, must now be only brief as well as very insufficiently authoritative in consequence of its dependence on knowledge only at second hand.[1] Both Mr. Lewes and Mr. Mill, nevertheless, offer us such accounts of Comte as are at least intended to produce a certain knowledge of him, and accordingly warrant discussion of his doctrines so far. As regards these doctrines, the most valuable statement contained in the work of Mr. Lewes is that extracted from Mr. Mill's relative article in the *Westminster Review*, and to that article, therefore, I shall, in the following—indications rather than discussion—on the whole confine myself. The article is an able one, calm, clear, and comprehensive: surely we have at least the means in it of enabling us to do some justice to the teaching of M. Comte.

[1] See p. 467.



The fundamental merits attributed to M. Comte are two in number: 1. His arrangement of the sciences; and 2. His so-called law of historical evolution.

I. M. Comte's arrangement of the sciences is into Abstract and Concrete. The Abstract are Mathematics (Number, Geometry, Mechanics), Astronomy, Physics (Barology, Thermology, Acoustics, Optics, Electrology), Chemistry, Biology, and Sociology. The Concrete again are 'postponed as not yet formed,' but they are represented by Mineralogy, Botany, and Zoology.

II. The so-called law of evolution, again, is that 'every distinct class of human conceptions' has, in its historical development, 'necessarily' exhibited three successive stages, named, respectively, the Theological, the Metaphysical, and the Positive. Accordingly, the single point to which the labours of M. Comte direct themselves, is the demonstration and establishment of the method of the ultimate and crowning Positive stage as the ultimate and crowning Positive method which henceforth, as alone legitimate, is alone to be adopted. This method, finally, is the investigation of phenomena simply as phenomena, or simply in their direct relations of association, whether simultaneous or successive, and without consideration of what they may be in themselves or in their own inner nature. The Positive method, in short, replaces all 'outlying agencies,' whether Theological deities or Metaphysical entities by Positive laws; which laws, and in their mere phenomenal relativity, as alone what can be known, ought alone to constitute what is sought to be known.

The most superficial glance at the pages of either Mr. Mill or Mr. Lewes will adequately prove what has just been said. To Mr. Lewes, for example, the arrangement of the sciences 'is nothing less than an organization of the sciences into a Philosophy;' and he frequently speaks of the 'famous *loi des trois états*' as 'Comte's discovery of the Law of Evolution;' while he evidently regards these two 'integral parts,' with the method they involve, as constitutive of the philosophical achievement of Auguste Comte. 'These,' he says, 'are his contributions, his titles to immortal fame,' 'the great legacy he has left.' Mr. Mill, again, if less enthusiastic, is no less decided. The arrangement of the sciences, for instance, he styles 'a very important part of M. Comte's philosophy,' a classification, which, if the best classification is that

which is grounded on the properties the most important for our purposes, 'will stand the test;' and in the same connexion, he speaks of 'that wonderful systematization of the philosophy of all the antecedent sciences,' which is a 'great philosophical achievement.' The so-called law of evolution, again, he regards as 'the most fundamental of the doctrines which originated with M. Comte,' 'the key to M. Comte's other generalizations, all of which are more or less dependent on it,' 'the backbone, if we may so speak, of his philosophy,' etc. And as concerns the general conclusion in reference to a Positive method, his expressions of satisfaction are incessant: 'belief in invariable *laws* constitutes the Positive mode of thought,' and this mode of thought is to M. Comte, with the approbation of Mr. Mill, 'the fundamental doctrine of a true philosophy.' Evidently, then, it is not without warrant that we assume the titles of M. Comte to the place of a *princeps* in philosophy to depend on his demonstrating the law of evolution, and philosophizing the sciences, to the general result of the Positive principle or method; and this, all consideration apart of the necessarily numerous merits in detail of a writer so gifted as M. Comte. On this understanding we proceed to the statement of a few objections.

Of the classification of the sciences we remark, in the *first* place, that it is *confessedly* incomplete. The latter half is even written up a possibility merely, while in the former, a capital subdivision (Barology, etc.) is *admitted* to remain independent of the general principle. In the *second* place, this general principle itself, while the most common and the least recondite, is at the same time the most vague and the least discriminative expedient of classification in existence. To take the simpler first and the more complicated last, is, on every question of arrangement, the first suggestion of every child of Adam. Grocers, drapers, apothecaries, the cook in the kitchen, the school-girl that sets up housekeeping on some wall or doorstep—these and a score more are there for the proof. As regards vagueness, again, it will be sufficient to point out that the distinction involved is only quantitative; it is simply a less or more; it is wholly inapplicable to, it is wholly inexplicative of, quality. In the *third* place, the distinction of abstract and concrete, as applied to the two chief classes, is really a misnomer. The second class certainly considers exist*ents*, and the



first only exist*ence*, but this distinction—and it is now only truly named—is either not properly a distinction of abstract and concrete at all, or it is a different abstract and concrete from that already used, and this difference, which is alone significant, is alone unsignalized. In the *fourth* place, this unsignalized difference, or this assumed identity between the general and the particular principle of division, is itself a blot. In this way, in truth, there are not two principles, a general and a particular, but only one—a less or more of quantity; and to stop at the end of the first half-dozen less or more concretes, and bar them off from the second half-dozen similarly less or more concretes, naming the former abstract alone and the latter concrete alone, is at once arbitrary and idle, gratuitous and absurd. In the *fifth* place, there is no element of necessity present to guarantee either the adequacy, completeness, or, so to speak, foundedness of the division. Comte, like Xenophanes, has simply looked εἰς τὸν ὅλον οὐρανόν. That is, he has simply opened his eyes and taken up what he found to hand. Attempt at a demonstrated beginning there is none. I, Auguste Comte, *find* number to be what is most abstract, and I accordingly place it so. If you doubt me, go and look for yourself. Such procedure certainly satisfies the wants of many in England; nevertheless it is but arbitrary and empirical. —(*Apropos* of this word empirical, let me remark, that, with the writers on Comte, it does not mean what it means here, something known by mere experiment of sense, but something generalized from individual experience, as, for instance, a proverb might be.) If the beginning then is empirical, so also is the transition, and so also the end. *Why* does Geometry follow Number, or Mechanics Geometry, or Astronomy Mechanics, or Physics Astronomy, or Mineralogy Sociology? And *how* is the enumeration known to be complete? Have we not here a mere arbitrary breccia? That extension should follow number or motion extension, where is the reason of this in the nature of the case? That M. Comte places them so because he *finds* an ascending series of complexity in them, is not difficult to be said; but *whence*, in such things, this ascending series of complexity? Many Englishmen, as said, are satisfied with the fact; those, however, who are accustomed to Hegel, demand the reason of the fact, the necessity of the fact. In the *sixth* place,

the division generally has no title to superiority whether as regards doctrine or as regards classification. It is impossible to believe, for example, that it will be found expedient in practice to begin education with Mathematics, pass on to Astronomy, Physics, Chemistry, Biology, Sociology, and end with Mineralogy, Botany, and Zoology. A complete view of the objects of study may surely be more easily attained by simply glancing from the periphery to the centre, from nebula and star, and sun and planet, through the air to the earth, and from the earth to the ego. Empirically, at least, such glance is a great convenience, whatever order of *study* be the right one, and, in that respect, it is hard to see that M. Comte's classification possesses any advantage over the empirical one suggested.

But, further, Mr. Mill himself signalizes such grave defects in the classification of M. Comte as the omission from it of Logic and Psychology, and a reference to Kant and Hegel will probably enable us to see more clearly its general insufficiency. The chapter of Kant's Kritik on the Architectonic of Pure Reason, begins thus:—'By an architectonic I understand the art of systems. Systematic unity being the means of first raising common knowledge into science, or of converting a mere aggregate of such knowledge into a system, architectonic is the theory of the Scientific in our knowledge generally, and necessarily belongs therefore to the theory of method. The facts of our knowledge in general must, under control of reason, constitute not a rhapsody but a system, in which alone they can have power to support and promote the essential objects of reason. By a system, again, I understand the manifold of individual facts in subjection to a single idea. This idea is that of the form of a whole, so far as through this whole, as well the amount of the manifold as the position of its parts mutually, is *a priori* determined. Such scientific idea includes therefore the object and the form of the whole which is in congruity with it. From the unity of the general object (purpose) to which all the parts, mutually related in its idea, refer, it results that every part is, on occasion of a knowledge of the rest, capable (if absent) of being missed, and that no contingent addition or indeterminate amount of perfection, without possession of its own *a priori* defined limits, is possible. The whole is therefore articulated (*articulatio*) and not simply amassed (*coacervatio*); it may indeed



increase inwardly (*per intus susceptionem*), but not outwardly (*per appositionem*), just like the body of an animal whose growth adds no member, but, without change of proportion, renders each stronger and abler for its purposes.' Kant goes on to define *a technical unity* to be 'such as is proposed empirically in obedience to purposes that only contingently present themselves, and cannot therefore (what or how many) be known beforehand; while *an architectonic unity* is 'such as results from an idea, where reason *a priori* prescribes, and does not merely empirically assume, particular ends.' It is only the architectonic unity that is competent to science. The rest of the chapter will recompense perusal.* It is in consequence of a thorough assimilation of all these ideas of Kant that Hegel now offers us his classifications. For the Hegelian 'Philosophy of the Sciences,' in especial, we refer to the 'Philosophy of Nature,' and, for a counterpart to 'Sociology,' to the 'Philosophy of Right.' As regards the sciences, the great divisions are at once Mechanics, Physics, and Organics. Hegel, however, points to no empirical expediency, or mere external quantitative increase, in justification of these rubrics: he demonstrates his beginning, he demonstrates his transition, and he demonstrates his end. The subdivision of the first division, and similarly demonstrated, runs thus: Mathematical Mechanics, Finite Mechanics (Gravity), and Absolute Mechanics (Astronomy). These again are further subdivided. Physics rigorously divided and subdivided in obedience to the same scientific principles embrace Chemistry, Electricity, Optics, etc., while Organics concern Geological, Vegetable, and Animal Organism. It is only in reason and consistency that what in Hegel corresponds to Sociology constitutes but a portion of what relates to the whole subject of mind and the manifestations of mind. This portion, however, occupies a volume for itself, and this volume may be confidently pronounced the most perfect and complete body of jurisprudential, ethical, and political principles at present in existence. We have not space for exposition, but in comparison with the little that has been indicated, perhaps the unguaranteed, contingent, fragmentary, and really miscellaneous nature of the Comtian classification will be now allowed. Mr. Mill says 'it is always easy to find fault with a classification;' but we beg to add that it is always easy to propose one, and that an easier proposi-

* Principles of arrangement are *technical* or *architectonic*, arbitrary and from without, or necessary and from within, *i.e.*, from the very nature and reason of the thing itself.

tion was never offered than, The simplest first! Any real internal dependence of a later on an earlier, of Chemistry on Geometry or Astronomy, for example, we very much doubt. Though more complicated, too, the later cannot always be said to be more 'arduous' than the earlier; nor is it even apparent that the method of the earlier, though naturally never *unwelcome*, is really a *necessary presupposition* for the study of the later. But the reader can satisfy himself here with a glance at the table for himself. In conclusion, bearing in mind that a logical division is natural, and not artificial, or that it is accomplished by a principle exhaustive of what is divided and taken from what is divided, we would point to the success of Hegel in these respects, and the failure of Comte. We pass now to Comte's second merit.

Is it true that every distinct class of human conceptions has—historically—been first Theologically, then Metaphysically, and lastly Positively regarded? On the Theological head, it is no special merit of M. Comte to have pointed out the characteristics of the Polytheistic ages. All that has been said by Comte in that reference has been said a thousand times long before him. It *is* natural to early men to hypostasize the various powers of nature: of that there can be no doubt; and all that concerns the rise of Fetichism into Monotheism has been exhausted, and from various points of view, Religious, Political, and Æsthetic, by Hegel. That every class of human conceptions, nevertheless, has experienced a theological stage, can evidently not be entertained, and Mr. Mill himself admits as much. Was man's cooking, or clothing, or decorating, or hunting, or fishing, or counting, or measuring first of all theological, then? Was there a theological *first* to Geometry (Mr. Mill says no), or Geology, or Geography, or Zoology, or Botany, or Optics, or Acoustics, or Chemistry, or Anatomy, or Mineralogy, or Logic, or Agriculture, or Architecture, or Music, or Drawing, or Grammar, or Philology, or Phrenology, or Political Economy? The supposition is absurd, and there is no merit whatever in the theological suggestion of M. Comte but what belongs to the philosophy of religion in general—a philosophy that is explained to us by very different writers from M. Comte. Let ingenuity do what it may in disproof, it will remain ingenuity merely.



As for the Metaphysical stage, how are we to understand it? It is generally understood as if all the philosophers from Thales to Hegel belonged to it and exemplified it. I take leave to say that this is not so. We are told that on the theological stage things were regarded as gods, and on the metaphysical as 'powers, forces, virtues, essences, occult qualities, considered as real existences, inherent in but distinct from the concrete bodies in which they reside,' 'as impersonal entities interposed between the governing deity and the phenomena, and forming the machinery through which these are immediately produced.' But is this the conception of a single philosopher from Thales to Hegel? Thales thought that water was probably the basis of all things, which were but more or less rarefied or condensed *forms* of it: if for this idea, Thales is to be held to have looked on water as an unknown noumenon, and to be regarded accordingly as a metaphysician, what are we to say of the modern chemist who would think himself, not a Metaphysician, but the luckiest Savant in the world, could he but reduce all the elements in existence to the single or even double HO? And is it really different with the other Ionics, Anaximander, Anaximenes, etc.? The Pythagoreans who would account for the order and symmetry of the universe by mathematical ratios, did they hold by metaphysical essences then? The Eleatics were only of opinion that all the multiplicity of this vast but orderly universe must be referable to a single principle that remained, and really had quite as little to do with essences and virtues as Comte himself. Consideration of the other pre-Socratics yields the same result—even the Love and Hate of Empedocles were in effect but metaphors for Attraction and Repulsion. Then as regards Socrates, Plato, Aristotle, the aim of the whole three of them was but generalization, and generalization as it is understood by ourselves. Nor will I for one see inferiority in them for that of the two elements which constitute the universe—sensation and reflection—they chose the nobler as the truer. Even the Realism of the Schoolmen, if a belief in the *prius* of the thought, was no belief of an unknown thing within the object. Then coming down to modern times, what philosopher of the whole series was in quest of 'impersonal entities interposed between the governing deity and the phenomena?' Why, not one. Such was not the quest of Bacon, or of

Descartes and Spinoza, or so to name their quest would be but to belie it. Did Hume demand 'occult qualities' or 'impersonal entities,' or Locke, or Condillac? Is the Leibnitzian theory of the universe by means of the hypothesis of ideating monads really such as the Comtians would have us believe? As for Kant, his noumena are not the Comtian absurdities; and of Hegel, who would simply account for the universe as it stands, by reference to a single principle that is a known constituent of it, we need not speak. What Comte describes as metaphysical, then, is absolutely foreign to metaphysics. The slightest consideration, indeed, will demonstrate the weakness of the entire position. Both Mr. Mill and Mr. Lewes labour under a paucity of relative illustrations, and are both obliged to have recourse to what is supposititious, offering occasion enough for a satirical humour were there but space. Why, even as regards that view of things which is termed metaphysical, there never was a time in the world's history when it was more prevalent than at present. A vastly greater number of effects, and infinitely more extraordinary effects, are now known and speculated on in reference to agents than in the whole of previous history. Look to the action of Chloroform, of Opium, of Hydrocyanic Acid, of Strychnine, of the saliva or what else of the mad dog and the snake. Do we even, when we record the phenomena of these things in all their co-existences and relations, think that we have attained to the philosophy of them? No, for all these relations, and for all these co-existences, there is a *reason*, and it is only when we know this reason, and not the mere relations or co-existences themselves, that we possess philosophy. In the mere talk now-a-days of *invariable antecedents*, and *invariable consequents*, is causality, then, once for all removed and done with? The word *invariable* restores the whole problem, and it is scarcely credible that this should not be seen. Were there merely antecedents and consequents, trouble there would be none; but the thing is that these antecedents and consequents are invariable, and we *must* ask *why*. It is absurd to suppose that water extinguishes flame by a mere relation of antecedent and consequent, and without the nexus of a reason. What Comte means by Metaphysical then, is, in brief, Causal, and it is quite untrue that either he or Hume, or anybody else, has as yet eliminated it. But



this determines what we have to say on the third or positive stage, *and it is the third or positive stage which is in reality the whole of Comtianism.*

The affirmation of this stage is that we have simply to determine the succession and co-existence of phenomena without question of anything but the phenomena and in these relations. Now, *only so far as it eliminates causality*, is this affirmation different from the principle of empirical inquiry that has ever at any time obtained. It was wholly by a reference to the relations of phenomena that Thales said water, Anaximenes air, Pythagoras numbers, Parmenides the One, Heraclitus process, Democritus atoms, Anaxagoras Nous, and the Socratics general ideas. Nor is it different among the moderns, who to the inquiring methods of the ancients add only that of express and calculated experiment. This *only* is, of course, *much*, but it is neither conditioned nor increased by Comte. Comte probably re-introduces in effect the whole body of metaphysics when he sanctions the questioning of nature by preliminary hypotheses, and even with him causality is only absent in name when invariability is present in fact. We have only space at present, however, for a word on this latter, causality. Cause, as Hume interprets it, *means*, Mr. Mill asserts, 'the invariable antecedent,' and 'this is the only part of Mr. Hume's doctrine which was contested by his great adversary, Kant.' I cannot agree with either position. Hume, in *custom*, argued *in effect*, for the *variability* of causality; this was his express sceptical object indeed; and it was not the *invariability* which Hume saw in causality that Kant contested, but, on the contrary, the *variability*,—the variability, that is, which Hume, as it were, sought sceptically to insinuate into causality, by resting the (supposititious) necessary connexion which its idea seemed to involve on habit, custom, and the resultant subjective expectation. We are in the habit, Hume said, of finding things together, and so we expect still to find them together, but the invariability thus ascribed is but that of our own expectation. It is not objective, it is merely subjective. Kant, in reply, simply demonstrated that the proposition, Every change must have a cause, is not subjective but objective. The Comtians may, indeed, say that their invariability is but the invariability of subjective expectation and not of objective fact; but habit is quite inadequate to the objective relations, in

trust of which they construct science, and assert 'savoir' to be 'prévoir.' Hume himself is not different: under the 'necessary connexion' of reason which he always overtly denies, he always latently presupposes a 'constant conjunction' of nature. But properly studied *nature* and *reason* are identical: and, in ultimate instance, it is the latter that gives its force and virtue to causality, mere finite or subordinate category as it may be. This drop of white acid falls on this white wood, and the latter blackens. The wood is *burned*. Have we nothing here but an invariable antecedent and an invariable consequent? Is there no *nexus of reason* that explains and demonstrates the invariability or *why* the wood is burned? The wood is water and carbon, the water has united with the acid and left the carbon—*black*. That surely is a reason. That in the process a higher category than that of causality, reciprocity namely, is exemplified, by no means eliminates the reason. This reason is always, That difference is identity. A cause, then, is the *rational* antecedent of a consequent, and philosophy is, in all cases, nothing but the demonstration of this *rationality* which, of course, is not always explicit. There is really no gain, then, in the substitution of invariability for causality, but perhaps only much subjective sufficiency (as in Mr. Buckle) on one's own *advancement*. When one has generalized the action of fire, is it really simpler to say that fire has such and such invariable consequents, than to say that it has such and such a *nature*? What is there in the word *nature* so used to terrify us? Nature is but the identity into which the various consequents are reflected—simply that and no more—and that is a necessary mental act—that, indeed, is a necessary material fact, or there is nothing in existence that is not as well reflexion into itself as reflexion into other things, or more briefly still, a reflexion of its own differences into its own identity. The nature of an object is in point of fact simply the notion of it, and the notion of an object is the truth of an object. When we talk of nature in general, too, what is really implied is no 'imaginary being' which Mr. Mill would have us eliminate, but simply the system or rational all of things. Mankind, the Comtians may depend on it, will continue to talk of nature in general and of a nature of things. And *have* not things a nature? How but by knowledge of its nature, of the sort of effects and consequents it is competent to initiate, is it possible for the physician of experience to obtain a consequent from a drug which the latter was never known to possess before? Or would this physician reason better, if he resolutely kept his drug a bare self-identical antecedent, undeepened, unconcreted into a nature by reflexion into it of its own various consequents? The truth of the matter is, that the word *phenomena*, as we are instructed to use it by the Positivists, is really tantamount to *noumena*. Phenomena are not to be regarded as relations of things, that is, but as themselves things, as themselves noumena. Or, apart from the other, apart from the relation in which alone these two terms have sense, either is the other. Phenomenon is as untrue as noumenon when understood as more than the one half of a relation. Predication is not truer than the subjects of predication. I know a great many consequents of this sulphuric acid, these consequents are the *nature* of it, constitute the notion of it; it is the noumenon, the subject, into which they, the phenomena, the predicates, are reflected. That the phenomena too do not exhaust the noumenon is evident from this, that, in other relations, it yet may be found in connexion with many additional consequents. It is not necessary, however, that the noumenon should be more than this. The noumenon is simply the subject of the qualities, it is not a mysterious entity apart from the qualities, and capable of being possessed apart, of being known apart. It is absurd to expect to know a thing, not only when qualified, but when unqualified. In very truth, it is the Positivists themselves who make such a mistake as this, who suppose that there are under the qualities noumena, things in themselves, that may be known otherwise, —that is, under other qualities. Mr. Lewes, for one, is plainly of belief that we do not know things in themselves, inasmuch as we know them only through sensations. What is that but the assumption of unknown noumena, and does it at all mend the matter to say, Yes, but we will not speak of them? How different Hegel, who was one of the first to explode such an absurdity as an unqualified noumenon. To Hegel there was but one noumenon, and all else was but its phenomena, though, as it were, amongst the very phenomena, there were reflexions of the noumenon, the subject itself, on various stages. It is worth while considering that the conception of a sum, a group, an

aggregate of phenomena, is inadequate to fact. There exists no such sum, group, or aggregate in nature. Consider a crystal of blue vitriol, it is blue, it is transparent, it is acrid, it is hard, it is smooth. But you cannot say of it that it has one quality here and another there. No, where one quality is, there also are all the others, let them be as numerous as they may. Its acridity cannot be separated from its transparency, wherever it is transparent, it is also acrid wherever acrid, it is also transparent, etc. So with all the other qualities: they mutually interpenetrate and pervade each other; they exist all of them in the same spot, in a single individual or indivisible point. That point, then, to which the qualities are referred, is an inside to their outside. This point, indeed, in which all the qualities coincide and are identical, which then is as an internal knot colligating them all, can be very well seen to occupy the relative place of subject. So is it with the entire universe: from a drop of water or a grain of sand, up to the sun in the firmament, things are not aggregates, but subjects, of qualities. Bare predication nowhere *exists*. Just as it is impossible to find subjects unsupplied with predicates, so it is impossible to find predicates unsupplied with subjects. Grammar is truer to philosophy than Comte, and pretends not to convert the world into a flight of adjectives. It will not abandon its nouns. True it is, at the same time, that a noun without adjectives is a non-ens, but not less a non-ens is an adjective without a noun. The constitution of things is once for all so. The analogy of the ego penetrates everywhere, and embraces all. A subjectivity without a constituent objectivity were zero, but an objectivity without a sublating subjectivity were, at bottom, equally absurd. The proposal of Comte, then, to know phenomena only, is simply impracticable. How can we possibly know nothing but *outsides?* No phenomenon but is itself, as said, only one-half of a relation, nor exists without its complementing and realizing other, the noumenon. Not that it follows, however, as has also been said, that this noumenon is some concealed and mysterious special entity, capable, perhaps, of being taken out, and looked at *for itself*. Such irrational and absurd imaginations we have only to impute to ourselves. Hegel, at all events, has not the slightest intention of erecting, as Mr. Mill seems to fancy, 'a mere creation of



the mind into a test or *norma* of external truth.' For his part, indeed, Hegel is peculiarly opposed to the assumption of occult forces; he quotes Newton, as (with the approbation of Mr. Mill) Reid does, in reprobation of the assumption of attraction and repulsion as physical forces; and even blames him for having been untrue to this his own requisition. Still, nevertheless, the demand that we should confine our attention to abstract self-identical outsides belongs not to Hegel. Abstract immediacy, apart from evolution and inner determinateness, is not to him *knowledge*. What knowledge would there be, indeed, were we restricted to the bare smell, taste, colour, sound, or feel, then and there present, without the impregnation of *Vermittelung?* Nay, is not the very attitude that follows from the demand dangerous to humanity? To empty ourselves of all within, to rise to the mere surface, and spread ourselves there, thin, clear, an outside merely; is it not this—surface, mere surface—that breeds that sufficient look so offensive in Mr. Buckle? No, metaphysics and religion cannot be banished; for they are in very truth essential humanity itself. Mr. Mill himself asserts the one to be necessary, and does not reject the other. No less indeed than empirical science, they must always be cultivated. Without them what idle, shallow acquirement would not this science itself become! Nay, even in a linguistic point of view, what would this science become if in description of it we were required to banish all metaphorical speech, if attractions, and repulsions, and affinities, were all proscribed? External phenomena can hardly ever be reproduced to thought unless in the language of the *Vorstellung*. As to that, indeed, if it were only the *Vorstellung* that the Positivists resisted, and if in its place they were only minded to substitute the *Begriff*, something like a show of reason would not be absent. But there is even to be no *Begriff*; no, there is to be nothing but 'the naïf reproduction of the phenomenon as the reason for itself.' So, then, we are to have but a Chinese world of miscellaneous self-identities, with no possible law at last—naïve self-identical reproduction could have no other ultimate result—but Mr. Buckle's 'important' law of averages! But this is impossible, this is not the truth, all is reflected, reproduction there is none, change is the rule. In all our inquiries we still seek, indeed, the ἀρχή of the Ionics; we still apply the mathematics of the Pythagoreans; we still desire

to refer the multiplicity of existence to a single life; we still see that unity, however, with Heraclitus, to be movement, perpetual affirmation through perpetual negation; we still name, with Anaxagoras, this unity Nous too; and we still seek with Socrates, and Plato, and Aristotle to resolve this Nous into its constituent ideas, leaving a theoretical and practical system of knowledge for all the generations of men. So far, then, as it were not an investigation of effects and counter-effects, the Comtian phenomenal inquiry would vanish into mere phraseology. It is to be admitted at the same time that explanation by such categories as causality and reciprocity is confined only to the physical field, and that final explanation must resort to a higher principle. This final method, however, remains as yet shut up in the books of a single individual, and cannot find exposition here.

Such, then, is the result of our analysis of the merits that are claimed for M. Comte. It is impossible to attribute value, or even originality, to any of them. If ninety-nine people out of the hundred, asked to examine a child in geography, grammar, arithmetic, Latin, French, etc., would say, Let us *begin* with the most elementary branches, what pretence is there for claiming for Comte any unusual merit in resorting to so common and natural an expedient, so poorly and imperfectly applied too? His so-called law of evolution, again, exists not as named and considered by him, and is but a fragmentary reflexion —where it has any truth, as when it asserts philosophy to be preceded by mythology, monotheism by polytheism, fetichism, etc.—from the vast generalizations of Hegel. His principle, lastly, of restriction to phenomena is but the finicality of formalism itself, and tends to make us walk on air, while we are emptied of the filling of our concrete humanity. But neither things nor ourselves, fortunately, are convertible into mere outsides.

Besides the main merits of M. Comte, however, there are other particular ones which now demand a word. In relation to his arrangement of the sciences, for example, there is not only his 'Logic' of these, but his creation of an alleged new science, that of Sociology; while, in relation to his law of evolution, there is its application into a Philosophy of History. On the first head, unfortunately, Mr. Mill, though he finds here M. Comte's very greatest achievement, does not enable us to say much.



We conclude, however, that what it involves is no Logic of the sciences in an Hegelian sense, but an enlightened generalization of the resources of empirical investigation in a Baconian sense. We may cordially allow every relative merit claimed without prejudice to our general position. As regards Sociology again, it will be found, as Mr. Mill admits, that the only important part of this alleged new science must, under the name of Statics, be resigned to Aristotle and others, while that part of it that is named Dynamics seems to refer to little more than the already discussed law of evolution. How M. Comte was led to a different treatment here (referring to man historically, and not psychologically) will readily appear by looking to his principle. How could he get the point of view of bare phenomena and bare relations otherwise? From any other point of view man was too noumenal a being to suit his objects. As regards, lastly, the philosophy of history, Mr. Mill, to whom this is Comte's second greatest achievement, supplies us with more information. Nevertheless, though the relative survey of historical facts contain much, doubtless, that is enlightened, ingenious, and interesting, we gather from it no reason to alter the main conclusion. Rather we see in it much to confirm it. The method, for example, is plainly that of ordinary *raisonnement:* with a *probable* here and a *natural* there, the hardest facts are expected to resolve themselves and flow for us. On the whole, however, we may allow the merits claimed for M. Comte with reference to all the heads here without departing from our general position. That Comte was a man of ability and acquirement there is no wish to deny. Mathematical and scientific accomplishments he certainly possessed; and many excellent ideas, many large, liberal, tolerant views, he must be cordially acknowledged to express in detail. Still, nevertheless, even in Mr. Mill's eyes the negative of Comte must be named a large one. One-half of the work of Comte he seems, indeed, totally to reject, while in the other half he certainly finds faults enow. He signalizes deficiency, incompleteness, unsuccess, in the classification of the sciences, failures no less in the institution of Sociology, and many errors of detail with regard to the law of evolution, while he disputes his originality in regard to the very principle of Positivism. Both Mr. Mill and Mr. Lewes find further much in M. Comte generally that is exaggerated, inaccu-

rate, extravagant, arbitrary, absurd, and ridiculous, and with this, what is said of his life and character seems very excellently to cohere. He was a delicate lad, that stood apart from the games of his comrades; but insurgent and indocile, he tired out his teachers by his pertinacity of argumentativeness and egotism. His married life was a single scene of French bickering. Madame did not understand the *cordes intimes* of Monsieur, nor Monsieur Madame's. Egotism is always unequally yoked. It may appear cruel to allude to Comte's actual attacks of insanity, but they are still elements in the calculation. Lastly, we may refer to his exquisitely French Platonic passion for Madame de Vaux, that ended in his exaltation into the intensely self-confident Pontiff of an extravagant and ridiculous new religion, with its stupid catechisms, calendars, and what not. As is evident, we have only space to indicate, but whoever will take the trouble to read what Mr. Mill and Mr. Lewes write of Comte, will find all that is indicated amply illustrated and confirmed.

Professor Ferrier quotes Mr. Morell to this effect:—'No one, for example, who compares the philosophic method of Schelling with the "Philosophie positive" of Auguste Comte, can have the slightest hesitation as to the source from which the latter virtually sprang.' Comte's fundamental idea is then asserted to be 'precisely the same as that of Schelling,' in whom is found also 'the whole conception of the affiliation of the sciences in the order of their relative simplicity, and the expansion of the same law of development so as to include the exposition of human nature and the course of social progress.' These assertions of Mr. Morell are perhaps too sweeping, but there can be no doubt that in the Germans who preceded M. Comte much matter is to be found which might have proved suggestive to him. We have already seen how analogous to the triplets of Hegel were even the fundamental triplets of Comte, Theology, Philosophy, Positivism; Fetichism, Polytheism, Monotheism, etc.; but many other Hegelian indications are not wanting even in the short summary of Mr. Mill. Here, for example, are a few eminently Hegelian traits:—'The human beings themselves, on the laws of whose nature the facts of history depend, are not abstract or universal, but historical human beings, already shaped, and made what they are, by human society:' 'the vulgar mode of



using history, by looking in it for parallel cases, *as if any cases were parallel;*' 'the state of every part of the social whole at any time, is intimately connected with the contemporaneous state of all the others; religious belief, philosophy, science, the fine arts, the industrial arts, commerce, navigation, government, all are in close natural dependence,' etc.; 'M. Comte confines himself to the main stream of human progress, looking only at the races and nations that led the van, and regarding as the *successors of a people not their actual descendants, but those who took up the thread of progress after them;*' 'the vulgar mistake of supposing that the course of history has no tendencies of its own, and that great events usually proceed from small causes,' etc. etc. Then with Comte as with Hegel, the main object of philosophy at present is a reconstruction of human society, and on those objective principles, too, which are not always pleasing to the rather negatively and wholly subjectively disposed relativists, such as Mr. Mill and Mr. Grote. Thus the teaching of Comte on the family, women, marriage, etc., is essentially the same as that of Hegel, and in its objective necessity all but directly opposed to the subjective freedom of the *Aufklärung*. Then Comte plainly sees and reprobates the modern atomism of which we hear so much in Hegel, and is quite as anxious as he to co-articulate it again under the universal. He talks of the great productions of art which we might expect from such objective reconstruction, 'when one harmonious vein of sentiment shall once more thrill through the whole of society, as in the days of Homer, of Æschylus, of Phidias, and even of Dante.' It is admirably characteristic also of the German influence on Comte that he is wholly opposed to what is 'merely negative and destructive,' and for that reason excludes from the seats of honour the philosophes of the French Aufklärung. Many other Hegelian analogies in Comte will be found at pp. 379-382 of Mr. Mill's essay. In short, when we consider that Comte's titles to fame consist in his classification and logic of the sciences, in his sociological generalizations, and historical analysis, we have no difficulty in deciding that the praises in these references, so copiously heaped on Comte as the first and only, will yet in the end be transferred to the entire quarry of these and a thousand completer excellences more—Hegel. Comtianism, in fact, bears to

Hegelianism a relation very similar to that of Mahometanism to Christianity. Rapid as is the spread of the one when compared with the other, its reign, nevertheless, will, in view of its incomplete, flushed, fragmentary nature, prove but short-lived and partial. Nor need we regret its advent in England: it will always prove introductory, and we have nothing to fear from it, now that its atheism and materialism have been by Mr. Mill almost formally withdrawn. That a knowledge of Comte should precede a knowledge of the earlier Hegel, cannot in the circumstances surprise. Comte evidently writes heavily, but he writes at the same time in French, and exoterically. Even to his own countrymen, Hegel, for the most part, remains still a sealed book. Comtianism will probably be in full leaf in England when Hegelianism has done little more than broken ground. Hegel, however, *is* all that Comte only aims at, and it is time that he should be known. How one shivers for their own shame, when one hears, in reference to Hegel, the crude *propos* of such intelligences as Mr. Mill and Mr. Lewes! These we have not space to exemplify. Mr. Mill, we may say, however, talks somewhere of Germany making convulsive efforts to wrest itself from the groove of the false metaphysical method: are *we* then in advance of Germany? is Germany in any respect behind *us*? Is not the truth rather this, that at this moment Germany leads the whole world even in empirical science? Can any empirical science be named, indeed, for which Germany writes not the text-books? Is it not the discoveries of *her* inquirers that are alone bruited among us? And to what is this superiority owing? Why, to nothing else than the superior faculties, the superior ideas, and the superior terms, which have resulted from the hard discipline of German philosophy. Mr. Mill talks too as if Hegel were an example of metaphysics, as this term is understood by Comte; and at the same time seems, with Mr. Lewes, to regard his method as subjective and *a priori*. There cannot be a greater mistake; nay, the reverse is the truth, and Herbart even reproaches Hegel with empiricism. As said, the latter is as adverse as Comte himself to the impregnation of nature and the things of nature with metaphysical creatures: very far from that, he would reduce all to the simple notion. His method is not properly named *a priori*, however. No, if synthetic, it is no less analytic, and has always empirical



fact below it. It may be described, indeed, as the exhaustive *deduction* of a single, actually existent principle that has been *inductively* acquired. The preceding *induction* is but superseded by the universality of the *deduction*; or to attain the analysis, we have but to reverse the synthesis. The peculiar objective analysis, however, that conducts and, in completeness and correctness, guarantees the deduction, is, in fact, the foundation of a new method, which yet awaits, I may say, verification, and it were much to be wished that the faculty of Mr. Mill were available here. In the meantime, we may say this: Hegel, all consideration of his principle and method apart, has produced on all human interests, theoretical, practical, and æsthetic, a body of generalized knowledge, which, for comprehensiveness and accuracy, for power of penetration and power of reduction, has never been approached. Nor, after Kant, who, instigated by Hume on all the fields, set the example, is this a wonder.

It is impossible here to do any justice to the theme, but there is another phase of the Hegelian philosophy to which I should like to call the attention of most modern philosophers. To Comte, and I suppose almost everybody at present, the universe is a vast magazine of unaccountable facts. Whence or how they came, these facts, we know not; our business is to inquire into them as they are, and adapt ourselves accordingly. This is pretty well the position of Mr. Mill. It is not necessary to suppose either that things will always remain as they are: the relations of things may vary in nature; they may vary, they do vary, in a sociological aspect; it is enough for us, *at any time*, to know them as they are, and follow the *consequent expediency*. Possibly even elsewhere in space, things and relations may be quite different. We must trust our acquired necessities of thought only so long as the facts that led to them remain beneath them; for any necessity but what habit begets on experience exists not. In such a world, then, it is the business of society to leave the individual to the unfettered exercise of his highest faculties. It is not the business of society to dictate to this individual his beliefs; it is a question of the greatest delicacy, indeed, if, and how, and how far, it may interfere even to assist him; or it is best, perhaps, not to interfere at all. This, as said, is pretty well the position of Mr. Mill;

and while it contains some elements that do not preclude a junction in the end with the results of Hegel, it certainly contains others that render such junction for ever hopeless. These latter concern what I may call Mr. Mill's absolute relativity; that the nature of things cannot be depended on, that it may vary in space, it may vary in time, and that we have simply to know it—its succession and co-existence of antecedents and consequents—*here* and *now*. If there be in effect, namely, no *nature* of things, that is, no principle of reason that underlies and permeates them, or if Mr. Mill's invariability of co-existence and succession be one that is valid only *here* and *now* (and Mr. Mill hardly allows to either a validity and breadth coincident with general human experience)—if there be no nature, no reason, no necessary and absolute invariability of the relations of things, then, for Mr. Mill any junction with Hegel must for ever remain impossible. But, these apart, there are other elements in Mr. Mill not hostile to a junction with Hegel. Mr. Mill still insists on the *thinking* of things. Now, things and thinking—observe the etymological connexion—are all that exists. There is nothing but understanding and sensation, or thought and sense. Explanation, then, which is the need of unity, would reduce the one side to the other, and Mr. Mill's thinking of things would have precisely this result, were but things in their relations supposed *in*variable. On that supposition, indeed, such thinking could only result in a system of thought which would be the true nature of these things, these things in truth, or the truth of these things. Now that truth, the want of Mr. Mill, is the sole want of Hegel also. As it might result to Mr. Mill it were a *posterius*, but this *posterius* being alone the truth of things, were evidently in fact the *prius* of them. That *prius*, then, however arrived at, is the system of Hegel; and it is to Hegel's attitude here that attention is specially invited. That sensible without he believes to be *identical* with this intelligible within: both meet and coincide in that systematic and necessary *prius*, which is reason and the system of reason. In fact, the one *is* outside, the other *is* inside, and reason is the name of the whole. Existence, that is, is but the evolution of reason. To Hegel, then, there is not in nature, as there is to Mr. Lewes, 'a Fatality which must be accepted:' that fatality itself he would explain, he would reduce to



reason. It is with the same thought in his mind as Mr. Lewes that Mr. Mill says: 'If the universe had a beginning, its beginning by the very conditions of the case, was supernatural; the laws of nature cannot account for their own origin.' The arbitrariness, the caprice which Mr. Mill feigns here as the origin of things is precisely what Hegel resists: necessity of reason that origin must have been, place it where you may. Hegel, in short, believes—with all its *differences* before him—in the *identity* (unity) of reason, and, so believing, he has subjected all things to the test of reason, and has exhibited to us for result, not only the philosophy of the universe as in space, but the philosophy of the universe as in time also. From which last element it is, in particular, that the interests of natural and revealed religion are the closing verities of the entire system. But this must suffice.

[Since writing the above with reference to Comte, I have had an opportunity of consulting the six volumes of his *Cours de Philosophie Positive*. I have said (p. 464) 'Comte evidently writes heavily.' This is the only phrase I would, on the whole, withdraw. M. Comte certainly indulges in sentences that, for a Frenchman, are sometimes both loaded and long; nevertheless, his works must be pronounced throughout lucid. For the rest, I am disposed, in general, to stand by the original finding. As we have seen, Mr. Mill and Mr. Lewes place the merit of M. Comte in what we may call his *form*—in his classification of the sciences, his law *des trois états*, and his abstract phenomenalism (positivism), namely. In this I cannot agree with them: to me Comte's *form* is valueless, and what value he possesses depends on his *matter*. In regard to the whole of that matter, I am not an expert, and will not judge. It is for a Sir William Thomson and others to tell us whether Comte has made any contributions to Mathematics, Astronomy, Physics, Chemistry, and Biology, or not. On the merits of M. Comte's additions to a knowledge of Sociology, I have already given the opinion of Mr. Mill. My own conclusion here is this:—I find M. Comte, in the first place, very French. He excites our imaginations by the most enormous promises of new marvels, unheard of glories; and, for the most part, like the thimblerigger, he only covers a pea. In the second place, I should say that M. Comte occupies too individual,

too imperfectly-prepared a place to be able to give us a *system* of Sociology. But, in the third place, I must avow, that for the student of the principles of politics at present, there are in the *physique sociale* of M. Comte many suggestions of unquestionable importance.]

## II.

### *Mr. Lewes's accusation of Atheism against Hegel.*[1]

IN reference to the following paragraph contained in the new edition of Mr. Lewes's *History of Philosophy* (vol. ii. p. 545), I wish to correct a mistake, which any tyro in general (not necessarily Hegelian) German could correct quite as well as myself. This mistake has now stood before the world, in the pages of Mr. Lewes, more than twenty years; it is at once singularly inaccurate and signally unjust, and it is high time to correct it. The paragraph in question runs thus:—

'Hegel admits the proposition (being and non-being are the same) to be somewhat paradoxical, and is fully aware of its openness to ridicule; but he is not a man to be scared by a paradox, to be shaken by a sarcasm. He is aware that stupid common sense will ask, "Whether it is the same if my house, my property, the air I breathe, this town, sun, the law, mind, or God, exist or not?" Certainly a very pertinent question; how does he answer it? "In such examples," he says, "particular ends,—utility, for instance,—are understood, and then it is asked if it is indifferent to me whether these useful things exist or not? But, in truth, philosophy is precisely the doctrine which is to free man from innumerable finite aims and ends, and to make him so indifferent to them that it is really all the same whether such things exist or not." Here we trace the Alexandrian influence; except that Plotinus would never have had the audacity to say that philosophy was to make us indifferent to whether God existed or not; and it must have been a slip of the pen which made Hegel include God in the examples; a slip of the pen, or else "the rigour of his pitiless logic," of which his disciples talk.'

This is a tolerably fair example of the treatment of Hegel, not by Mr. Lewes alone, but by everybody else

[1] Already published in the *British Controversialist* for Nov. 1867, this note is retained here, not as *properly* pertinent *now* to Mr. Lewes, but for its general usefulness.



who does not understand him. If Hegel is supposed, on the grounds alleged, to have said that it was 'indifferent whether God existed or not,' then there is the same authority for supposing him to have said, that it was indifferent whether law (*Recht*) existed or not, and whether the mind (*Geist*) existed or not. Had this occurred to Mr. Lewes, surely he would have looked again before committing himself to so hazardous an assertion; for even to him we may assume it as certain that Hegel could not have been indifferent as to whether *Recht* existed or not, or as to whether *Geist* existed or not. There are in Hegel even *external* placards which assert the objective existence of *Recht*, and the absolute existence of *Geist*, at all events. There is here, then, an anterior improbability so strong that of itself it is quite enough to refute Mr. Lewes's assertion in advance. It will be only fair to Mr. Lewes, however, to allow that—apparently at least—there must be some excuse for his mistake; for it is a mistake that has also been committed by A. Gratry, Prêtre de l'Oratoire de l'Immaculée Conception,' and it is a mistake that, on occasion of this Gratry, has not been accurately corrected, even by such a man as Rosenkranz, who, as all the world knows, is the 'Hegelianer *par excellence*.' It will clear the issues to quote at once from Rosenkranz in reference to M. Gratry's work (*Logique*, Paris, 1855, 2 tomes), as follows:—

'This French priest wishes to prove, that, according to Hegel, philosophy seeks to take from man all interest for right, for his soul, nay, for God himself, and reduce him to indifference towards these. I. 194, he exclaims, "Comprenez-le, nous sommes ici à l'origine même de l'esprit de sophisme; disons mieux, nous sommes ici au fond de l'abîme, à la naissance de l'esprit des ténèbres. L'esprit de sophisme est un mot trop faible, qui nomme peu son objet; l'esprit des ténèbres est le vrai mot. Ce mot théologique devient ici rigoureusement philosophique et scientifique. L'origine de l'esprit des ténèbres est donc celle-ci: tuer l'âme; la rendre absolument indifferente à l'existence, ou à la non-existence du monde, de la justice, de la vérité, de l'âme elle-même, de Dieu! Lui ôter, comme le dit Hegel, tout intérêt en ces choses; la délivrer de l'intérêt de la raison pratique dont parle Kant, cet intérêt d'amour pour la justice et pour la vérité, qui est, nous l'avons démontré, le ressort même du procédé dialectique, selon Platon et tous les philosophes. Quand

le ressort est brisé, quand l'âme est morte, il n'y a plus de procédé dialectique ; la raison pure, isolée, abstraite, déracinée, devient de fait, comme le veut Hegel, indifférente à l'être et au néant, etc." For these fearful consequences M. Gratry cites from Hegel's *Works* (vi. 172) the following passage: "It needs no great expenditure of wit to make the proposition, that being and nothing are the same, ridiculous, or rather to bring forward absurdities, with the untrue declaration that they are consequences and applications of that proposition; as, for example, that it is consequently the same thing, whether my house, my means, the air we breathe, this town, the sun, right, spirit, God, exist or not. . . . In effect, philosophy is just this doctrine to free man from an infinite number of finite ends and aims, and to make him so indifferent to them that it is quite the same to him whether such things exist or not." M. Gratry translates this passage, and, at the end of the citation, full of indignation, he italicises the words, "qu'il soit absolument indifférent, que ces choses soient ou ne soient pas." Every one who understands German will be able to refer the words, "such things," only to the preceding "number of finite ends and aims;" the priest of the Oratory of the Immaculate Conception understands as amongst these the soul, right, God. Are they not the things named directly previously? Of course, no one will call finite (*infinite*?) ends and aims things; at the same time a certain plausibility remains, because those objects are mentioned shortly before. But does not Hegel himself say, that it is an *untrue consequence* to infer from the proposition of the identity of the notions being and nothing, that it is quite the same whether the sun, right, spirit, God, exist or not? Does he not expressly reject, therefore, the consequence which M. Gratry draws in order to secure his damnation? Does not the accusation, then, fall to pieces of itself? But, dear reader, do you not observe these points in the midst of M. Gratry's citation from Hegel? What must they denote? An omission. And in Hegel how is the omission supplied? Thus: "In such examples there are assumed partly *particular* ends, as the use, perhaps, which something has for me, and then it is asked if it is indifferent to me whether what is useful exist or not." Here, then, now do we not at last see how it is that Hegel comes to speak of finite ends and aims, towards the existence or non-existence of which



*philosophy* has to render humanity indifferent? Why has M. Gratry desired to exclude that sentence? Evidently because otherwise he would not have been able to draw his inferences; because he as a priest of the Christian religion, would have been obliged to remember that it belongs to the Christian also to raise himself above the finitude of the mere useful, and to exclaim with the Holy Singer, "If I have thee, Lord, what need I ask more of heaven or earth!" Were such an accusation to be made in ordinary life, and in another sphere, it would certainly be branded as falsehood and calumny.'—(Rosenkranz, *Metaphysik*, pref., xxiii.)

The agreement, then, between M. Gratry and Mr. Lewes is so striking, that they probably both owe their information to the same source,—possibly M. Ott. I am not satisfied with the solution of Rosenkranz, however, and think he might have explained the matter much more easily and convincingly, had he but looked more closely at his text. Let the reader observe the quotation from Hegel, the beginning of which runs, 'In such examples there are assumed *partly* (*zum theil*) particular ends, as the use, perhaps,' etc. Now, it is the touch of that *partly* that shall resolve for us the whole difficulty. Under the regimen of that *partly*, namely, there is included all that concerns *finite* references, while under the regimen of a second *partly* (*zum theil*) there is included all that concerns *infinite* references. Nay, the termination of the discussion of the *finite*, and the transition to that of the *infinite* references are made unescapably prominent by a dash. Of the objects under the regimen of the second *partly*, Hegel now speaks thus: 'Partly, however, it is ends essential in themselves, absolute existences and ideas, which are assumed under the category of being or non-being; such concrete objects are something quite else than only existent or non-existent, etc., . . . these categories are quite inadequate to the nature of such objects, etc.' There can be no doubt, then, that Hegel perfectly well knew the nature of his own examples, discussing them under two categories, of which the former applied to *finite* ends and aims, such as 'my house,' 'my means,' etc., and the latter only to 'essential aims,' 'absolute existences and ideas,' such as 'right,' 'soul,' 'God.' Any just reader, then, that looked only to the spirit of the passage, would, as Rosenkranz argues, never for a moment have imagined that Hegel meant to

enumerate law, the soul, God, as among those things which philosophy was to render us indifferent to. But Hegel, as Rosenkranz has failed to point out, does not trust himself to correctness of spirit and kindly interpretation on the part of his reader; no, by absolute accuracy of letter, he renders himself independent of his reader, and sets misconstruction at defiance. What has been said is probably enough; but luckily we have a light wholly irresistible in the passage itself, as it occurs in the *first* edition of the 'Encyclopædie.' This passage I shall now translate, and so set the matter definitively beyond dispute. In reference to the question, then, 'whether it is the same if my house, my property, the air I breathe, this town, sun, the law, mind, or God, exist or not,' we are to understand the answer of Hegel in his *first* edition to run thus:—

'Here, then, are assumed partly (*zum theil*) *particular ends*, as the *use* which something has for me, and then it is asked whether it is indifferent to *me* that what is *useful* should exist or not! In effect philosophy is just this doctrine, to free man from an infinite number of finite ends and aims, and render him so indifferent to them, that it is quite the same to him whether such things exist or not. *Further, as regards the air, sun, or law, God, it is mere want of thought to consider such essential ends, absolute existences and ideas, under the category of being. Such concrete objects are something quite else than only existent or non-existent.* Meagre abstractions, like being and nothing,—and they are, being but the categories of the beginning, the most meagre abstractions possible,—are inadequate to express the nature of the objects alluded to.'

One sees that the important word for the right understanding of the passage from Hegel is that *partly*, which quite trenchantly and unmistakably discriminates between essential and inessential existences; the essential existences being not only God, law, the soul, etc., but even (only in the first edition, however) the sun and the air. What one likes least in Mr. Lewes, then, is that he has *omitted* this all-important *partly*. By this omission he has certainly rendered himself as obnoxious, to all the hard things said by Rosenkranz as the priest of the immaculate conception himself. *We*, however, shall not say these hard things of Mr. Lewes; Mr. Lewes is a perfectly open, unaffected gentleman, and one of the clearest, most widely-informed, and consequently usefulest writers whom we now possess; and we will simply believe that he failed to perceive the importance of the word, and, so failing, omitted it for the sake of the greater simplicity and clearness of the sentence.



In conclusion, when it is considered that what is concerned is an accusation of such a doctrine as atheism, by such a man as Mr. Lewes, against such a man as Hegel, and in a work that has gone through three editions, and been for more than twenty years, probably, the most popular English history of philosophy, perhaps I shall be held excused for seeking in this manner to contradict and correct. For the rest, as has been demonstrated already, Hegel is not only a Theist, but a Christian.

## III.

### *Pantheism and Paganism.*

THE heresy of the German critics is, perhaps, quite as active in England at present as the positivism of Comte, and may excuse a word. So far as I know, however, this heresy is not represented here by any *direct* disciple of the school, but only by one or two men of *genius*, who seem to draw their inspiration from the semi-French Heine and the wholly French Hugo. The leading trait of these Englishmen is an air of *brusque* bravery that seems to say, 'Pah! it is cowardly to whine over our lost immortality, let us go out into the air and enjoy life!' It will be enough here, however, to mention them and this; it is a phase of mind sufficiently incomplex, and may be left for the present to take on of itself the inevitable 'pale cast of thought.' I shall confine myself to a few remarks on the German movement in which they indirectly root. Pantheism and Paganism are the best terms for it. All the essentials of religion, namely, are for it void: personal God, there is none; immortality, there is none. What is, is the idea—thought that has realized itself in nature and in man, and so realizes itself for ever. There is one grand life, that, dumb, yet speaks; that has its accents in the perishable individual; that, nought, is all. It is this alone we are to see and honour! it is for this we are cheerfully to live, it is for this we are cheerfully to die, secure in this that *it* must live, and that in our own death, loss there is

none, for *it* alone is truth. This, so far as I can make it out, is what may be called the religious core of the German critics. This, however, is not their true support. Their true support, ather, is the simple conviction of subjective superiority, and the consequent equally simple spirit of battle. What could support a Diderot or a D'Holbach but indignation at the *darkness*, at the miserable *ignorance* of those around them, and the resolution to dispel it? As with them, so with the heretical German critics. Blind to all but their propagandism, they rush to the front to enlighten *us;* they never linger behind to enlighten themselves. It might be worth their while, however, to put to themselves the question, Is 'Humanismus,' is humanity, is man at all possible without a belief in the immortality of the soul and the existence of God? Truly, we are on the brink of the most fearful crisis in the whole world's history. *Knowledge* is to be all in all. And what is that knowledge? Why, that as water is contained in a sponge, thought is contained in the material universe and perpetually recreates it! Man's duty is to know this, and, knowing this, to work. That is all: let the German critics have their own way, and I do not see anything else they could add. I do not know that they could add science even; for anything Baconian they declare to be beneath them. Then work? Millions of the most pallid and undeniable slaves of both sexes, shut up in sickly factories and bakeries for the world's back and the world's belly, with no consolation but that so they keep alive—the Idea! This idea is simply monstrous—a Moloch of the most insatiable maw. Result there can be none—unless Europeans are capable of returning to an Egyptian bondage under a Pharaoh again—but the suicide of the race. It is really scarcely intelligible that a Ruge should be eloquent about science and philosophy, and liberty and humanity, and all for service under a blind, dumb, invisible idol, whose only function is to victimize everything, to gorge upon all. If it is not a person, but only a *something* that is to go on living and growing in this world, then it is of no consequence whether that something be called ideal or be called material. It is but a thing under either name; and that its necessary realization should only be in successive generations of millions of individual men makes the matter not a whit better, conceive them even working *perfectly*.



The great source of this despair of the German critics—for it is evidently but despair, and the whitest that ever fell—is, as I have said already, not Hegel, but only their own obstinately self-willed rejection of Hegel. Hegel, himself, has, in the most open manner, professing adhesion to an enlightened and progressive conservatism in politics, conducted his whole system into the sanctuary of the Christian Religion. Nor is this denied; it is only rejected. But why should it be rejected? To me it appears that it is precisely this part of his work that should evoke for Hegel a heartfelt and irresistible *io triumphe!* No doubt, in many respects, Hegel's *Logic* is his capital achievement. It is to be borne in mind, however, that, though containing much that is of *material* importance, it is still principally *formal*. Its first note, after all is said, will never ring quite true; *existence of some kind* and *existence of no kind* are not the *same*, even should we see that existence of no kind is a *non-ens*, and not in *rerum natura*, and consequently that, so far as matter (*Inhalt*) is concerned, it is the same *supposition*, the same ultimate generalization that existence of any kind, existence in general, is. But if the start be but an artifice and a convenience, is it at all ascertained yet that the means of progress, the dialectic, is in any respect better? I confess, for my part, that I have more satisfaction in the *Philosophy of the Spirit*, in the *Moral and Political Philosophy*, and in the *History of Philosophy* than in the *Logic*. Nay, of the *Logic* itself, its value to me consists only in its ministrations to spiritualism. I cannot give myself up *simpliciter* to the *Entwickelung*, and I distrust the transcendental rapture with which many Germans discuss both Plato and Hegel in this connexion. The former's *idea*, it will be remembered, for example, I have described on the whole as only the formal universal (*das Formell-Allgemeine*), only a generic notion, though it may be admitted that there are in Plato partial efforts towards a single plastic element or energy, a single all of thought, whose distinctions were constitutive pairs of fluent notions. Then, as said, the success of the *Logic*, which would precisely realize and complete these efforts of Plato, is not yet certain, and the general principle remains still to be verified. Here, however, it is that Hegel, if ever anywhere, is unduly influenced by the ancients, and lays a misleading stress on the abstract universal. Not but that he is in a mea-

sure compelled to this by the very nature of the abstract logical sphere in which for the time he moves. Concrete spirit, nevertheless, must be seen to be something more than abstract logic; which latter, indeed, is only valuable as leading to the former. To transfix matter with logical categories till it disappears (should that be possible), is not to me a great work in itself, as it is to Ruge, but in its consequences—in its support, that is, to all the great interests of religion. Neither gods nor men are in very truth logical categories. And so it is, that should the *Logic*, or any other part of the work of Hegel fail us here, we are not, for a moment, to suppose that our hopes are —*therefore*—at term. No man is final; neither Plato, nor Aristotle, nor Kant, nor Hegel. Existence is here within us, there without us, for us as it was for them: we too may turn to read the countenance of our common mother. An idealism that only, so to speak, strikes seed-matter into seed-thought, were but materialism; could even such materialism as this, then, be proved of Kant and Hegel, we should not allow it to appal us. No; let the pretensions of these men be what they may, let their darknesses be what they may, we shall never allow the former to declare the latter final. But, happily, there is no need for this; Kant and Hegel are the very truest supports that philosophy has ever yet extended to the religious interests of humanity. Pantheism and Paganism, then, are not, on any account, terrors to us, and most sincerely do we wish the German critics a prosperous deliverance from the blank whiteness of their own most horrible despair.

# INDEX.


Abbt, 268.
Abelard, 146.
Absolute, 65, 138, 139, 315, 316, 323, 363, 368, 386, 433, 442.
Abstract, 365, 366.
Abstraction, 6, 11, 15.
Academics, 101.
Academy, 93, 94, 139.
Accident, 329.
Achilles (the), 19, 364, 365, 366.
Acroamatic, 95.
Actuality, 101, 102, 108, 109, 328, 365, 399, 400.
Actus Purus, 198.
Adaptation, 245.
Ænesidemus, 135, 137.
Æsthetic (Transcendental), 218, 220.
Æsthetics, 285, 297.
Agreeable (the), 242.
Agrippa, 137.
Air, 11, 376, 379, 396.
Albertus Magnus, 349.
Alcibiades, 44.
Alcibiades (the), 63.
Alexander (the Great), 98, 121, 131, 143.
Altenstein, 258.
America, 150.
Ammonius Saccas, 138.
Amyntas, 94.
Analogies of experience, 224.
Analysis, 7, 350.
Analytic, æsthetic, 241.
—— practical, 233.
—— teleological, 244.
—— transcendental, 221.
Anaxagoras, his life, 27; relations to predecessors, 28; his principle of νοῦς, 28; as close of Pre-Socratic Philosophy, 30; Note on, 375-380; mentioned, 4, 8, 26, 39, 111, 351, 352, 371, 373, 395, 396, 421, 455, 460.
Anaximander, 10, 351, 354, 453.
Anaximenes, 10, 21, 351, 352, 354, 453, 455.
Anniceris, 56.
Annotations (these), 345.
Anselm, 144, 145, 405, 406.
Anstoss, 268, 269.
Anthropology, 335, 336.
Anthropomorphism, 16, 81.
Anticipations of sensation, 224.
Antigonus, 123.
Antinomies, 75; Kant's, 213, 227, 228; Zeno's, 363, 364.
Antiphon, 35.
Antisthenes, 53-55.
Antithesis, 20, 21, 74, 76, 163, 360.
Anytus, 43, 44.
Apathy, 135, 137.
Apodictic, 100.
Apologists, 144.
Aporias, 101, 428.
Appearances, 212, 220, 326.
*A priori*, 71, 210, 217-226.
Arabians (the), 145.
Arcesilaus, 136.
Ἀρχή, 10.
Archelaus, 39, 351.
Architectonic, 450, 451.
Architecture, 342.
Archytas, 12.
Aristippus, 53, 55, 56, 132.
Ariston, 58.
Aristophanes, 37, 40, 42, 43, 44.
Aristotle, his life and writings, 94; character and classification of his philosophy, 95; his Logic and Metaphysics, 98; his critique of Plato, 101; his four causes and the relation of form and matter, 105; potentiality and actuality, 108; the absolute, divine spirit, 109; the Physics, 111; the Ethics, 115; the *summum bonum*, 116; notion of virtue, 118; the State, 119; the Peripatetic school, 120; Transition to the Post-Aristotelian Philosophy, 120; Note on, 399-402; mentioned, 4, 5, 6, 9, 12, 13, 17, 19, 21, 27, 29, 39, 48, 50, 51, 55, 61, 68, 77, 93, 125, 130, 131, 132,

134, 138, 145, 147, 148, 194, 205, 221, 252, 323, 351, 353, 355, 356, 357, 358, 361, 365, 368, 369, 370-380, 393, 453, 460, 461, 476.
Arrow (the flying), 19.
Art, 341, 342.
Aspects (contingent), 282.
Assistance (the divine), 164.
Association, 183.
Ast, 346.
Atheism, 26, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 202, 468-473.
Athens, 27.
Atoms, 25, 283.
Atomistic, 7.
Atomists, its founders, 25; the atoms, 25; the plenum and the vacuum, 25; necessity, 26; their position, 26; Note on, 373; mentioned, 4, 7, 8, 22, 28, 352, 396.
Attic prose, 35.
Attraction, 325.
Attribute, 171, 172, 173, 408, 433.
Aufklärung, 8, 31, 42, 346, 370, 381, 382, 394, 395, 396, 411, 437, 463.
Autonomous, 283.
Averroës, 145.
Avicenna, 145.
Axioms of Intuition, 224.

Bacon, 150-153, 156, 381, 403, 404, 411, 453, 464.
Banquet (the), 39, 41, 42, 67.
Bardili, 247.
Basedow, 208.
Baumeister, 207.
Baumgarten, 207.
Bayle, 371.
Beattie, 184.
Beauty, 241, 425.
Beck, 247.
Becker, 310.
Becoming, 7, 19-23, 66, 72, 324, 360, 371, 396, 398.
Beënt, Pref., 16, 17, 359.
Begriff, 50, 353. See also *Notion*.
Being, 7, 14-19, 22, 23, 26, 65, 72-74, 98, 324, 347, 359, 360-367, 371, 396, 398, 401, 406.
Being-for-self, 325.
Beings (four classes of), 83.
Belief, 231, 247, 251.
Berkeley, 193, 201-203, 389, 415, 417-422.
Bessarion, 148.
Bilfinger, 207.
Bindegewebe, 359.
Böhm, 153-156, 194, 287, 306, 404, 423.
Books, 393.
Bouterweck, 247.
Bow and Lyre, 21.
Brandis, 345, 346, 357, 381.
Braniss, 346.
Brown (Bishop), 181, 415.
Brown (Thomas), 416, 428.
Brucker, 346.
Bruno, 152, 153.
Buckle, 363, 381, 382, 394, 405, 436, 456, 459.
Buhle, 346.
Butler (Bishop), 415.
Butler's Lectures, 345, 346, 351, 357, 362, 363.

Calculus (the), 417.
Campanella, 152.
Canonic, 131.
Cardan, 152.
Carlyle, 416, 420.
Carneades, 137.
Categories, 99, 100, 212, 221, 280, 323, 394, 423.
Categorical Imperative, 214, 233.
Causality, 182, 183, 205, 212, 224, 266, 282, 329, 409, 455.
Causes (Aristotle's four), 105-108.
Certainty (moral), 231.
Chalybæus, 346.
Chance, 26.
Chaos, 10.
Charmides, 58.
Charmides (the), 63.
Chemism, 331.
Christianity, 139, 143, 144, 209, 277, 301, 302, 314, 315, 343, 350, 355, 433, 440, 444, 475.
Chrysippus, 123, 131.
Church, 238, 239, 443.
Cicero, 24, 124, 135, 136, 138, 372.
Citizen (a good), 441.
Clarke, 181.
Classes (in Plato's state), 92.
Classification, 450, 451, 452.
Cleanthes, 123, 127.
Cleon, 42.
Clouds (the) 40, 42.
Cogito-sum, 405.
Cognition, 35, 65, 113, 114, 124, 138, 210, 253, 331, 374, 393, 424.
Cold, 10, 17.
Coleridge, 423, 425.
Columbus, 438.
Common sense, 184, 418.
Complexions, 25, 26.
Composition, 23, 28.
Comte, 346, 377, 382, 395, 446-467, 468
Conception, 50, 70, 71, 364, 365, 406.
Concrete, 365, 366.
Condensation, 9, 11.
Condillac, 184, 185, 454.
Conduct (standard of), 397.
Consciousness, 163, 284.
Consequent, 327.
Constitutive, 231, 240, 245, 348.
Contingency, 328.
Continuity, 325, 365, 366.
Contract, 337.



Contradiction, 99, 101, 200, 205, 280, 327.
Contraposition, 427.
Contraries, 10.
Contrariety, 20, 21, 327.
Copernican notion, 216, 415, 423.
Copernicus, 150.
Cosmical principles, 140.
Cosmogony, 82, 306.
Cosmological, 109, 205, 213, 227.
Cosmosophy, 350.
Counterparts, 66, 398.
Courage, 84.
Cousin, 310.
Crantor, 93, 94.
Crates (the Academic), 93.
Crates (the Cynic), 123.
Criterion, 124, 158, 405.
Critias, 37, 44, 58.
Criticism, 138, 216, 260, 279.
Critics (the German), 436, 441, 473-476.
Critolaus, 137.
Crœsus, 9, 10.
Cudworth, 415.
Cynic, 53, 54, 55, 57, 87, 95, 128, 133.
Cynosarges, 54, 95.
Cyrenaic, 53, 55, 56, 57, 86, 132, 133.

D'Alembert, 188
Damon, 39.
Darwin, 354.
Death, 133, 199.
Deduction, 423.
Definition, 48, 50, 101.
Degree, 325.
Demiurgus, 79, 82, 83.
Democritus, 25, 132, 283, 372, 373, 374, 377, 421, 455.
Demonic element in Socrates, 41.
Deontology, 129.
De Quincey, 371.
Descartes, his life, 156; his philosophy, 157; his doubt, 157; his proposition, 157, 158; our spiritual nature, 158; his criterion, 158; the idea of God, 159; the veracity of God, 161; his substances, 161; the seat of the soul, 162; his principles recapitulated and criticised, 163, 164; Note on, 404-407; mentioned, 144, 150, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 172, 173, 176, 381, 411, 414, 454.
Design, 8, 81, 241, 245, 279, 372, 373, 396, 421, 424.
*Deus ex machina*, 8, 29, 81, 164, 199.
Development, 354, 399, 400.
Diagoras, 26.
Dialectic, 18, 19, 30, 64, 66-69, 72, 75, 76, 98, 100, 226, 236, 324, 430-433, 445, 475.
Diamond net, 323, 347, 359, 398.
Diderot, 188-190, 474.
Difference, 65, 71, 354, 355, 359, 366, 404, 434.
Diogenes of Apollonia, 351, 352, 376, 377, 379.
Diogenes Laertius, 351, 372.
Diogenes of Sinope, 54, 55, 364, 368.
Diogenes the Stoic, 138.
Dion, 60.
Dionysius (the elder), 60.
Dionysius (the younger), 60.
Dionysodorus, 33.
Discipline (true), 356.
Discretion, 325, 365, 366
Diversity, 327.
Divisibility, 365, 369, 370, 371.
Division (philosophical), 67, 98.
Dogmatism, 259.
Donaldson, Dr., 349.
Dorism, 44, 58.
Double-entendre (Berkeley's), 418.
Doubt, 157, 279.
Dress, 356.
Dualism, 15, 19, 80, 87, 121, 125, 138, 164.
Duboc, 441.
Duns Scotus, 145, 349.
Duties, 129, 272, 273, 274, 397, 410.
Dynamical sublime, 243.

Earth, 11, 17.
East Indies, 150.
Eclectic, 24, 138, 352, 375.
Economics, 205.
Ecstasy, 139.
Ego, 183, 220, 247, 248, 259-277, 280, 283, 284, 285, 287, 425.
Eleatics, 4, 6, 7, 14-19, 22-27, 30, 36, 53, 57, 62, 64, 67, 73, 75, 357-371, 373, 396, 398, 399, 400, 453.
Elements (the four), 23, 82.
Emanation, 141.
Emerson, 420.
Empedocles, 7, 8, 10, 22-24, 25-28, 30, 372, 373, 375, 376, 379, 396, 453.
Empirical, 449.
Empiricism, 125, 152, 153, 187, 210, 253.
Encyclopædia, 188.
Encyclopædists, 1, 83, 188.
Engel, 208.
English (the), 403.
Enneads, 139.
Ens, 367.
Entelechie, 105, 108, 113, 399, 402.
Epicureanism, 122, 131-134, 135, 138, 139.
Epicurus, 57, 131-134.
Epochs (historical), 5, 6.
Erasmus, 143.
Erdmann, Pref., 345, 346, 349, 350-352, 357, 368, 373, 381, 383, 397, 403, 404, 407, 408, 411, 413, 414, 416, 446.
Eristic, 57, 122.
Eros, 39, 67, 85.
Eschenmayer, 306.
Esse-percipi, 202.

Essence, 326.
Essential, 326.
Ethics, 14, 22, 35, 47-52, 55, 66-69, 85-92, 98, 115-120, 124, 131-134, 205, 235, 444.
Ethics (Aristotle's), 95.
Euclid, 53, 56-58, 59.
Eudæmonism, 55, 210. See also *Happiness, Felicity, Virtue*, etc.
Eudemus, 120.
Eugene (Prince), 194.
Euripides, 27, 33, 42.
Eurytus, 12.
Euthydemus, 33.
Euthydemus (the), 37.
Evil, 126, 133.
Evolution (Law of), 447, 452.
Exertion, 328.
Existence, 328, 359, 434.
Exoteric, 95.
Experience, 151, 210, 212, 253, 278, 414, 415, 416.
Explanation, 366.
Explicit, 366.
Extension, 161, 408, 409.
External World, 202.
Externality, 348.

Faculties, Kant's three, 217.
Family (the), 339.
Fanaticism, Pythagorean, 14.
Fate of Socrates, 397.
Fathers (the), 144.
Fear and Hope, 238.
Feeling, 247, 251, 285.
Felicity, 234, 236.
Female (the), 111.
Ferguson, 416.
Ferrier, 345, 346-9, 350, 352, 353, 357, 360, 371, 372, 416, 421, 427, 462.
Feuerbach, 436.
Ficinus, 148.
Fichte, his life, 255-259; his philosophy —earlier form, 259-275; later form, 276; his practical philosophy, 270; Note on, 427; mentioned, 220, 247, 254, 278, 286, 287, 288, 290, 296, 298, 305, 315, 317, 321, 322, 323, 360, 406, 420, 432, 444, 445.
Final Cause, 105-108.
Fire, 11, 17, 21, 126.
Flux, perpetual, 20, 30.
Forberg, 257.
Force, 328.
Forces, 23.
Form, 101 102, 105-108, 328, 354, 399, 400.
Fraser, Professor, 421.
Frauenstädt, 311.
Freewill, 233, 336.
French Revolution, 187.
—— Illumination, 187-192.
Friendship, 133.
Fries, 247, 346.
Frogs (the), 42.

Galileo, 150.
Garve, 208.
Gassendi, 158, 405, 411.
Gedanke, 353.
Generalization, 397.
Geology, 333.
German Philosophy, 404, 420.
Geulinx, 164-166.
Gnosology, 259-270.
Gnostics, 287.
Γνῶθι σεαυτόν, 47.
God, the notion of, etc., 16, 80, 81, 99, 101, 109, 110, 111, 125, 126, 142, 154, 155, 156, 158, 159, 160, 167, 168, 169, 175, 185, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 198, 201, 202, 208, 209, 213, 214, 229, 230, 237, 254, 274, 275, 306-315, 361, 362, 363, 379, 401, 404-409, 417, 434, 438, 439, 473-476.
Gods, their vices, etc., 16, 26, 35, 134.
Goethe, 257, 355.
Good (the), 57, 63, 64, 67, 69, 80, 87, 115, 127, 174, 201, 242.
Gorgias, 33, 36, 53, 377.
Gorgias (the), 36, 63, 64, 65, 86.
Gorgonization, 387, 391, 392, 418.
Graces, the three, of Socrates, 39.
Gratry, 469.
Gravity, 332.
Greece, Fall of, 402.
Greek Fugitives (the), 148.
Grimm, 190.
Grote, Mr., 345, 346, 350-352, 363, 366-397, 421, 463.
Ground, 205, 327.

Hamann, 247, 420.
Hamilton, Sir W., 366, 371, 416, 419, 426, 427.
Happiness, 55, 64, 67, 86, 116-118, 127 135, 172, 175.
Harmony, the Pre-established, 196-198.
Hartley, 415.
Hate, 8, 10, 23.
Haurćau, 349.
Heart, 84.
Heaven, 112.
Hedonism, 57, 86.
Hedonists, 153.
Hegel, Transition to, 315; his life, 321; his works and system, 322; the Logic, 323; doctrine of Being, 324; of Essence, 326; of the Notion, 329; philosophy of Nature, 332; of Spirit, 334; subjective Spirit, 334; objective Spirit, 336; absolute Spirit, 341; Note on, 429-445; mentioned, 2, 3, 4, 26, 43, 45, 48, 248, 278, 280, 286, 310, 345-366, 371-375, 377, 379, 381, 382, 385, 387, 397-410, 414, 415, 417, 419, 420, 422, 425, 426,



427, 446, 449, 450-454, 457, 459, 461-468, 473-476.
Hegesias, 56.
Heine, 436, 473.
Hell, 209.
Helvetius, 186, 187, 190.
Heraclitus, his historical relation, 19; his characteristics, 20; his principle, 20; fire, 21; transition from, 22; Note on, 371; mentioned, 4, 7, 8, 23-27, 30, 35, 66, 73, 77, 125, 126, 280, 350, 357, 371-378, 375, 395, 396, 398, 399, 400, 455, 460.
Herbart, his life, 278; his philosophy, 278; his basis, 278; his procedure, 279; his metaphysics, 279; his reals, 280; his psychology, 283; his ethics, 285; Note on, 428; mentioned, 247, 360, 428, 464.
Herder, 247.
Hermeias, 94, 95.
Herodotus, 314.
Herpyllis, 95.
Hesiod, 9, 16, 91.
Heteronomous, 234.
Hippasus, 351.
Hippias, 33, 36, 37.
Hippias minor (the), 63.
Hippo, 352.
Histories of Philosophy, 345, 346.
History, 96, 340, 341, 348.
Hobbes, 177, 364, 365, 394, 411-413.
Hölderlin, 286.
Holbach, 190, 474.
Homer, 9, 16, 91.
Homœomeries, 29, 375.
Hope, 238.
Huber, 349.
Hufeland, 257.
Hugo, 473.
Humboldt, 257.
Hume, 181-184, 210, 212, 216, 251, 414-416, 420, 422, 423, 454, 455, 456, 465.
Hutcheson, 181, 416, 444.
Hyle, 79.
Hylicists, 6, 13, 21, 23, 30, 32.
Hypostasis, 80.

Iamblichus, 12, 139.
Idæus, 352.
Idea, 76, 77-89, 101-105, 108, 316, 329, 331, 398, 402.
Ideal, 89, 227, 229.
Idealism, 125, 176, 192-209, 210, 212, 217, 244, 248, 251, 253, 259, 287, 291, 294-298, 299-304, 316, 374, 391, 419, 420, 431, 435, 476.
Ideality, 315-316.
Ideas, 51, 64-68, 70, 72-89, 101-105, 177-179, 202, 359, 398, 399.
Ideation confused, 193.
Identity, 65, 71, 327, 355, 359, 366, 404, 434.
Illumination, 8, 31, 187-192, 207-209, 210, 381, 416.
Immaterial principle, 90.
Immediacy, 329.
Immortality, 10, 67, 84, 439, 440.
Imperative, categorical, 214, 233, 424.
Implicit, 366.
Import finite, 402.
Induction, 48, 50, 151.
Infinite, 10, 365, 366, 401.
Inherence, 280, 281.
In-itself, 299.
Inner, 328.
Intellect, 8, 10.
Intellectus, 145.
Intelligible, principle, 7, 396.
Intuition, 224, 247, 251.
Intuitive understanding, 426.
Ionics, 4, 6, 7, 9-11, 23, 350, 352, 373, 396, 453, 459.
Irony, Socratic, 49.
Isocrates, 35.
Italics, 11, 373.

Jacobi, 247-255, 267, 286, 306, 411, 416, 426, 427.
John, St., 277, 315.
Judgment, 330.
Judgment, Kritik of, 215, 217, 246, 246.
Judgment, Æsthetic, 241.
Judgment, Teleological, 241, 244.
Judgments of explanation (analytic), 213.
Judgments of extension (synthetic), 213.
Judgments of sensation, 361.

Kames, Lord, 416.
Kant, Transition to, 209; life, 214; Kritik of Pure Reason, 217; the Transcendental Æsthetic, 218; the Transcendental Analytic, 221; the Transcendental Dialectic, 226; the Ideas of Reason, 226; Psychological Idea, 227; Cosmological Idea and Antinomies, 228; Theological Idea, or Ideal of Pure Reason, 229; the Kritik of Practical Reason, 232; Practical Analytic, 233; Practical Dialectic, 236; Religion within the limits of Pure Reason, 238; Kritik of Judgment, 240; Æsthetic Critique, 241; Teleological Critique, 244; Note on, 422-426; mentioned, 100, 249, 251, 253-262, 266, 267, 275, 278, 285, 286, 288, 290, 295, 323, 347, 374, 385, 394, 401, 405, 406, 414-416, 419, 422-426, 427, 430, 431, 434, 439, 444, 450, 451, 454, 455, 465, 476.
Kepler, 150.
Klopstock, 256.
Knights (the), 42.

Knowledge, 51, 57, 64, 199, 249, 251, 259-270. See also *Cognition*.
Kritik of Pure Reason, 210, 215, 216, 217-232.
Kritik of Practical Reason, 214, 215, 217, 232-238.
Kritik of Judgment, 215, 217, 240-246.
Krug, 247, 441.

Laches (the), 63.
La Grange, 190.
La Mettrie, 188, 189, 190, 198.
Laurie, Mr., 444.
Laws (the), 88, 91.
Legality, 235.
Leibnitz, his life, 192; the monads, 194; pre-established harmony, 196; idea of God, 198; soul and body, 198; theory of knowledge, 199; the Théodicée, 200; Note on, 416; mentioned, 190, 191, 201, 202, 203, 204, 207, 210, 283, 285, 287, 322, 359, 374, 454.
Leucippus, 24, 272-274.
Lewes, Mr., Pref., 345-347, 350-353, 358, 360-365, 371-375, 382, 421, 439, 446, 447, 454, 457, 461, 462, 464, 466-473.
Life, 331.
Locke, his life, 177; innate ideas, 177; origin of ideas, 179; his followers, 181; Note on, 413-415; mentioned, 181-186, 192, 199, 210, 211, 374, 417, 454.
Locomotion, 113, 114.
Logic, 67-69, 98-101, 124, 131, 132, 221, 323.
Love, 8, 10, 23, 376, 379.
Lucretius, 138.
Lyceum, 95.
Lycon, 43.
Lysis (the), 63.

Magnitude, 205, 325.
Maieutics, 49, 392.
Male (the), 111.
Malebranche, 164-168, 407-408, 414.
Man, 31, 35, 113-115, 409.
Mandeville, 415.
Manifestation, 227.
Many, 19, 325.
Marbach, 346.
Marcus, 304.
Marriage, 339.
Materialism, 125, 184, 188-192, 210.
Mathematics, 68, 69, 98.
Matter, 6, 76, 79, 82, 101, 102, 105-108, 164, 166, 167, 171-173, 288, 298, 328, 354, 355, 399, 400, 418.
Matters of fact, 415.
Maurice, Mr., 345, 346.
Maxims of volition, 234.
Mayer, 169.
Means competent, 117.
Measure, 325.
Mechanical explanation, 23, 27.
Mechanics, 331, 332.
Medici (the), 143.
Megarics, 53, 56-58, 59, 64, 65, 87, 122.
Meier, 207.
Melanchthon, 143.
Melissus, 15, 357, 358, 361.
Melitus, 43.
Mendelssohn, 208, 249.
Meno (the), 44.
Metaphysic, 98-111, 205, 218, 226, 279, 401, 453.
Metaphysics (Aristotle's), 95, 99, 101.
Method, 49, 262, 316-318, 323, 431, 434.
Michelet, 346, 372.
Mill, Mr., 346, 364-366, 382, 446-448, 450-467.
Millet (problem), 368, 369.
Milton, 367.
Mind, 8, 28-30, 164, 166, 167, 171-173, 288-298, 375, 396, 421.
Modes, 179.
Modus, 173, 408, 433.
Monads, 194-196, 281, 282, 374.
Monism, 15, 19, 138, 144.
Monotheism, 368.
Moralität, 48, 337, 395, 398.
Moral awe, 235, 238.
Moral law, 233.
Moral proof for God's existence, 237.
Morals, 52. See also *Ethics*.
More, Henry, 415.
Morell, Dr., 462.
Motion, 112, 205, 363-371, 378.
Motives, 233, 234.
Movement in matter, 10, 17, 18, 22, 23, 26, 28.
Music, 342.
Mutation, 280, 282.
Mysticism, 153, 304.
Mythical cosmogonies, 5, 9.
Mythological explanation, 396.
Mythology, 306-315.

Naturalism, 26.
Nature, 81, 113, 288, 331, 332, 343.
Nature, works on, 20, 23, 28, 36.
Necessity, 8, 26, 328, 415.
Negation, 317, 324, 398.
Negative, 327.
Negativity, 404.
Neo-Platonism, 6, 12, 122, 138-144, 276, 287, 364.
Newton, 181, 417, 459.
Nicomachus, 94, 95.
Niethammer, 257, 288.
*Nihil est in intellectu*, etc., 114, 181, 184, 417.
Nominalism, 145-147.
Νόμῳ, 36.
Non-being, 26, 65, 66, 72-74, 398.
Nothing, 25, 324.



Notion, 48, 50, 51, 64, 65, 69, 103-105, 145, 317, 329, 396, 431, 434, 442, 443, 445.
Noumenal, 225, 375, 418, 457.
Nous, 28, 376-380, 395.
Novalis, 258.
Number, 6, 11, 82, 325, 352, 354, 355, 396.
Nutrition, 113, 114.

Oath of the Gods, 356.
Objectivity, 8, 37, 38, 65, 66, 120-123, 212, 329, 380, 380-396, 397, 402.
Objects, a process, 359.
Obstetrics, spiritual, 40.
Occam, 146.
Occasionalism, 165.
Oceanus, 9.
Octave, the musical, 83.
*Omnis determinatio*, etc., 170.
One, 15, 16, 19, 65, 66, 75, 76, 87, 325, 352, 359-361, 367, 372.
Ontological, 205, 405, 406.
Opinion, 69, 71, 365, 399
Optimism, 201.
Organics, 333.
Organon (the), 99, 393.
Origination, 106, 325.
Ossian, 428.
Oswald, 184.
Ott, 471.
Ovid, 356.

Paganism, 473-476.
Painting, 342.
Paley, 415.
Panætius, 122.
Paracelsus, 154.
Paradoxes of Zeno, 365.
Paralogisms of Pure Reason, 227.
Parenetic, 37, 393.
Parmenides, 8, 15, 16-18, 20, 22-24, 26, 75, 77, 78, 280, 283, 357, 358, 361, 362, 367, 421, 455.
Parmenides (the), 65, 66, 68, 73, 75-77.
Participation, 78.
Particular, 354.
Passions (the) 404.
Pathological, 402, 424.
Paulus, 286, 311.
Pausanias, 39.
Penalty, 337.
Perception, theory of, 422.
—— of Reason, 252.
Periods, philosophical, 6.
Peripatetic, 95, 120.
Personality, 336, 402.
Peter, St., 315.
Petrus Lombardus, 144.
Phædo (the), 12, 14, 67, 72, 79, 85, 103, 375, 377.
Phædrus (the), 34, 47, 62, 63, 67, 85.
Phænarete, 30, 49, 396.
Phenomenal world, etc., 7, 15, 66, 76, 78, 101, 225, 432.
Phenomenology (the), 318-321, 335, 336.
Pherecydes, 352.
Philebus (the), 36, 67, 73, 86.
Philolaus, 12.
Philosopher, 353.
Philosophy, 39, 69, 86, 93, 96, 97, 98, 131, 174, 204, 205, 341, 343, 347-349, 403, 406, 414, 428.
—— Anaxagorean, 8, 27.
—— Atomistic, 7, 25.
—— Commencement of, 5, 396.
—— Divisions of, 204-205.
—— Eleatic, 6, 14.
—— Empedoclean, 7, 22.
—— First, 98.
—— German, 404, 420.
—— Heraclitic, 7, 19.
—— Histories of, 345, 346.
—— History of (General Idea of the), 1-5, 347-349.
—— Ionic, 6, 9.
—— Modern (Transition to), 145-156, 403.
—— Oriental, 5, 349.
—— Post-Aristotelian, 120-137, 402.
—— Post-Kantian (Transition to), 246.
—— Practical, 14, 22, 35, 67, 98, 174, 205, 214, 232, 270, 285, 336, 444.
—— Pre-Socratic, 6-39, 396.
—— Pythagorean, 6, 11.
—— Scholastic, 5, 144-148, 349.
—— Scottish, 184, 416.
—— Second, 98.
—— Sophistic, 8, 30.
—— Theoretical, 67, 98, 204.
Φύσει, 36.
Physics, 12, 14, 66-69, 81, 98, 111-115, 124, 125, 131, 132, 333.
Pineal gland, 162, 405.
Plato, his life, 58; development of his writings, etc., 61; division of his system, 67; his dialectics, 69; his physics, 81; his ethics, 86; retrospect, 93; Note on, 398-399; mentioned, 4, 6, 12, 14, 19, 25, 29, 31, 32, 34, 36, 37, 39, 42, 44, 46, 47, 49, 51, 57, 94, 96-98, 101-105, 106, 108, 115, 118-121, 125, 191, 196, 138, 144, 145, 148, 287, 475, 476.
Pleasure, 86, 133.
Plenum, 25, 26.
Pliny, 134.
Plotinus, 138, 139-141, 362, 443, 468.
Plurality, 65, 66.
Plutarch, 60.
Poetry, 342.
Polemo, 93.
Politics, 96, 205, 271, 272.
Polus, 37.
Polygnotus, 123.
Polymath, 25, 33, 37, 194.

Pompey, 124.
Pomponatius, 147.
Pope, 421.
Porch or Portico, 123.
Porphyry, 12, 139.
Posidonius, 124.
Position absolute, 280, 281, 282.
Positive, 327.
Positivism, 423, 447-467.
Possibility, 204, 205, 328.
Post-Aristotelian philosophy, 120-137, 402.
Post-Kantian philosophy, 246.
Postulates of empirical thought, 225.
Postulates, practical, 214, 237, 247, 423, 424, 426, 444.
Potentiality, 101, 102, 108, 109, 365, 399, 400.
Practical philosophy, 14, 22, 35, 67, 98, 174, 205, 214, 232, 270, 285, 336, 444
Prantl, 349, 383, 384, 392, 393.
Prayer, 444.
Pre-Socratic philosophy, 6-89, 396.
Presupposition, 163.
Price, 415.
Priestley, 415.
Primal matter, 10, 106.
Printing press, 148.
Principle of morals, 234, 273, 424.
Principles, material, formal, and intelligible, 396.
Probability, 137.
Proclus, 139.
Prodicus, 33, 34, 37, 39.
Properties, 328.
Property, 337.
Proposition of Descartes, 115.
Propositions, 99.
Protagoras, 31, 33-36, 44, 58, 70, 71, 377, 382, 383, 384, 388, 397.
Protagoras (the), 36, 63, 64, 66.
Protreptic, 62, 398.
Prytanes, 44.
Psyche, 85, 304.
Psychology, and psychological, 66, 205, 206, 213, 217, 226, 283, 335, 336, 375, 389, 400, 405.
Ptolemaic system, 83.
Pyramids, 353.
Pyrrho, 134-136.
Pythagoras, 11, 15.
Pythagoreans, 4, 6, 11-15, 59, 60, 62, 64, 66, 67, 73, 85, 93, 94, 131, 352, 353, 356, 357, 360, 396, 438, 453, 455, 459.
Pythias, 94, 95.

Quadruplicity, 87.
Qualities, primary, etc., 374.
Quality, 324.
Quantity, 325, 365, 366.
Quantum, 18, 325.

Raison *suffisante*, 198
*Raisonnement*, 96.
Ramus, 147.
Rarefaction, 9, 11.
Rationalism, 437.
Realism, 30, 47, 145-147, 176-192, 209, 210, 244, 251, 299-304, 316.
Reality, 315, 316, 325.
Reals, 280-285, 428.
Reason, 28-31, 127, 140-142, 232, 372, 379, 383, 384, 395, 417, 442.
—— Ideas of, 213, 226-232, 237, 247, 253.
Reciprocity, 225, 266, 329.
Reflection, 179.
Reflexion, 326.
Reformation, 145, 148, 149.
Regulative, 230, 240, 245, 348.
Reid, 184, 419, 444, 454.
Reimarus, 208, 209.
Reinhold, 247, 261.
Reuchlin, 148.
Reuss, 215.
Relations of ideas, 415.
Relativity, 63, 65, 70, 368-370, 374, 380-396.
Religion, 238, 240, 341, 343, 438.
Republic (the), 31, 60, 67, 68, 85, 87-89.
Repulsion, 325.
Reserve, 135, 136, 137.
Revelation, 306-315.
Revival of letters, 148.
Right, 270-273, 336.
Ritter, 346, 351, 381.
Rixner, 346.
Romans, the, 187, 198, 402.
Roscelinus, 145.
Rosenkranz, 322, 430, 469-472.
Rousseau, 182, 209, 215.
Ruge, 436, 445, 474, 476.
Rulers ought to be philosophers, 60, 91.

Sage (the), 54, 55, 129, 130.
*Salto mortale*, 251.
Scepsis, 279.
Scepticism, 8, 30, 31, 37, 57, 122, 134, 139, 150, 202.
Scepticism, Elder, 134.
—— Later, 137.
Schelling, his life, 286; his philosophy, first period, 287; second period, 290; philosophy of nature, 291; transcendental philosophy, 294; philosophy of art, 297; third period, 299; fourth period, 304; fifth period, 306; Note on, 428; mentioned, 156, 248, 254, 255, 276, 278, 315, 316, 318, 321, 343, 401, 420, 428, 429, 431, 434, 462.
Schema, Transcendental, etc., 222.
Schiller, 235, 246, 257.
Schlegel, 257, 258.
Schleiermacher, 56, 258, 346, 351, 352.
Scholasticism, 5, 143-147, 349.
School, the Peripatetic, 120.
Schoolmen, 453.
Schopenhauer, 437.
Schulze, 247.
Schwegler, his life, xi.; works, xii.; character, xiii.; death, xiv.; mentioned, Pref., 345, 346-352, 360, 363, 372, 373, 380-385, 392, 393, 397, 399, 401-404, 414-418, 423, 425, 427.
Science, 69, 72, 77; natural, 149, 150.
Sciences, the classification of, 447, *seq.*
Scipio, 124.
Scotus Erigena, 144.
Sculpture, 342.
Secret of Hegel, 365, 419, 423
Seelye, Pref.
Self, 183.
Self-love, 186, 187, 192, 234.
Seeming, 17.
Seneca, 138.
Sengler, 310.
Sensation, 35, 70, 71, 113, 114, 179, 185.
Sensations, 202.
Sense, common, 184.
Sense, inner, 405.
Senses (the), 371, 373, 374, 375.
Sensualism, 125, 184, 186, 187.
Sentences of Lombard, 144.
Seven Sages (the), 9.
Sextus Empiricus, 67, 137, 353.
Shaftesbury, 177.
Show (*Schein*), 65, 66, 73.
Sight, 202.
Sigwart, 346.
Silence 356.
Sillographist, 134.
Simplicius, 357, 376.
Sittlichkeit, 48, 338, 395, 398, 399.
Smith, Adam, 416.
Sociology, 460.
Socrates, transition to, 37; his personality, 39; Socrates and Aristophanes, 42; condemnation of Socrates, 43; sources of his philosophy, 46; his general character, 47; the Socratic method, 49; doctrine of virtue, 51; Note on, 396; mentioned, 4, 6, 8, 12, 20, 28, 29, 34, 36, 53-59, 61-67, 73, 77, 85, 87, 93, 94, 104, 115, 116, 118, 136, 375, 377, 380-382, 392, 394, 398, 438, 453, 460.
Socratics, the incomplete, 58.
Solger, 322.
Solon, 9.
Sophist (the), 65, 66, 73, 74.
Sophistic, 100.
Sophists, their relation to predecessors, 30; to the general life of the time, 31; their tendencies, 33; their historical significance, 34; the individual Sophists, 35; Note on, 380; mentioned, 4, 6, 8, 37, 38, 39, 47, 48, 51, 56, 62, 63, 64, 73, 86, 121, 122, 352, 375, 396, 397.
Sophroniscus, 39.
Soul, 14, 17, 62, 79, 83, 85, 114, 162, 185, 188-192, 198, 203, 209.
Sound, 368.
Space, 112, 205, 211, 218, 220, 253, 282, 288, 369, 370, 394, 421.
Speculative, 353, 401, 406.
Speusippus, 93.
Sphairos, 23.
Spinoza, his life, 168; substance, 169; the attributes, 171; the modi, 173; his practical philosophy, 174; Note on, 408; mentioned, 156, 249, 251, 255, 267, 287, 298-304, 316, 401, 407, 414, 454.
Spirit, 331; the absolute divine, 109, 110, 111.
Stagira, 94.
Stahl, 310.
Star-worship, 94.
State, 67, 86-93, 119, 120, 272, 337, 339, 340, 394, 395, 410.
State (So-ness), 326.
State-philosophy, 429.
Statesman (the), 60, 65.
Steinbart, 208.
Στέρησις, 106, 107.
Stewart, Dugald, 184.
Stilpo, 57.
Stoa Poecilè, 123, 136.
Stöckl, 349.
Stoicism, 20, 57, 122-131, 135, 137, 138, 139, 403.
Stones, 11.
Strabo, 95.
Strato, 120.
Strife, 21.
Sty, Epicurean, 131.
Style, 35.
Styx, 356.
Subjectivity, 8, 30, 31, 65, 66, 120-123, 212, 329, 380-396, 397, 402.
Sublime, 241, 242, 243.
Substance, 101, 161, 169, 179, 180, 181, 328, 408, 414.
Substantial, 399.
Substantiality, 89, 212, 224, 266, 267.
Sulzer, 208.
*Summum bonum*, 86, 116-118, 132, 236.
Σύνολον, 101, 107.
Supernatural, 442.
Suspense, 135-137.
Swedenborg, 442.
Swimmer, Delian, 20.
Syllogism, 99, 100, 230.
Symbolism Pythagorean, 13, 14.
Synthetic, 7, 213, 223, 350, 378.
Système de la Nature, 190.

Tabula rasa, 114, 179, 183.
Taste, 242.
Ταυτόν, 74.
Taylor, Thomas, 373.

Teleological, 29, 81, 83, 331.
*Tertium quid*, 18.
Tennemann, 346, 368, 374.
Tethys, 9.
Thales, 5, 6, 9, 10, 21, 349-351, 353-356, 373, 453, 455.
Θάτερον, 74.
Thaumaturgy, 444.
Theætetus (the), 59, 65, 66, 70, 73, 74, 386, 393.
Theodicée, 194, 200, 201.
Theodorus, 56.
Theogony, 305.
Theologians, certain ancient, 9.
Theology, 98, 99, 205, 207, 213, 227.
Theophrastus, 120, 362, 374, 375.
Theoretical, 67, 98.
Theosophy, 350.
Thetic, 398.
Theurgy, 139, 143, 444.
Thing, 328.
Thing-in-itself, 220, 259.
Thirty (the), 43, 58.
This (the), 310.
Thomas Aquinas, 145, 349.
Thomson, Sir W., 467.
Thought, 8, 26, 28, 51, 72, 158, 161, 408, 409, 431, 432.
Thought and Being, 16, 58, 362, 368.
Thought, infinite, 401.
Thrasybulus, 58.
Thrasymachus, 37.
Thümming, 207.
Timæus (the), 67, 68, 72, 79, 81-85.
Time, 112, 205, 211, 218-220, 258, 279, 283, 364, 369, 370.
Timon, 134, 135.
Touch and sight, 202.
Transcendental, 210, 218.
Transformation, 279.
Transmigration, 14, 62.
Trendelenburg, 346.
Trinity, 155, 355, 422, 425, 426.
Triplicity, 88, 98.
Tropes, 135.
True, the, etc., 67.
Truths, necessary, 417.
Tucker, Abraham, 415.

Ueberweg, 345-346, 349, 403, 404, 405, 407, 408, 410, 414, 415, 417, 423, 437.
Understanding, intuitive, 246, 426.
—— and reason, 442.
*Unio mystica*, 442.
Unity, 65, 66, 428.
Unity of God, 16, 80, 81, 99, 101, 109-111, 125, 126, 142, 154-156, 158-160, 167-169, 175.
Unity of thought, etc., 354, 409, 421.
Universal, 26, 329, 354, 373, 374, 397.
Universality, 415.
Universals, 48, 50, 64, 65, 69, 103-105, 145.
Universe, 359, 399, 417.

Vacuum, 25, 26.
Vanini, 147, 152.
Vaux, Madame de, 462.
Vegetable world, 334.
Veracity of God, 161.
Vice, 128.
Virchow, 359.
Virtue and virtues, 47, 51, 52, 54, 68, 86-88, 116, 118-119, 124, 127, 128, 132, 175, 256.
Vision, theory of, 202.
Voltaire, 188, 411.
Voluntas, 145.
Vorstellung, 50.
Vortex, 26, 29.

Water, 9, 11, 353, 396.
Warm and cold, 362.
Wendt, 346, 446.
Whole and parts, 205.
Will, 174, 233, 235, 405.
Wise man, the, 54, 55, 129, 130.
Wissenschaftslehre, 259-270.
Wolff, 203-207, 210, 323, 417.
Wollaston, 181.
World, theories of, 12, 81.
World-soul, 79, 82, 140-142, 288-298.
Wrong, 337.

Xantippe, 40.
Xenia, Schiller's, on Kant, 235.
Xenocrates, 67, 68, 93, 94, 95.
Xenophanes, 15, 20, 357, 358, 361, 368, 449.
Xenophon, 34, 37, 39-42, 44-49, 55, 58, 62.

Zeller, Pref., 345-351, 357, 358, 361, 362, 372, 373, 375, 376-379, 381, 382.
Zeno, the Eleatic, 15, 18, 19, 30, 36, 57, 363-371, 377, 395.
Zeno (the Stoic), 123, 136.

EDINBURGH: PRINTED BY OLIVER AND BOYD.

# WORKS

BY

## JAMES HUTCHISON STIRLING,

F.R.C.S. & LL.D., EDIN.;

FOREIGN MEMBER OF THE PHILOSOPHICAL SOCIETY OF BERLIN.

I.

*In 2 vols. 8vo, Price 28s.*

## THE SECRET OF HEGEL;

**Being the Hegelian System in Origin, Principle, Form, and Matter.**

### OPINIONS OF THE PRESS.

*From Bell's Messenger.*

"There can be no question whatever respecting the weight and solidity of Mr. Stirling's exposition. . . . It will mark a period in philosophical transactions, and tend more thoroughly to reveal the tendencies of modern thought in that direction than any other work yet published in this country has done."

*From the Edinburgh Courant.*

"Mr. Stirling's learned and laborious endeavours to unveil the mystery of Hegel are entitled to attentive and thoughtful consideration. . . . Mr Stirling has applied himself to his subject systematically and thoroughly. . . . There can no such complete guide be found in the English language."

*From the Glasgow Herald.*

"This is a most remarkable book in several respects. The author is, p rhaps, the very first in this country who has laboriously and patiently sounded Hegel. . . . Unlike any of the

commentators of Hegel that we have yet seen, Mr. Stirling can always be understood by an intelligent and attentive reader. He writes as if he wished to make himself plain to the meanest capacity, and he has a facility of language and illustration which lights up the driest and most abstract reasonings of his master."

*From the Temperance Spectator.*

"A great book has just been published, entitled 'The Secret of Hegel,' which, sooner or later, must attract the attention, and influence the conclusions, of true thinkers."

*From the Weekly Despatch.*

"A very elaborate, conscientious, and earnest work. . . . We express our high estimation of the ability and research displayed in it."

*From the John Bull.*

"If anything can make Hegel's 'complete Logic' acceptable to the English mind, such faith and industry as Mr. Stirling's must succeed. . . . Those who wish to form a complete survey of the great field of German philosophy will do well to study these volumes."

*From the London Review.*

"We welcome most cordially these volumes. . . . A work which is the monument of so much labour, erudition, perseverance, and thought."

*From the Athenæum.*

"To say that this is by far the most important work written in the English language on any phase of the post-Kantian philosophy of Germany would be saying very little. . . . One of the most remarkable works on philosophy that has been seen for years."

*From the Churchman.*

"The book itself is of much value, especially at the present time. . . . It will repay those well who will give the necessary attention to its reading. We have to thank Mr. Stirling for setting these obscure *dicta* in as clear a light as they can be set in, and making them as intelligible as they can be made."



*From the Eclectic Review.*

"All readers who have the taste and patience necessary for the encountering such tasks will be glad to receive Mr. Stirling's exposition. We have read it with deep interest. It was a very tough task, and he has wrought it in a determined and intelligent manner."

*From the Westminster Review.*

". . . Has approached nearer to an intelligible exposition of the Hegelian philosophy than has yet been accomplished in England. . . . The Preface a remarkably vigorous and *masterful* piece of writing—the book able in the highest degree."

*From the Globe.*

"Mr. Stirling has certainly done much to help the English student. . . . He is a writer of power and fire—original, bold, self-reliant, and with a wealth of knowledge and thought that must soon make him distinguished among the teachers of the teachers of this country.

*From Professor Masson.*

"The book deserves a cordial welcome."

*From Mr. Cupples.*

"The whole work is in my view a masterpiece—a *great* book. The style, manner, method, and art of it enchant me—to use a loose expression among general terms. I consider it to be completely successful in what it proposes to do. Its appearance should constitute an era at once in the literary and the philosophical aspect. The ease and fulness of philosophical expression in it—the power and wealth of illustration, comparison, assimilation, analogy, metaphor, literary filling out and accommodation, and finish—are to my mind unique. The labour, the patience—the instinct for truth and for metaphysical tracks and trails—the constant connection with life—the explanatory method of resuming and taking up, so that the reader is taught without almost any stress on his own thought—these things continually rouse my admiration and delight. The whole book is colossal—a wonder of work. The style of it is unique in raciness, original

force, and utterly unaffected prodigality of wealth—expository, ratiocinative, illustrative, literary, familiar, discursive. The characterisations of the man Hegel are *delicia* of literary touch."

*From the Caledonian Mercury.*

"Whatever may be said of the speculative German himself, the ability of his expositor is superior to question. Mr. Stirling has brought to his work an able and instructed mind, and an unwavering confidence in the power and majesty of his master. He is in himself a host of critics and disciples."

*From the Scotsman.*

"The critic, the historian, the sociologist, the physiologist, the student of natural science, will find ideas in exploring after the secret of Hegel that will be useful in arresting other secrets."

*From the North American Review.*

"The author is a man of classical accomplishments, of the sturdiest and, at the same time, keenest intellectual faculty, of imagination enough to stock an aviary of popular poets."

*From the British Controversialist.*

"It is granted to few in any age—and especially in this age of critical rather than of effective thought—to gain by a single effort the highest place in any department of literature. This rare feat has been accomplished by James Hutchison Stirling. To him 'familiarity has been converted into insight; the toils of speculation have made him strong; and the results of speculation have made him wise.' At a time when philosophic thinking seemed exhausted, and panting souls toiled after truth apparently in vain; when realism and psychology appeared to be triumphant over idealism and metaphysic; when the diviner element in man was losing the consciousness of itself, and had begun to be ignored in speculations upon human nature; and when the outward forms of Being looked as if they were certain not only to win, but to monopolise the entire attention of mankind—one arose, suddenly as an apparition, capable of changing all that. A philosopher in good truth—one who, stirred by the love of wisdom, had toiled long and longingly to acquire a



knowledge of the hidden roots of thoughtful life, and who, unrestingly though unhastingly, devoted the vigour of manhood's prime to that researchful study which alone repays the thinker with revelations—came forth from the seclusion of a self-imposed discipleship to lay upon the library table of reflective men the results of a 'ten years' conflict' with the mighty mysteries of human thought and feeling. Solid, judicious, and capable men saw in the book matter for profound consideration, and determined to bestow on it a loving perusal and a careful judgment. . . . The value of the book is so great that merely to read it is an education in philosophy."

*From Der deutsche Pionier of Cincinnati.*

"So blieben die Sachen stehen bis vor ungefähr einem Jahrzent als zu gleicher Zeit in England und in America dem Studium deutscher Philosophie ein neuer bisher unerreichter Aufschwung gegeben ward: in England geschah diess namentlich durch J. Hutchison Stirling."

*From the Troy (U.S.A.) Daily Press.*

"Dr. James Hutchison Stirling, the newest and deepest thinker of Great Britain, has for the first time reproduced German philosophy, with sufficient insight and culture to render it thoroughly intelligible. Dr. Stirling has not only proved that such men as Kant and Hegel *understood themselves*, but he has duly scalped the quacks who have met transcendentalism with sneers instead of brains."

*From Letter of Prof. Rosenkranz to Journ. Sp. Phil.*

"In an article, 'Theism and Pantheism,' you have, in speaking of Hegel, adopted an interpretation of his system to which I adhere, and which is also represented on the part of the English by Dr. Stirling ('Secret of Hegel'). Hegel not only does not deny God, freedom, and immortality, but he teaches them as the highest consequences of his speculation. He rejects atheism and pantheism in the clearest words. Freedom is the soul of his ethical view of the world. In regard to immortality he has nowhere propounded a *credo* in catechism form; but the manner in which he expresses himself in his 'Philosophy of Religion,' in treating of the Egyptian religion, can surely leave no doubt on the subject."

II.

*In 8vo, Price 5s.*

# SIR WILLIAM HAMILTON;

## BEING THE PHILOSOPHY OF PERCEPTION.

## AN ANALYSIS.

*From the Scotsman.*

"Mr. Stirling has published a separate thin volume, justifying his hostile criticisms by details, and dealing altogether a blow to the reputation of Sir W. Hamilton's doctrine of perception more ponderous than that dealt by Mr. Mill; for it is a blow struck from a higher altitude, and directed by an eye that commands a wider range than Mr. Mill's.

*From the Aberdeen Journal.*

"Mr. Stirling's works in exposition of the Hegelian philosophy stamped him as a writer of the first rank on philosopical subjects. . . . We unreservedly give Mr. Stirling high praise as a controversialist; he had already earned his laurels as an expositor in the field of philosophy. His vision is large, clear, and minute; and as a mental anatomist, he cuts neatly, cleanly, and to the core."

*From the Glasgow Herald.*

"We place a very high value upon this analysis. It shows that the author writes from fulness of knowledge, and after a careful thought; and it also exhibits ingenuity, dexterity, clear decided convictions, and vigorous expression."

*From the Guardian.*

"It is the genuine product of a peculiar mind which is really original and thoughtful."

*From the Edinburgh Courant.*

"His knowledge of metaphysical subjects is plainly thorough and extensive; and his book, as it stands, will very well reward the attention of the student."



*From the Westminster Review.*

"There could not be a more vigorous and damaging onslaught on Hamiltonianism than that of Mr. Stirling—the more damaging, because we have here the result of an unprejudiced examination of the writings of that celebrated logician."

*From the London Review.*

"The author of this second volume under notice, bears a name that stands high in the list of modern philosophical writers. Mr. Stirling's 'Secret of Hegel,' which was noticed in our columns some time back, stamped the writer at once as a man of profound thought, wide erudition, and great independence of view. . . . As we might expect from a critic of Mr. Stirling's subtlety, earnestness, and self-reliance, the scrutiny is very close and unsparing, and we must say that Hamilton's reputation comes out of the trial considerably damaged."

*From the British Controversialist.*

"This is the work of a man who is emphatically a thinker. James Hutchison Stirling has written a treatise on 'The Secret of Hegel'—which, we regret to say, we have not read. There is, however, in this harsh-spoken, trenchant, and incisive critique, proof enough of ability to give new, fresh, vigorous thought to the problems of philosophy. The vision and the insight of the man is acute and accurate. The argument against Sir William Hamilton's tenets is put in a more telling form than it has been presented by its author's 'more distinguished contemporary, Mr. Mill;' and as it is less discursive, it is more cogent. The eye with which Mr. Stirling has perused the scattered writings of Hamilton has been lynx-like in its fault-seeing. The selective faculty which culled the pertinent extracts to which he refers as embodying the distinct utterances of the doctrine of Hamilton, has been choicely gifted with a sleuth-hound's infallibility of pursuit and seizure, despite of all dodges and evasions. The logical power by which comparisons have been made between passage and passage, thought and thought, is cultured and sharpened to the finest; while the language employed in the discussion is terse, animated, varied, well arranged, and most effectively put together. It would be difficult indeed to mistake the signification of any sentence in the book. Without being

so pedantically scholastic, it is as translucent as Hamilton's. The grasp of his mind is tense, the heat of his passion intense, and the language in which he expresses both is sententious, graphic, and precise."

---

## III.

*In 8vo, Price 2s.*

# AS REGARDS PROTOPLASM;

## SECOND COMPLETED EDITION.

*From the Journal of Speculative Philosophy.*

"The preface is an annihilating reply to the last rejoinder of Mr. Huxley. Indeed the pamphlet as a whole is one of the most powerful polemics ever written."

*From the Athenæum.*

"Clearly and forcibly written, it is distinguished by a fairness of statement and a moderation of tone which are rare in controversies of this sort. If Professor Huxley intended in his essay to propound a complete theory of the physical basis of life, the honours of the controversy must be adjudged to Dr. Stirling."

*From "Nature" (Dr. Bastian).*

"When one of the most powerful representatives of the transcendental school of philosophy, himself possessing a knowledge of biological science, consents to do battle against the modern doctrines concerning life and its assumed material substratum, *protoplasm*, we may expect, at least, that the strongest arguments which can be adduced will be brought to bear against the obnoxious theories and their supposed materialistic tendencies. Still more especially must we prepare ourselves for battle *à outrance* when the champion that steps forward is one who



has already grappled so manfully with the 'Secret of Hegel,' and is otherwise so distinguished a leader amongst the adverse school of thinkers."

*From the Watchword.*

"We have space for nothing more than a sentence to accord to this splendid tractate the tribute of our highest admiration. It meets the materialism of Huxley at every point, and at every point confutes it by the clearest demonstrations, and by a wonderful surplus of overwhelming argument, at once in physiology, chemistry, logic, and metaphysics."

*From the Courant.*

"We may just say that Dr. Gamgee, as well as Dr. Beale, bears most emphatic testimony to the completeness and success of Dr. Hutchison Stirling's argument with Mr. Huxley."

*From "Force and Matter," by Prof. Arthur Gamgee.*

"To enter into a complete discussion of the whole argument would extend far beyond the limits of this lecture, and would serve no useful purpose, more particularly after the very able and exhaustive essay in which one of the leading thinkers in Europe—Dr. Hutchison Stirling—has treated the subject."

*From "Protoplasm," by Dr. Beale.*

"Since the first edition of this work was published, Mr. Huxley's essay on the 'Physical Basis of Life' has been submitted to a very just but clear and searching philosophical criticism by Mr. James Hutchison Stirling, of Edinburgh, whose excellent treatise I very strongly recommend my readers carefully to study. I should have taken from it many extracts, but the work is easily obtained, and readers should see it in a complete form."

*From "Systematic Theology," by Dr. Hodge, of Princeton.*

"This is considered to be the best refutation of the theory of the correlation of physical and vital force."

*From Dr. John Brown.*

"Thanks very much for the knowledge and *comfort* your 'As Regards' has given me—it is lion's marrow, and disposes of Huxley and his protoplasm once for all."

*From "As regards Protoplasm," by Dr. Hugh Martin.*

"The Edinburgh press has reason to be proud of producing the overwhelming exposure which Hutchison Stirling's splendid and masterly reply contains. . . . While students of physiology will find in Stirling's 'As regards Protoplasm' a much more complete discussion of the physiological question than Huxley has supplied, those interested in the higher philosophy and natural theology will find in it a power of analysis, a cogency and conclusiveness of reasoning, a completeness of treatment, and an occasional beauty in the line of the severe and higher eloquence, which will lead them to deal with it as a charming *study* rather than as something to be merely perused."

*From "Fallacies of Darwinism," by Dr. Bree.*

"It is impossible to read such clear logical reasoning as this without pleasure. . . . Mr. Huxley's lecture upon Protoplasm has been dealt with, unanswerably and unanswered, by Dr. Stirling."

*From the Dublin Review.*

"'As regards Protoplasm' brims over with fact and reasoning, and is at the same time lightly and agreeably written."

*From Sir John Herschel.*

"Anything more complete and final in the way of refutation than this essay, I cannot well imagine."

---



## IV.

*In 8vo, Price 6s.*

# LECTURES ON THE PHILOSOPHY OF LAW.

TOGETHER WITH

## WHEWELL AND HEGEL, AND HEGEL AND REV. W. R. SMITH:

A Vindication in a Physico-Mathematical Regard.

*From the Journal of Speculative Philosophy.*

"The first of these lectures is a very entertaining 'Introduction to Philosophy in general,' and the others unfold, step by step, in a style such as only Dr. Stirling can write, the ideas of rights in general, of property, of criminal jurisprudence. They furnish an exceedingly valuable contribution to philosophical literature, and should be largely read in America, now that so much thought is directed towards the foundation-ideas of government."

*From the Journal of Mental Science.*

"These admirable lectures upon the Philosophy of Law are not given to the public for the first time in the present volume. Originally delivered before the Juridical Society of Edinburgh, they were published in the 'Journal of Jurisprudence' in the four first months of the current year. From thence they passed into the pages of the 'Journal of Speculative Philosophy,' and are at the present time, we have reason to believe, being reprinted in book form in St. Louis, Missouri. . . . It is satisfactory to find one work which is really valuable, highly thought of—to find that a book, which is in every way admirable, has a real marketable value, and has found favour in the eyes of publishers both in this country and in America. . . . Further, in the work before us Dr. Stirling 'falls foul' of Whewell, and shows not only his ignorance of German, but his incapacity for

the criticism of Hegel, which he so gratuitously undertook; and, at the same time, he deals summarily with Mr. W. R. Smith, who thought to prove that Hegel had attempted to 'establish the calculus on a new and very inadequate basis.' . . . As against Whewell, he is vindicating Hegel against a mistaken belief that the great German had really tried to throw discredit upon Newton's law of gravitation, and on the mathematical proof of Kepler's laws in the 'Principia;' and that, as correcting the errors of Mr. W. R. Smith, he is vindicating the *metaphysical* position of Hegel in reference to the calculus, and that everywhere and always he is simply *philosophical*. . . . The mistake which has been made by Whewell, Smith, and the rest is just this: Hegel never did profess to find fault with any one received physical principle; he neither thought of substituting a mathematical proof of Kepler's laws for that which had been offered by Newton, nor did he think of attempting to establish a calculus upon a new basis. . . . His work was not with physics as physics, but with metaphysics as such. . . . His objections are never mathematical, always metaphysical. . . . The incompetence of such men as Whewell and Smith to deal with the questions which Hegel had in hand to answer is remarkable, and is pointed out with much skill and intense force of reason and expression in these most able vindications. No vindications could be more satisfactory.

". . . We may say that one of Dr. Stirling's greatest merits is his admirable power of statement of creeds. Nothing could be better than his statement of the contents of Kant, contained in his article in the October number of the 'Fortnightly Review' ('Kant refuted by dint of muscle'). Here, in the first of these lectures upon the philosophy of law, we have equally good accounts of Kant and Hegel in their relation to each other. These statements, which only extend over a couple of pages, are the rich results of years of labour. . . . In no relation does the consciousness of Dr. Stirling's power force itself more resolutely upon us than in connection with these pithy expressions. . . . Hence we have that marvellous system, which is so admirably rendered by Dr. Stirling in these lectures into the most compact and crowded English. . . . One thing we wonder at, and that is how Dr. Stirling has been able to convey so much in so little. . . . We fear that we have done but scant justice to Dr. Stirling's very admirable work which lies before us. . . . We hope that we have said enough to convince our readers that this work is worthy of the most careful attention and untiring study. . . . We must here quit the subject with an expression of our deep sense of indebtedness to Dr. Stirling for work which he alone in this country, nay, even in Germany itself, was capable of doing. That it has been done with care, with thorough metaphysical ability, and with genius, we are happy to be able to report, as we were previously prepared to expect. Dr. Stirling is our greatest—almost our only great metaphysician."



*Telegraphed to Scotsman by its London Correspondent.*

"Dr. Hutchison Stirling's new work was published to-day. . . . This chapter, though a short one, is very incisive. . . . Each point of attack is taken up successively, and vigorously assailed. . . . Here the renowned Hegelian philosopher appears in his might, and the manner in which he lays about him is indicative of the intellectual giant in the world of metaphysics."

---

LONDON: LONGMANS & CO., PATERNOSTER ROW.

---

## V.

## ADDRESS ON MATERIALISM.

*From the Newcastle Chronicle.*

"The students of philosophy who are familiar with that profound work, *The Secret of Hegel*, will be pleased with a *brochure* just issued by Blackwood & Sons, being an Address to Medical Students on 'Materialism,' etc. It contains, besides much beautiful writing, one of the most acute and powerful assaults upon the Darwinian hypothesis of 'Natural Selection' which has yet been published."

## VI.

*Eighth Edition, Crown 8vo, Price 6s.*

# SCHWEGLER'S HANDBOOK OF THE HISTORY OF PHILOSOPHY.

*From the London Review.*

"Those who are acquainted with the other works of Dr. Stirling will be disposed to congratulate Schwegler on falling into such good hands. It will be difficult to mention any one in England so well versed in the philosophy of Germany, from Leibnitz to Hegel, as the translator of this Handbook. Dr. Stirling is also a man of independent thought, fearless judgment, and a metaphysical appetite, that enjoys with the keenest relish the heavy and somewhat unpalatable systems of German speculation. The subtleties of thought and expression in which Berlin professors delight are quite to our translator's taste. . . . It would be hard to praise the Handbook too highly, and we hope to hear that within a short period it has taken the place of Lewes and Renouvier in the hands of our young philosophical student."

*From the Glasgow Daily Herald.*

"We should hardly call a book of this character here by such a modest name as a 'Handbook,' because handbooks, especially handbooks of philosophy, are generally of the most meagre and trashy description. The student, however, will find this little history of three hundred and forty pages crammed full of information, systematised, and clearly expounded by a mind that took in the whole range of philosophy at a glance. . . . Dr. Stirling, whom we do not now hesitate to call the ablest metaphysical writer we have in Scotland, says that to the student of philosophy Dr. Schwegler's History is indispensable; and we believe he is correct. We do not know any other work where such a comprehensive view of the long life of philosophy, from Thales to Hegel, is to be found."



*From the Courant.*

"Mr. Stirling has done good service to the student of philosophy by translating Dr. Schwegler's admirable and excellent little Handbook."

*From the "Revival of Philosophy," by Dr. Ingleby.*

"Schwegler's 'Handbook' is not only indispensable, but sufficient. . . . The annotations by Dr. Stirling are fully as important as the text of the work, and are almost of equal bulk. . . . Apart from Hegel, that splendid work (the 'Secret of Hegel') affords the only trustworthy English commentary of Kant."

*From "Pedagogics as a System," by Professor Rosenkranz.*

"The Germans are fortunate, in consequence of their philosophical criticism, in the production of better and better text-books, among which may be mentioned Schwegler's 'History of Philosophy.'"

*From the Chronicle.*

"It is a history of philosophy in the ordinary sense, written with extreme accuracy and clearness, and with wonderful power of condensation. Zeller's 'History of Greek Philosophy' is too masterly a book to contain much that is superfluous: still the earlier part of Schwegler's volume contains in substance nearly all that is important in Zeller, except the references and illustrations. . . . His translation abounds in vigour and liveliness, which is quite wanting in the very imperfect version of Mr. Seelye. Schwegler's text does not stand in much need of annotation. Still the remarks which Dr. Stirling has appended are useful in bringing Schwegler's results side by side with the conclusions of writers popular in England; and they may certainly claim the merit of thorough insight into the points at issue."

*From the Oxford University Herald.*

"The circumstances narrated, the facts reproduced, the incidents compiled, and the conclusions deduced, are suggestive of historical research and descriptive powers on the part of the writer of a high order. Dr. Stirling's translation and annotations are a valuable addition to the standard works of the classical

library, and our only desire in speaking cautiously of the work is that the talented translator may be induced to reproduce the rendering of 'The History of Philosophy' in a more elaborate form."

*From the Aberdeen Free Press and Buchan News.*

"This is a good translation of an admirable book. . . . Avoiding the lengthened criticisms in which Lewes frequently indulges, Schwegler is able to devote more space to the historical and expository part of the subject, and consequently, except in the case of the English schools, his delineation of the system of any philosopher is generally fuller and more minute, and his exposition more detailed than the corresponding one in Lewes. We might point to the account of the philosophy of Spinoza as a good example of the author's singularly lucid manner in portraying an important system."

*From the Morning Journal.*

"Its careful and intelligent perusal must prove of very great service to any one just entering upon the noblest of all studies. . . . This German Handbook deserves all the merit assumed for it by the translator, in respect of its clearness, fulness, and connectedness. . . . The annotations at the close of the volume by the translator are both elucidatory and controversial, and throw considerable light on the early schools of philosophy."

*From the Saturday Review.*

"Dr. Hutchison Stirling himself is neither a confused thinker nor an obscure writer. An essay which he has lately published on De Quincey and Coleridge shows an intelligence clear of all fog, and a power of direct and forcible exposition. . . . His account of the mode, half-conscious, half-unconscious, in which Coleridge lapsed into his appropriation of another's thoughts and words, is a really fine piece of pyschological tracery. So in the little volume which is now before us, Dr. Stirling has appended some fifty or sixty pages of annotations, which, taken by themselves, will be found very interesting and original reading."

*From the British Quarterly Review.*

"Enough is done to enable us to endorse Dr. Stirling's verdict, that Schwegler's is at once the fullest and the shortest, the deepest and the easiest, the most trustworthy and the most elegant compendium that exists in either German or English."



*From the Westminster Review.*

"Schwegler's is the best possible 'Handbook of the History of Philosophy,' and there could not possibly be a better translator of it than Mr. Stirling: it is rarely, indeed, that a person of such qualifications will be good enough to translate."

*From the British Controversialist.*

"This translation is fluent, readable, and thoroughly English, although it retains the clasp and grasp of the original German. . . . The annotations as a whole form a body of powerful controversial *adversaria* to the positive school of speculative writers."

---

## VII.

*In Crown 8vo, Price 5s.*

## JERROLD, TENNYSON, AND MACAULAY,

### WITH OTHER CRITICAL ESSAYS.

*From the Edinburgh Courant.*

"Dr. Hutchison Stirling has for some time past been known and recognised as a thoroughly matured and competent philosophical thinker and critic, but he has not hitherto come before the public as a contributor to general literature. In the volume before us, he therefore presents himself in a new light; and although it is true that once a metaphysician, always a metaphysician, and that whether in criticism of politics, or history, or poetry, the metaphysician, if true to himself, must criticise upon philosophical principles, and after a philosophical method, yet, in appearing as a popular essayist, he must exhibit other, and, if commoner, not less indispensable, qualities ere he can be said to have won his spurs in literature. The collection of Essays here gathered together and republished, shows that Dr. Stirling is possessed of many of these qualities. The writer who can read the *Secret* of Hegel, also evidently possesses the receptivity and sensitiveness to poetic gifts and graces which a critic

of poets and poetry requires. He is full of fervour, and appreciative of the most delicate traceries which we owe to the poet's imagination. . . . The admirers of Tennyson owe a debt of gratitude to Dr. Stirling for the finely discriminative and thoughtful criticism with which the Essay on the Poet-Laureate is replete. . The essayist shows himself capable of judging Macaulay's real capacities, which were certainly great, fairly and without prejudice; and we know not, amid the multitude of writings about the historian, where to find anything that can surpass this essay for genuine insight into the heart of Macaulay, and for appreciation of his eminent gifts. It is a fine specimen of philosophical criticism, that seizes the inner principles of the subject discussed, criticising from the heart outwards, as from a centre to the circumference, and not from the waistcoat inwards. . . . We recommend this volume heartily as a collection of most able essays, full of fine criticism, distinguished by genuine philosophical power, to all our readers."

*From the Edinburgh Daily Review.*

"The graceful and perspicuous writing, the refined poetical taste, the keen practical eye, the profoundly solemn reverence and simple faith which characterise these papers. . . . It would not be easy to choose between these two in point of mere interest. That on Macaulay is perhaps the more valuable, inasmuch as a fair estimation of Macaulay is rarer at present than a due meed of praise to Tennyson. . . . But this paper on Macaulay aspires to be much more than a mere stringing together neat sentences of just criticism. It tries—and the field, we fancy, is virgin soil—to take the man as he was, and to ask how he came to be such: to trace in him a development of the spirit which pervades history. . . . The Essay on Tennyson is in a different strain. The critic is not sunk—far from it; his comparisons of our Laureate with Wordsworth, Shelley, and Keats are keen-eyed and felicitous in the extreme; but the devoted admirer finds less room for his critical faculty to play. The style changes with the thought: it becomes more resonant, figurative, and solemn."

*From the Perthshire Journal.*

"This volume is a book for all with any literary culture or enthusiasm. Not one of mere superficial or external criticism,



but penetrating, subtle, incisive, it is pre-eminently a book of ideas, from which no one can rise without recognising that, while he has been wandering in the pleasure-paths of easy literature, he has at the same time had a *compagnon de voyage*, who has told him many profound truths, and who has left him with his intellect braced and sharpened. . . . The mind of the powerful, far-seeing, deeply-piercing critic is stamped on every page of the Essay on Macaulay. . . . The Essay on Tennyson is dictated by a spirit of intense admiration and love—not the less finely critical, however, for that. . . . Dr. Stirling's portraiture of Macaulay is wonderfully true; he almost startles us by the way in which he seems to see through him."

*From the Scotsman.*

"These essays are all written in a style so transparent, that we do not remember of a paragraph that seemed to demand a second reading for the sake of being understood, though many of them, for other reasons, did solicit more than one reading. The style is really a clear, forcible, often elegant, English style, and is generally the vehicle of a weighty meaning. Dr. Stirling has evidently tried to understand *thoroughly* what he was to criticise. Finding fault for its own sake, or for the sake of mere smartness, and the pleasure of saying a biting, scornful thing, lies far out of his way. Guided by a right, if rather stern, moral purpose, he has done his work, mastering it completely, even to details, and never pretending to knowledge which he has not done his utmost to attain, and has not attained in so far as severe industry, rare logical acuteness, and a ready, capacious memory for details, have rendered attainment possible. Without a very remarkable memory, he could not have dropped into their proper places such apt quotations, and cited regularly facts and principles so pertinent to the purposes of illustration, collation, and contradiction. He keeps, for the most part, a firm hold of principles—as it was to be expected a writer of his great philosophic powers and proclivities would do—but he certainly works in about them a sort of mosaic of nicely adjusted illustrative or ornamental details, which, to most reflective readers, will seem both curious and surprising. . . . The Essay on Tennyson is a criticism of the works of this greatest of living poets, conceived in a spirit of intense sympathy and warm appreciation;

and, to the best of our knowledge and belief, no estimate has yet appeared so exhaustive, so just, and at the same time so high, of the productions of Alfred Tennyson's genius."

*From the Examiner.*

"The first essay is a pleasing tribute to the memory of frank, generous, kindly Douglas Jerrold, than whom it would be difficult to find a man whose loss was more regretted by his friends of the literary guild. Dr. Stirling's estimate of Douglas Jerrold's writings is, we think, a correct one. . . . There is a logical accuracy and a clearness of diction in the style of Dr. Stirling which many of our essayists would do well to imitate."

---

## VIII.

*In Crown 8vo, Price 6s.*

# BURNS IN DRAMA.

TOGETHER WITH

## SAVED LEAVES.

*From the Liverpool Mercury.*

"The dramatic sketch of Burns is a powerful piece of writing, thoroughly unique of its kind in the English language, and managed throughout with the highest literary skill. The Scotch especially, as introduced in the different scenes, is perfect."

*From the Aberdeen Daily Free Press.*

"A vein of broad humour runs through much of the dialogue, and the resources of the vernacular dialect are used to good purpose, while in his use of incident as well as of language, the author exhibits much skill in the production of picturesque effects. . . . This 'drama' certainly displays a variety of powers of a very high order on the part of its writer."



*From the Liverpool Weekly Albion.*

"The first and largest piece, which gives its name to the book, is a careful study of the character of Burns. . . . A note at the end sketches the principal traits of the man, with an insight which makes it well worth the attention of all the lovers of the poet."

*From the Athenæum.*

"It is a powerful study of character. . . . Some of these (Saved Leaves), like Ogrebabe, the Body-Snatcher, are very grim."

*From the Galloway Gazette.*

"Some of the productions are remarkable for their originality, thought, and gracefulness of expression. 'The Ballad of Merla,' 'Belshazzar's Feast,' 'Venetian Madeline,' 'The Sleeping Beauty,' all stamp the author as a talented and original writer."

*From the Dumfries Courier.*

"Poetic feeling is manifested everywhere. . . . The Welsh articles are interesting, the social articles reveal a keen eye and a manly tone, and the story of the dissecting-room is sensational enough to satisfy even a palled appetite."

*From the British Quarterly Review.*

"Mr. Stirling takes up the great Scotch poet, and unfolds to us the phases of his character through the medium of a play. . . . Powerfully and graphically painted."

*From the Dundee Advertiser.*

"This racy and refreshing little volume. . . . containing some exquisite papers."

*From the Northern Ensign.*

"Here the man lives before us; the life becomes articulate. This sketch presents by much the best idea of the personality of Burns with which we are acquainted, because its dramatic form gives at once what is most deep and versatile in the nature of the man, and the true aroma and atmosphere of his outward life. The character of Burns himself, his joviality and fits of

melancholy, his heart-burnings and haughty indifference, his tenderness and devil-may-care, shine out before us along with his associates of twenty years, his patrons and cronies, his butts and bores, Ainslie and Rankine, Jean and Luath, the impressive Hornbook, the insufferable Blair. Nor could anything more exactly express the nature of the man on its serious side than the words put into his mouth,—'I dare sin, but I dare not lie;' or on the other side the words (when his wife has sung 'My Nannie, O'), 'Ay, ye may weel clap your hands, Ainslie. A finer singer—*or a finer song*—weel, we'll no praise ourscls.' Trust one canny Scotchman to find out in another that affectation of being vain, which is three parts affectation and one part real vanity. The author's faculty is unique for insinuating himself into these half-conscious moods, and turning them inside out; all of which is much helped, and often suggested, by his strong sense of humour. . . . In 'Sleeping Beauty' we have another phase of the same fact, the Spirit of Grace, like the moonlight in Turner's 'Dudley,' struggling with the despotism of trade, and the influence of modern competition, cant, and rascality. The moral purpose of the volume is at its highest in this noble prose poem. But we have a quaint variety of it in the article on ladies' full dress, which is a delightful union of dexterous argument with sound sense. In point of general, literary merit, the book is superior to anything Dr. Stirling has published. The most perfect in form and most original of the poetical pieces are the 'Universal Strike' and 'I am That I am,' which we take to be the most luminous piece of metaphysical poetry in existence. 'Venetian Madeline' and Belshazzar's Feast' are rich in Venetian colour and Oriental sumptuousness. But all have a poetical individuality, and an imaginative grasp which enables us to indorse the opinion expressed of the author's first prose work, that his powers in this direction were sufficient 'to stock an aviary of popular poets.'"

*Post Card* from W. T. HARRIS, LL.D., Editor of *The Western*, of the *Journal of Speculative Philosophy*, Superintendent of Public Schools, etc., St. Louis.

"*Oct.* 29, 1878.—I read through BURNS IN DRAMA, night before last, beginning it at 9 P.M., and finishing it at 4 A.M., reading slowly and making references to the *Cyclopædia* and



to my copy of Burns as I went along. I was *intensely* interested in it. It beats any biography, or even Carlyle's famous Essay on Burns. I am writing a notice of the book to-night."

*From the Rev. Joseph Taylor Goodsir.*

"I quite agree with W. T. H. in his conclusions. Having read Carlyle's essay again on purpose, I have no hesitation in saying that there is all the difference between his representation and yours that there is between a plain daguerrotype and a first-rate stereoscopic view. The details, too, are admirable; *ex gr.*, the duel between the 'High Kirk Orator and the Poet.'"

*From Dr. William Veitch, Author of the Clarendon Press Treatise on the Greek Verb.*

"I rejoice that there is 'a Scot abroad,' καὶ ξυνετὸς καὶ σώφρων. It would be humane and patriotic to subscribe a trifle to send a few of our little big men to the New Country to relume 'the sacred fire.'"

*From the Journal of Speculative Philosophy.*

"This small volume, from the distinguished author of 'The Secret of Hegel,' will prove of unusual interest to those who have read his philosophical writings. His intense, fiery style, his profound absorption in his theme, his amazing gifts at description of subtle psychological processes, rendered his book on Hegel what the Germans call an 'epoch-making' one. He seizes the reader's attention from the start, and holds it by his power to throw the interest of personal adventure into his portrayal of the struggles and disappointments incident to discovering the thought of a great philosopher. . . . Dr. Stirling is certainly the most successful of philosophers in his literary presentation of the steps of philosophic experience. This has been realised by a multitude of old and of young who have read his books. These persons will welcome the 'Saved Leaves' as a desired completion to the biography of a true man, who has laboured, with no mean success, to become MAN—the generic type, to realise his race. . . . Most of the scenes of the first three acts would make a lively impression on the stage. The fourth and fifth acts follow the life of Burns into richer, nobler

developments, but which cannot be presented with adequate stage effects because of their internality. . . . The characters are portrayed in a few masterly strokes, showing the very essence of their humanity. . . . No essay on Burns, or biography of him, gives such vivid pictures of the man as does this 'drama.'"

*From Patrick Proctor Alexander, Esq., M.A., author of "Moral Causation," "Mill and Carlyle," "Life of Alexander Smith," &c.*

"As to the bleaching-green scene, I have no doubt it was pretty well just that that did take place."

*From J. Scot Henderson, Esq., of "Globe" and "World," &c., &c.*

"I do not think, in all the innumerable contributions to Burns literature, I ever met anything that is at once so truthfully characteristic, so pre-Raphaelitically realistic, so to speak, and yet so discriminative of the best ideal tendencies of the man and poet both. You have lived yourself into his central individuality—if I may say so. . . . This notice is to the point, and expresses what I felt most strongly about the Burns—you have restored to us the very personality of the man."

*From Mr. Cupples.*

"'Burns in Drama' is, beyond question and *opinion*, masterly—a first-rate piece of work. It is thorough poetical representation—sets the man there—enters into him and all his surroundings. Wilson, to my mind, is better than Carlyle on the subject. But you do, I think, in far less space and few words, what he does with much oratory—and, besides that, you give what no one else has given, to *me* at all events; you reproduce and represent, and also give touches that are absolutely clairvoyant. In Burns's case these have a peculiar value, for to understand and appreciate him, personality is *first*, indispensable, essential. 'Sleeping Beauty' is exquisitely well done; it reminds me of Shelley when he is at his best. . . . The descriptive touches



throughout the volume are often exquisite, always indicative of unusually accurate observation as regards Nature, still more so where any human concern is involved, *e.g.*, '*there* are men working on a hull; you see the hammer fall—soundless—but with an echo,' as 'the steamer' passes with this one hearer amidst a babbling crowd of *Glasgow Down-the-water*. The pictures of Wales are uncommonly full of such graphic touches. . . . 'Ogrebabe' is a very powerful sketch, but not pleasant to read of a night. The allegorical, or rather the symbolical and hieroglyphic force of meaning in 'Aihai,' and in the various poems, is of a quality that places them far above mere off-hand estimate by journalists."

*From the late Douglas Jerrold.*

"I was very much struck with the peculiar freshness and vigour of your first paper (the Novelist, etc.); it had thought and sinew in it."

*From January Searle, author of "Life of Ebenezer Elliot," &c., &c.*

"It is a graceless office, however, to find fault, especially where there is so much to admire. I think the reader will agree with me that 'Merla' is full of nature and beauty, and that it is woven in the woof of genius and poetry. It contains sea-pictures and sea-voices, such as one does not often find in literature."

*From the late George Gilfillan.*

"I am reading your 'Leaves' with continued interest: 'Ariel' is a piece of genuine poetic beauty."

## EXTRACTS FROM GENERAL TESTIMONIALS, &c.

*From Professor Zeller, of Berlin.*

"All that I have read of the philosophical writings of Mr. James Hutchison Stirling has convinced me that their author is distinguished not only by a comprehensive and thorough knowledge of ancient and modern philosophy, but also by an accurate understanding and appreciation of its import and history, as well as by a clear, animated, and universally intelligible style in the statement of it."

*From Professor Erdmann, of Halle.*

"That his knowledge of philosophy as a whole is not restricted to Kant and Hegel, has been demonstrated by him in the annotations with which he has adorned his translation of Schwegler's 'Handbook' . . . Every word that seems not to breathe the greatest esteem for Stirling is wrongly read, and must be replaced by another at choice."

*From the late Professor Ueberweg, of Königsberg.*

"Through my colleague, Rosenkranz, who bears you in mind with great recognition, I became acquainted with the first edition of your translation of the introduction—generally acknowledged to be excellent in its kind—by which Schwegler, too early lost to us by a premature death, rendered an inestimable service to the study of the history of philosophy. The speedy demand for a second edition testifies to the approbation which this useful book finds in your country also. The completion of the notes in your second edition enhances the interest of the work. . . . It affords me, too, great satisfaction to see a system so complete in its kind as is the system of Hegel, made by you more accessible to the English mind."



*From Professor Rosenkranz, of Königsberg.*

"James Hutchison Stirling, LL.D., marks an important turning-point in the history of English philosophy. Provided with that most solid knowledge which only the study of positive science can supply, he has made himself master, at the same time, and in a rare degree, of all the speculative problems of the deepest thinkers. It would be exceedingly one-sided to call him an Hegelian, for the simple reason that he has, with less prejudice, more clearly and more deeply comprehended, and more luminously expounded, the worth and the warrant of the Hegelian philosophy than has hitherto been accomplished in England. Stirling nowhere belies the true English spirit that is directed to reality and fact. In his celebrated work, 'The Secret of Hegel,' he makes it prominent in this respect, therefore, that, not the abstract, but the 'concrete universal' constitutes the principle of his speculation. And in this, too, is he equally national, that with free mastery of the object, he can dispense with the scholastic form, which, at the same time, he perfectly well knows how to handle, and can illustrate the boldest thoughts with brilliancy and humour. His vigorous polemic against Hamilton is a remarkable example of the higher criticism, which, with the advantage of his universal standpoint, he is enabled to exercise. Instead of translating Schwegler's 'History of Philosophy,' its excellence of execution notwithstanding, he might have done as well, and perhaps still better, had he given us his own composition; as is evidenced by the ample critical annotations which he has added to this useful work."

*From Ralph Waldo Emerson, Esq.*

"I have never seen any modern British book (refers to 'Secret of Hegel') which appears to me to show such competence to analyse the most abstruse problems of the science, and, much more, such singular vigour and breadth of view in treating the matter in relation to literature and humanity. It exhibits a general power of dealing with the subject, which, I

think, must compel the attention of readers in proportion to their strength and subtlety. One of the high merits of the book is its healthy moral perceptions. . . . If there can be any question when such an incumbent can be found, I shall be glad to believe that Intellectual and Moral Science is richer in masters than I have had opportunity to know. . . . . Schwegler came at last. I found on trial that I too could read it, and with growing appetite. I could at least appreciate well enough the insight and sovereignty of the annotations, and the consummate address with which the contemporary critics and contestants are disposed of with perfect comity, yet with effect. . . . The essays I have carefully read. The analysis of Macaulay is excellent. The 'Coleridge' painful, though, I fear, irrefutable. . . . The 'Tennyson' is a magnificent statue—the first adequate work of its kind—his real traits and superiorities rightly shown. . . . I never lose the hope that you will come to us at no distant day, and be our king in philosophy."

*From Thomas Carlyle, Esq.*

"To whatever I have said of you already, therefore, I now volunteer to add, that I think you not only the one man in Britain capable of bringing Metaphysical Philosophy, in the ultimate, German or European, and highest actual form of it, distinctly home to the understanding of British men who wish to understand it, but that I notice in you further, on the moral side, a sound strength of intellectual discernment, a noble valour and reverence of mind, which seems to me to mark you out as the man capable of doing us the highest service in ethical science too; that of restoring, or of decisively beginning to restore, the Doctrine of Morals to what I must ever reckon its one true and everlasting basis (namely, the divine or *supra*-sensual one), and thus of victoriously reconciling and rendering identical the latest dictates of modern science with the earliest dawnings of wisdom among the race of men. This is truly my opinion."

---

EDINBURGH: OLIVER AND BOYD.

NOT TO BE ISSUED

SMT. HANSA MEHTA LIBRARY. BARODA.
RARE BOOK COLLECTION
M.S. UNIVERSITY LIBRARY.

NOT TO BE ISSUED

SHML
010651

NOT TO BE ISSUED

NOT TO BE ISSUED

7B 0
72
·S2

10651